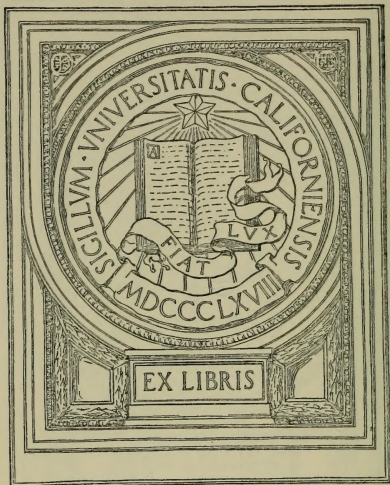




UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA  
AT LOS ANGELES



THE GIFT OF  
MAY TREAT MORRISON  
IN MEMORY OF  
ALEXANDER F MORRISON


















Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation



BLACK MARBLE PAVILION, CASHMERE.

HALF-HOURS  
OF  
TRAVEL AT HOME AND ABROAD

SELECTED AND ARRANGED BY  
CHARLES MORRIS

*ASIA*

ILLUSTRATED

PHILADELPHIA  
J. B. LIPPINCOTT COMPANY

1896

COPYRIGHT, 1896,

BY

J. B. LIPPINCOTT COMPANY.

ELECTROTYPED AND PRINTED BY J. B. LIPPINCOTT COMPANY, PHILADELPHIA, U.S.A.



G170  
M834  
v. 3

## CONTENTS.

SUBJECT.	AUTHOR.	PAGE
Petra and Mecca . . . . .	JOHN LEWIS BURCKHARDT . . . . .	7
Travels in Oman and Hadramaut . . . . .	J. R. WELLSTED . . . . .	17
Crossing the Arabian Desert . . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	27
The Mocha Coffee District . . . . .	CARSTENS NIEBUHR . . . . .	37
In the Capital of Nedjed . . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	44
A Pilgrimage to Mecca and Medina . . . . .	RICHARD F. BURTON . . . . .	57
A Shipwreck on the Coast of Oman . . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	69
Jerusalem, the Holy City . . . . .	ELIOT WARBURTON . . . . .	83
Baalbec, the City of the Sun . . . . .	WILLIAM C. PRIME . . . . .	95
Damascus, the Pearl of the Orient . . . . .	BAYARD TAYLOR . . . . .	106
The Giant Cities of Bashan . . . . .	J. L. PORTER . . . . .	117
The Wonders of Nineveh . . . . .	AUSTEN HENRY LAYARD . . . . .	130
The Palace and Jewels of the Shah . . . . .	ARTHUR ARNOLD . . . . .	139
The Tombs and Palaces of Classic Persia . . . . .	ARTHUR ARNOLD . . . . .	148
Nautch Dancers and Hindoo Actors . . . . .	ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS . . . . .	158
The Marvels of Mogul Architecture . . . . .	JOSEPH MOORE . . . . .	167
Boar-Hunting in India . . . . .	W. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	179
Caves of Ellora and City of Nashik . . . . .	ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS . . . . .	188
The Lair of the Tiger . . . . .	W. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	198
An Elephant Kraal in Ceylon . . . . .	JOSEPH MOORE . . . . .	209
The Venice of the East . . . . .	SIR JOHN BOWRING . . . . .	217
The Footstep of Buddha . . . . .	BISHOP PALLEGOIX . . . . .	230
A Visit to Chantaboun . . . . .	HENRY MOUHOT . . . . .	235
The Elephant in Siam . . . . .	SIR JOHN BOWRING . . . . .	248
The Vale of Cashmere . . . . .	G. T. VIGNE . . . . .	257
Central Asia in the Thirteenth Century . . . . .	MARCO POLO . . . . .	272
A Counterfeit Dervish in Khiva . . . . .	ARMINIUS VÁMBÉRY . . . . .	286
A Journey through Yârkand . . . . .	ROBERT SHAW . . . . .	298
Little Tibet . . . . .	G. T. VIGNE . . . . .	310
Through Tibet to Lhasa . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	320
Crossing the Karakorum Pass . . . . .	ROBERT SHAW . . . . .	330
The Source of the Oxus . . . . .	JOHN WOOD . . . . .	335
The Tea Districts of China . . . . .	ROBERT FORTUNE . . . . .	345

423389

SUBJECT.	AUTHOR.	PAGE
Reception of General Grant at Canton . . . . .	JOHN M. KEATING . . . . .	354
Peking, as seen from its Walls . . . . .	C. F. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	367
The Lama Feast of Flowers . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	378
A Captive in Japan . . . . .	WASSILI GOLOWNIN . . . . .	384
Among Strange Scenes and Customs . . . . .	AIMÉ HUMBERT . . . . .	397
Scenery of Japan . . . . .	SIR RUTHERFORD ALCOCK . . . . .	412
Walks in Yedo . . . . .	AIMÉ HUMBERT . . . . .	424
Life and Scenery in Mongolia . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	440
Scenes from Pastoral Life among the Kirghis Nomads . . . . .	THOMAS W. ATKINSON . . . . .	452
Across the Steppes to Khiva . . . . .	FREDERICK BURNABY . . . . .	464
A Pedestrian in Siberia . . . . .	JOHN DUNDAS COCHRANE . . . . .	475
A Siberian Tragedy . . . . .	THOMAS W. ATKINSON . . . . .	486
The Tragedy of the Lena Delta . . . . .	GEORGE W. MELVILLE . . . . .	496

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

	PAGE
BLACK MARBLE PAVILION, CASHMERE . . . .	<i>Frontispiece.</i>
AN ARAB SHEIKH . . . . .	44
GREAT STONE IN QUARRY, BAALBEK . . . . .	95
THE RUINS OF PERSEPOLIS . . . . .	148
SOLDIERS OF THE HIMALAYAS . . . . .	298
BUDDHIST TEMPLE, KIOTO . . . . .	424



# HALF-HOURS OF TRAVEL AT HOME AND ABROAD.

---

## PETRA AND MECCA.

JOHN LEWIS BURCKHARDT.

[John Lewis Burckhardt, one of the most famous of Oriental travellers, the discoverer of the city of Petra and the first Christian traveller to visit Mecca and Medina, was of Swiss origin, being born at Lausanne, on the Lake of Geneva, in 1784. He received a university education at Leipsic and Göttingen, and in 1806 proceeded to London, where he became acquainted with Sir Joseph Banks, an active member of the African Association, and offered his services to explore the interior of Africa. For this purpose he studied Arabic, spent some time in travelling through Syria, and then proceeded to Cairo, as the starting-point in his African exploration. Finding no opportunity for that journey, he proceeded to Nubia, and in 1814 made his way to Mecca, being the first European to reach that celebrated city. He returned to Cairo, and waited there for the Fezzan caravan, with which he was to proceed on his African journey. While thus waiting he was seized with dysentery, and died October 15, 1817. He was buried, as a holy pilgrim, in the Moslem cemetery. From his "Travels in Syria" we extract his account of the discovery of Petra, a city of remarkable character, the former capital of Arabia Petræa, but never before visited by a European traveller.]

THE valley of Ghor [that of the Jordan and the Dead Sea] is continued to the south of the Dead Sea; at about

sixteen hours' distance from the extremity of the Dead Sea its name is changed into that of Araba, and it runs in almost a straight line, declining somewhat to the west, as far as Akaba, at the extremity of the eastern branch of the Red Sea. The existence of this valley appears to have been unknown to ancient as well as to modern geographers, although it is a very remarkable feature in the geography of Syria and Arabia Petræa, and is still more interesting for its productions. In this valley the manna is still found; it drops from the sprigs of several trees, but principally from the Gharrah. It is collected by the Arabs, who make cakes of it and who eat it with butter; they call it Assal Beyrook, or the honey of Beyrook. Indigo, gum-arabic, and the silk-tree called Asheyr, whose fruit encloses a white, silky substance of which the Arabs twist their matches, grow in this valley.

[Petra, a city lost to the world for fifteen hundred years, occupies a rock chasm, through which runs a small stream, in this valley. The difficulty of reaching it is thus described.]

I was particularly desirous of visiting Wady Moussa, of the antiquities of which I had heard the country people speak in terms of great admiration, and from thence I had hoped to cross the desert in a straight line to Cairo; but my guide was afraid of the hazards of a journey through the desert, and insisted on my taking the road to Akaba, the ancient Ezion-geber, at the extremity of the eastern branch of the Red Sea, where, he said, we might join some caravan and continue our route towards Egypt. I wished, on the contrary, to avoid Akaba, as I knew that the Pasha of Egypt kept there a numerous garrison to watch the movements of the Wahabees and of his rival, the Pasha of Damascus. A person, therefore, like myself, coming from the latter place, without any papers to show who I

was or why I had taken that circuitous route, would certainly have roused the suspicions of the officer commanding at Akaba, and the consequences might have been dangerous to me among the savage soldiery of that garrison. The road from Shobak to Akaba lies to the east of Wady Moussa, and to have quitted it out of mere curiosity to see the wady would have looked suspicious in the eyes of the Arabs. I therefore pretended to have made a vow to slaughter a goat in honor of Haroun (Aaron), whose tomb I knew was situated at the extremity of the valley, and by this stratagem I thought that I should have the means of seeing the valley on my way to the tomb. To this my guide had nothing to oppose; the dread of drawing down upon himself by resistance the wrath of Haroun completely silenced him.

I hired a guide to Eldjy to conduct me to Haroun's tomb, and paid him with a pair of old horse-shoes. He carried the goat, and gave me a skin of water to carry, as he knew there was no water in the wady below. In following the rivulet of Eldjy westward, the valley soon narrows again, and it is here that the antiquities of Wady Moussa (Petra) begin. Of these I regret that I am not able to give a very complete account; but I knew well the character of the people around me. I was without protection in the midst of a desert where no traveller had ever before been seen, and a close examination of these works of the infidels, as they are called, would have excited suspicions that I was a magician in search of treasures. I should at least have been detained and prevented from prosecuting my journey to Egypt, and in all probability should have been stripped of the little money which I possessed, and, what was of infinitely more value to me, of my journal. Future travellers may visit the spot under the protection of an armed force; the inhabitants will

become more accustomed to the researches of strangers, and the antiquities of Wady Moussa will then be found to rank among the most curious works of ancient art.

[The approach to Wady Moussa is a ravine, in places only twelve feet wide, and with rocky walls one hundred feet high. Along this ravine are the most famous ruin of Petra, the Khusna, or "treasury of Pharaoh," and a theatre, both cut in the solid rock. The floor of the valley within, about two miles wide, is strewn with ruins. Burckhardt described as well as his memory would permit the hundreds of sepulchral rock chambers, the mausolea, the Khusna, etc., but far more complete and elaborate descriptions have since been given. His partial observation was not unattended with danger, in arousing the suspicions of the guide.]

Near the west end of Wady Moussa are the remains of a stately edifice, of which part of the wall is still standing; the inhabitants call it *Kasr Bint Faraoun*, or the palace of Pharaoh's daughter. In my way I had entered several sepulchres, to the surprise of my guide, but when he saw me turn out of the foot-path towards the Kasr, he exclaimed, "I see now clearly that you are an infidel, who have some particular business among the ruins of the city of your forefathers; but depend upon it, that we shall not suffer you to take out a single para of all the treasures hidden therein, for they are in our territory and belong to us."

I replied that it was mere curiosity that prompted me to look at the ancient works, and that I had no other view in coming there than to sacrifice to Haroun; but he was not easily persuaded, and I did not think it prudent to irritate him by too close an inspection of the palace, as it might have led him to declare, on our return, his belief that I had found treasures, which might have led to a search of my person and to the detection of my journal, which would most certainly have been taken from me as a book of magic. It was of no avail to tell them to follow



me, and see whether I searched for money. Their reply was, "Of course you will not dare to take it out before us, but we know that if you are a skilful magician you will order it to follow you through the air to whatever place you please."

The sun had already set when we arrived on the plain. It was too late to reach the tomb, and I was excessively fatigued; I therefore hastened to kill the goat in sight of the tomb, at a spot where I found a number of heaps of stones, placed there in token of as many sacrifices in honor of that saint. While I was in the act of slaying the animal my guide exclaimed aloud, "O Haroun, look upon us! it is for you we slaughter this victim! O Haroun, be content with our good intentions, for it is but a lean goat! O Haroun, smooth our paths; and praise be to the Lord of all creatures!" This he repeated several times, after which he covered the blood that had fallen to the ground with a heap of stones; we then dressed the best part of the flesh for our supper as expeditiously as possible, for the guide was afraid of the fire being seen, and of its attracting thither some robbers.

[On his return, Burckhardt joined a small caravan which was proceeding to Cairo with camels to sell. He continues:]

We crossed the valley of Araba, ascended on the other side of it the barren mountain of Beyane, and entered the desert called El Tih, which is the most barren and horrid tract of country I have ever seen; black flints cover the chalky or sandy ground, which in most places is without any vegetation. The tree which produces the gum-arabic grows in some spots, and the tamarisk is met with here and there; but the scarcity of water forbids much extent of vegetation, and the hungry camels are obliged to go in the evening for whole hours out of the road in order to find

some withered shrubs upon which to feed. During ten days' forced marches we passed only four springs or wells, of which one only, at about eight hours east of Suez, was of sweet water. The others were brackish or sulphurous. We passed at a short distance to the north of Suez, and arrived at Cairo by the pilgrim road.

[At a later date Burckhardt crossed the Red Sea from Suakin to Jidda, the port of Mecca, and made his way to the Mohammedan holy city under the guise of a devout Mussulman. His professed purpose was to visit the pasha, Mohammed Ali, at Tayf, and the guide had been ordered to conduct him by a road which lay to the north of Mecca.]

Just before we left Hadda my guide, who knew nothing further respecting me than that I had business with the pasha at Tayf, that I performed all the outward observances of a Moslem pilgrim, and that I had been liberal to him before our departure, asked me the reason of his having been ordered to take me by the northern road. I replied that it was probably thought shorter than the other. "That is a mistake," he replied; "the Mecca road is quite as short, and much safer; and if you have no objection we will proceed by that." This was just what I wished, though I had taken care not to betray any anxiety on the subject; and we accordingly followed the great road, in company with the other travellers.

[He was hurried through the city, however, and on August 27, 1814, reached a place named Ras el Kora.]

This is the most beautiful spot in the Hedjah, and more picturesque and delightful than any spot I had seen since my departure from Lebanon, in Syria. The top of Jebel Kora is flat, but large masses of granite lie scattered over it, the surface of which, like that of the granite rocks near

the second cataract of the Nile, is blackened by the sun. Several small rivulets descend from this peak and irrigate the plain, which is covered with verdant fields and large shady trees on the side of the granite rocks. To those who have only known the dreary and scorching sands of the lower country of the Hedjah, the scene is as surprising as the keen air which blows here is refreshing. Many of the fruit-trees of Europe are found here: figs, apricots, peaches, apples, the Egyptian sycamore, almonds, pomegranates, but particularly vines, the produce of which is of the best quality. After having passed through this delightful district for about half an hour, just as the sun was rising, when every leaf and blade of grass diffused a fragrance as delicious to the smell as was the landscape to the eye, I halted near the largest of the rivulets, which, although not more than two paces across, nourishes upon its banks a green alpine turf such as the mighty Nile, with all its luxuriance, can never produce in Egypt.

[After his visit to the pasha, whom he satisfied that he was a true believer, he was permitted to return to Mecca, where he proceeded to inspect the city, and particularly the Kaaba, its principal curiosity, "an oblong massive structure eighteen paces in length, fourteen in breadth, and from thirty-five to forty feet in height."]

At the northeast corner of the Kaaba, near the door, is the famous "Black Stone;" it forms a part of the sharp angle of the building at four or five feet above the ground. It is an irregular oval of about seven inches in diameter, with an undulating surface, composed of about a dozen smaller stones of different sizes and shapes, well joined together with a small quantity of cement, and perfectly smoothed. It looks as if the whole had been broken into many pieces by a violent blow, and then united again. It is very difficult to determine accurately the quality of this

stone, which has been worn to its present surface by the millions of touches and kisses it has received. It appeared to me like a lava, containing several small extraneous particles of a whitish and of a yellowish substance. Its color is now a deep reddish-brown, approaching to black. It is surrounded on all sides by a border, composed of a substance which I took to be a close cement of pitch and gravel, of a similar, but not quite the same, brownish color. This border serves to support its detached pieces. It is of two or three inches in breadth, and rises a little above the surface of the stone. Both the border and the stone itself are encircled by a silver band, broader below than above and on the two sides, with a considerable swelling below, as if a part of the stone were hidden under it. The lower part of the border is studded with silver nails.

[In November the Syrian caravan of pilgrims arrived, and all was life and bustle. On November 24 a great procession took place to Mount Arafat, near the city. It formed an immense throng, composed of persons from all quarters of the Mohammedan world, in whose diverse speech Burckhardt counted forty languages. He describes the remarkable scene revealed at the dawn of the next day.]

Every pilgrim issued from his tent to walk over the plains and take a view of the busy crowds assembled there. Long streets of tents, fitted up as bazaars, furnished all kinds of provisions. The Syrian and Egyptian cavalry were exercised by their chiefs early in the morning, while thousands of camels were seen feeding on the dry shrubs of the plain all around the camp. . . .

The Syrian Hadj was encamped on the south and south-west side of the mountain [an isolated mass of granite about two hundred feet high]; the Egyptian on the south-east. Around the house of the Sherif, Yahya himself

was encamped with his Bedouin troops, and in its neighborhood were all the Hedjaz people. Mohammed Ali, and Soleyman, Pasha of Damascus, as well as several of their officers, had very handsome tents; but the most magnificent of all was that of the wife of Mohammed Ali, the mother of Foossoon Pasha and Ibrahim Pasha, who had lately arrived from Cairo for the Hadj with a truly royal equipage, five hundred camels being necessary to transport her baggage from Jidda to Mecca. Her tent was in fact an encampment, consisting of a dozen tents of different sizes inhabited by her women; the whole enclosed by a wall of linen cloth eight hundred paces in circuit, the single entrance to which was guarded by eunuchs in splendid dresses. Around this enclosure were pitched the tents of the men who formed her numerous suite. The beautiful embroidery on the exterior of this linen palace, with the varied colors displayed in every part of it, constituted an object which reminded me of some descriptions in the Arabian Tales of the Thousand and the One Nights.

[A sermon from the top of the mountain, which is preached in the closing hours of the afternoon, constitutes the holy ceremony of the Hadj, and no pilgrim who is not present at it is entitled to the name of hadji.]

The two pashas, with their whole cavalry drawn up in two squadrons behind them, took their post in the rear of the deep line of camels of the hadjis, to which those of the people of the Hedjaz were also joined; and here they waited in solemn and respectful silence the conclusion of the sermon. Further removed from the preacher was the Sherif Yahya, with his small body of soldiers, distinguished by several green standards carried before him. The two mahmals, or holy camels, which carry on their backs the high structure that serves as the banner of their respective

caravans, made way with difficulty through the ranks of camels that encircled the southern and eastern sides of the hill opposite to the preacher, and took their station, surrounded by their guards, directly under the platform in front of him. The preacher, or Khatyb, who is usually the Kadi of Mecca, was mounted upon a finely-caparisoned camel, which had been led up to the steps; it being traditionally said that Mohammed was always seated when he addressed his followers, a practice in which he was imitated by all the caliphs who came to the Hadj, and who from thence addressed their subjects in person. The Turkish gentleman of Constantinople, however, unused to camel-riding, could not keep his seat so well as the hardy Bedouin prophet, and the camel becoming unruly, he was soon obliged to alight from it. He read his sermon from a book in Arabic which he held in his hands. At intervals of every four or five minutes he paused and stretched forth his arms to implore blessings from above, while the assembled multitudes around and before him waved the skirts of their ihrams over their heads and rent the air with shouts of *Lebeyk, Allah, huma, Lebeyk!* "Here we are at thy bidding, O God!" During the wavings of the ihrams, the skirts of the mountain, thickly crowded as it was by the people in their white garments, had the appearance of a cataract of water, while the green umbrellas, with which several thousand hadjis sitting on their camels below were provided, bore some resemblance to a verdant plain.

[At Medina, which he afterwards visited, he saw the tomb of Mohammed. This he describes as surrounded by an iron railing, in imitation of filigree work, with open-work inscriptions in yellow bronze, the whole so close in texture that the interior can only be seen through four small windows, set in the four sides of the railing. The tomb is concealed from the public gaze by a curtain of rich silk brocade of various colors, interwoven with silver flowers and

arabesques, with inscriptions in gold characters running across the midst of it. Behind this curtain none but the chief eunuchs, the attendants of the mosque, are permitted to enter. This holy sanctuary once served as the public treasury of the nation, containing numerous articles of value, which were carried away by the Wahabees when they sacked the sacred cities.]

---

## TRAVELS IN OMAN AND HADRAMAUT.

J. R. WELLSTED.

[The most satisfactory account of the province of Oman—in south-eastern Arabia—is that given by Lieutenant Wellsted, of the Indian Navy, who was employed for several years in surveying the coasts of southern and eastern Arabia. In 1835 he landed at Muscat with the purpose of journeying to Derreyeh, in Nedjed, the capital of the Wahabees, which no traveller had previously reached. After a journey of four days inland from the coast village of Sur, he reached the tents of the tribe of Ben-Abu-Ali, by whom he was received with warm demonstrations of friendship. He describes the war-dance given for his entertainment.]

THEY formed a circle within which five of their number entered. After walking leisurely around for some time, each challenged one of the spectators by striking him gently with the flat of his sword. His adversary immediately leaped forth and a feigned combat ensued. They have but two cuts, one directly downward, at the head, the other horizontally, across the legs. They parry neither with the sword nor shield, but avoid the blows by leaping or bounding backward. The blade of their sword is three feet in length, thin, double-edged, and as sharp as a razor. As they carry it upright before them, by a peculiar motion of the wrist they cause it to vibrate in a very remarkable manner, which has a singularly striking



effect when they are assembled in any considerable number. It was part of the entertainment to fire off their matchlocks under the legs of some one of the spectators, who appeared too intent on watching the game to observe their approach, and any signs of alarm which incautiously escaped the individual, added greatly to their mirth.

[Crossing the desert region, he reached the town of Ibrah, which is thus described.]

There are some handsome houses in Ibrah ; but the style of buildings is quite peculiar to this part of Arabia. To avoid the damp and catch an occasional beam of the sun above the trees, they are usually very lofty. A parapet surrounding the upper part is turreted, and on some of the largest houses guns are mounted. The windows and doors have the Saracenic arch, and every part of the building is profusely decorated with ornaments of stucco in bas-relief, some in very good taste. The doors are also cased with brass, and have rings and other massive ornaments of the same metal.

Ibrah is justly renowned for the beauty and fairness of its females. Those we met on the streets evinced but little shyness, and on my return to the tent I found it filled with them. They were in high glee at all they saw ; every box I had was turned over for their inspection, and whenever I attempted to remonstrate against their proceedings they stopped my mouth with their hands. With such damsels there was nothing left but to laugh and look on.

[As he advanced the fertility of the country increased, and after passing many small villages, separated by desert tracts, he reached the town of Minnà, near the foot of the Green Mountains.]

Minnà differs from the other towns in having its cultivation in the open fields. As we crossed these, with lofty



almond-, citron-, and orange-trees yielding a delicious fragrance on either hand, exclamations of astonishment and admiration burst from us. "Is this Arabia?" we said; "this the country we have looked on heretofore as a desert?" Verdant fields of grain and sugar-cane stretching along for miles are before us; streams of water, flowing in all directions, intersect our path; and the happy and contented appearance of the peasants agreeably helps to fill up the smiling picture. The atmosphere was delightfully clear and pure; and, as we trotted joyously along, giving or returning the salutations of peace or welcome, I could almost fancy that we had at last reached that "Araby the Blessed," which I had been accustomed to regard as existing only in the fictions of our poets.

Minnà is an old town, said to have been erected at the period of Narhirvan's invasion; but it bears, in common with the other towns, no indications of antiquity; its houses are lofty, but do not differ from those of Ibrah or Semmed. There are two square towers, about one hundred and seventy feet in height, nearly in the centre of the town; at their bases the breadth of the wall is not more than two feet, and neither side exceeds in length eight yards. It is therefore astonishing, considering the rudeness of the materials (they have nothing but unhewn stones and a coarse but apparently strong cement), that, with proportions so meagre, they should have been able to carry them to their present elevation. The guards, who are constantly on the lookout, ascend by means of a rude ladder, formed by placing bars of wood in a diagonal direction in one of the side angles within the interior of the building.

[Neswah, still nearer the mountains, was next reached. On Christmas-day he left this town for an excursion to the celebrated Green Mountains. He thus describes their delightful scenery:]

By means of steps we descended the steep side of a narrow glen, about four hundred feet in depth, passing in our progress several houses perched on crags or other acclivities, their walls built up in some places so as to appear but a continuation of the precipice. These small, snug, compact-looking dwellings have been erected by the natives one above the other, so that their appearance from the bottom of the glen, hanging as it were in mid-air, affords to the spectator a most novel and interesting picture. Here we found, amid a great variety of fruits and trees, pomegranates, citrons, almonds, nutmegs, and walnuts, with coffee-bushes and vines. In the summer, these together must yield a delicious fragrance; but it was now winter, and they were leafless. Water flows in many places from the upper part of the hills, and is received at the lower in small reservoirs, whence it is distributed all over the face of the country. From the narrowness of this glen, and the steepness of its sides, only the lower part of it receives the warmth of the sun's rays for a short period of the day; and even at the time of our arrival we found it so chilly, that, after a short halt, we were very happy to continue our journey.

[Lack of supplies and an attack of fever forced him to return to the coast, during which the following interesting incident happened.]

Weary and faint from the fatigue of the day's journey, in order to enjoy the freshness of the evening breeze, I had my carpet spread beneath a tree. An Arab passing by paused to gaze upon me, and, touched by my condition and the melancholy which was depicted on my countenance, he proffered the salutation of peace, pointed to the crystal stream which sparkled at my feet, and said, "Look, friend, for running water maketh the heart glad!" With his hands folded over his breast, that mute but most graceful

of Eastern salutations, he bowed and passed on. I was in a situation to estimate sympathy; and so much of that feeling was exhibited in the manner of this son of the desert, that I have never since recurred to the incident, trifling as it is, without emotion.

[Reaching the coast, he was hospitably received at the port of Suweik by the wife of the governor, who was absent.]

A huge meal, consisting of a great variety of dishes, sufficient for thirty or forty people, was prepared in his kitchen, and brought to us on large copper dishes, twice a day during the time we remained. On these occasions there was a great profusion of blue and gilt China-ware, cut-glass dishes, and decanters containing sherbet instead of wine. . . .

The Shekh after his return usually spent the evening with us. On one occasion he was accompanied by a professed story-teller, who appeared to be a great favorite with him. "Whenever I feel melancholy or out of order," said he, "I send for this man, who very soon restores me to my wonted spirits." From the falsetto tone in which the story was chanted, I could not follow the thread of the tale, and, upon my mentioning this to him, the Shekh very kindly sent me the manuscript, of which the reciter had availed himself. With little variation I found it to be the identical Sinbad the Sailor, so familiar to the readers of the Arabian Nights. I little thought, when first I perused these fascinating tales in my own language, that it would ever be my lot to listen to the original in a spot so congenial and so remote.

[Despite the assurances he received of the danger to be encountered from the Wahabees, the most fanatical of Mohammedans, he resumed his journey inland, and reached Obri, on the borders of their territory. Here he found himself in peril.]

Upon my producing the Imâm's letters [to the Shekh] he read them, and took his leave without returning any answer. About an hour afterwards he sent a verbal message to request that I should lose no time in quitting his town, as he begged to inform me, what he supposed I could not have been aware of; that it was then filled with nearly two thousand Wahabees. This was, indeed, news to us; it was somewhat earlier than we anticipated falling in with them, but we put a good face on the matter, and behaved as coolly as we could.

[The next morning the Shekh returned, with a positive refusal to allow them to proceed farther, promising a letter to the Sultan. The Wahabees crowded around the party in great numbers, and seemed only waiting for some pretext to commence an affray.]

When the Shekh came and presented me with the letter for the Sultan, I knew it would be in vain to make any further effort to shake his resolution, and therefore did not attempt it. In the mean time news had spread far and wide that two Englishmen with a box of "dollars," but in reality containing only the few clothes that we carried with us, had halted in the town. The Wahabees and other tribes had met in deliberation, while the lower classes of the townsfolk were creating noise and confusion. The Shekh either had not the shadow of any influence, or was afraid to exercise it, and his followers evidently wished to share in the plunder. It was time to act.

I called Ali on one side, told him to make neither noise nor confusion, but to collect the camels without delay. In the mean time we had packed up the tent, the crowd increasing every minute; the camels were ready and we mounted on them. A leader, or some trifling incident, was now only wanting to furnish them with a pretext for an onset. They followed us with hisses and various other

noises, until we got sufficiently clear to push briskly forward; and, beyond a few stones being thrown, we reached the outskirts of the town without further molestation. I had often before heard of the inhospitable character of the inhabitants of this place. The neighboring Arabs observe that to enter Obri a man must either go armed to the teeth, or as a beggar with a cloth, and that not of decent quality, around his waist. Thus, for a second time, ended my hopes of reaching Derreyeh from this quarter.

[This repulse ended the traveller's effort to penetrate to the capital of the Wababees. It was evidently far too dangerous an attempt, during their then warlike operations. We shall conclude our extracts from his writings with a description of a journey in the province of Hadramaut, whose coast he was exploring at a point about one hundred miles east of Aden. He learned that extensive ruins lay at some distance inland, and, penetrating thither, discovered the remains of an ancient city. The route of the travellers lay through a valley, skirted by lofty mountains, where the heat was intense.]

Within these burning hollows the sun's rays are concentrated and thrown off as from a mirror: the herbs around were scorched to a cindery blackness; not a cloud obscured the firmament, and the breeze which moaned past us was of a glowing heat, like that escaping from the mouth of a furnace. Our guides dug hollows in the sand, and thrust their blistered feet within them. Although we were not long in availing ourselves of the practical lesson they had taught us, I began to be far from pleased with their churlish demeanor.

[During the day they travelled over sandy and stony ridges, and late in the afternoon entered the Wady Meifah, where they found scanty vegetation and wells of good water.]

The country now began to assume a far different aspect. Numerous hamlets, interspersed amid extensive date-

groves, verdant fields of grain, and herds of sleek cattle, showed themselves in every direction, and we now fell in with parties of inhabitants for the first time since leaving the sea-shore. Astonishment was depicted on their countenances, but as we did not halt, they had no opportunity of gratifying their curiosity by gazing at us for any length of time.

[After a night's rest in a khan for travellers, they were hardly prepared for the scene which daylight disclosed to them.]

The dark verdure of fields of millet, sorghum, tobacco, etc., extended as far as the eye could reach. Mingled with these we had the soft acacia and the stately but more sombre foliage of the date-palm; while the creaking of numerous wheels with which the grounds were irrigated, and in the distance several rude ploughs drawn by oxen, the ruddy and lively appearance of the people, who now flocked towards us from all quarters, and the delightful and refreshing coolness of the morning air, combined to form a scene which he who gazes on the barren aspect of the coast could never anticipate.

[Three hours' travel through this bright and populous region brought them in sight of the ruins, which the inhabitants call *Nakab el-Hadjar*, meaning "The Excavation from the Rock."]

The hill upon which these ruins are situated stands out in the centre of the valley, and divides a stream which passes, during floods, on either side of it. It is nearly eight hundred yards in length, and about three hundred and fifty yards at its extreme breadth. About a third of the height from its base a massive wall, averaging from thirty to forty feet in height, is carried completely around the eminence, and flanked by square towers, erected at equal distances. There are but two entrances, north and

south; a hollow, square tower, measuring fourteen feet, stands on both sides of these. Their bases extend to the plain below, and are carried out considerably beyond the rest of the building. Between the towers, at an elevation of twenty feet from the plain, there is an oblong platform which projects about eighteen feet without and within the walls. A flight of steps was apparently once attached to either extremity of the building.

Within the entrance, at an elevation of ten feet from the platform, we found inscriptions. They are executed with extreme care, in two horizontal lines on the smooth face of the stones, the letters being about eight inches long. Attempts have been made, though without success, to obliterate them. From the conspicuous situation which they occupy, there can be but little doubt but that, when deciphered, they will be found to contain the name of the founder of the building, as well as the date and purport of its erection. The whole of the walls and towers, and some of the edifices within, are built of the same material,—a compact grayish-colored marble, hewn to the required shape with the utmost nicety. The dimensions of the slabs at the base were from five to seven feet in length, two to three in height, and three to four in breadth.

Let us now visit the interior, where the most conspicuous object is an oblong square building, the walls of which face the cardinal points: its dimensions are twenty-seven by seventeen yards. The walls are fronted with a kind of freestone, each slab being cut of the same size, and the whole so beautifully put together that I endeavored in vain to insert the blade of a small penknife between them. The outer, unpolished surface is covered with small chisel-marks, which the Bedouins have mistaken for writing. From the extreme care displayed in the construction of this building, I have no doubt that it is



a temple, and my disappointment at finding the interior filled up with the ruins of the fallen roof was very great. Had it remained entire, we might have obtained some clue to guide us in our researches respecting the form of religion professed by the earlier Arabs. Above and beyond this building there are several other edifices, with nothing peculiar in their form or appearance.

In no portion of the ruins did we succeed in tracing any remains of arches or columns, nor could we discover on their surface any of those fragments of pottery, colored glass, or metals which are always found in old Egyptian towns, and which I also saw in those we discovered on the northwest coast of Arabia. Except the attempts to deface the inscriptions, there is no other appearance of the buildings having suffered from any ravages besides those of time; and owing to the dryness of the climate, as well as the hardness of the material, every stone, even to the marking of the chisel, remains as perfect as the day it was hewn. We were anxious to ascertain if the Arabs had preserved any tradition concerning the building, but they refer them, like other Arabs, to their pagan ancestors. "Do you believe," said one of the Bedouins to me, upon my telling him that his ancestors were then capable of greater works than themselves, "that these stones were raised by the unassisted hands of the Kafirs? No! no! They had devils, legions of devils (God preserve us from them!), to aid them."



## CROSSING THE ARABIAN DESERTS.

WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE.

[Of all travellers in Arabia, there are none that bear comparison with William Gifford Palgrave in regard to the extent of territory traversed and the exploration of the vast interior of that great peninsula. We first came to know Arabia as it is in his picturesque pages. Born at Westminster, England, in 1826, he traversed Arabia in 1862-63 in the service of Napoleon III. and of the Jesuits, of which society he had become a priest. He afterwards served as British consul in many parts of the world, and wrote a number of works, of which the one with which we are here concerned is "*Narrative of a Year's Journey through Central and Eastern Arabia.*" We select here from his graphic pictures of desert life in Arabia.]

THE general type of Arabia is that of a central table-land, surrounded by a desert ring, sandy to the south, west, and east, and stony to the north. This outlying circle is in its turn girt by a line of mountains, low and sterile for the most, but attaining in Yemen and Oman considerable height, breadth, and fertility, while beyond these a narrow rim of coast is bordered by the sea. The surface of the midmost table-land equals somewhat less than one-half of the entire peninsula, and its special demarcations are much affected, nay, often absolutely fixed, by the windings and in-runnings of the Nefood.\* If to these central highlands, or Nedjed, taking that word in its wider sense, we add the Djowf, the Ta'yif, Djebel 'Aaseer, Yemen, Oman, and Hasa, in short, whatever spots of fertility belong to the outer circles, we shall find that Arabia contains about two-thirds

---

\* The sand-passes between the cultivated districts, or, to use an Arabian term, the "Daughters of the Great Desert."

of cultivated, or at least of cultivable land, with a remaining third of irreclaimable desert, chiefly to the south.

[The great northern desert is thus strikingly delineated.]

Dreary land of death, in which even the face of an enemy were almost a relief amid such utter solitude. But for five whole days the little dried-up lizard of the plain, that looks as if he had never a drop of moisture in his ugly body, and the jerboa, or field-rat of Arabia, were the only living creatures to console our view.

It was a march during which we might have almost repented of our enterprise had such a sentiment been any longer possible or availing. Day after day found us urging our camels to their utmost pace, for fifteen or sixteen hours together out of the twenty-four, under a well-nigh vertical sun, which the Ethiopians of Herodotus might reasonably be excused for cursing, with nothing either in the landscape around or in the companions of our way to relieve for a moment the eye or the mind. Then an insufficient halt for rest or sleep, at most of two or three hours, soon interrupted by the oft-repeated admonition, "if we linger here we all die of thirst," sounding in our ears; and then to remount our jaded beasts and push them on through the dark night, amid the constant probability of attack and plunder from roving marauders.

For myself, I was, to mend matters, under the depressing influence of a tertian fever contracted at Ma'an, and what between weariness and low spirits, began to imagine seriously that no waters remained before us except the waters of death for us and of oblivion for our friends. The days wore by like a delirious dream, till we were often almost unconscious of the ground we travelled over and of the journey on which we were engaged. One only herb appeared at our feet to give some appearance of variety and

life; it was the bitter and poisonous colocynth of the desert.

Our order of road was this. Long before dawn we were on our way, and paced it till the sun, having attained about half-way between the horizon and the zenith, assigned the moment of alighting for our morning meal. This our Bedouins always took good care should be in some hollow or low ground, for concealment's sake; in every other respect we had ample liberty of choice, for one patch of black pebbles with a little sand and withered grass between was just like another; shade or shelter, or anything like them, was wholly out of the question in such "nakedness of the land." We then alighted, and my companion and myself would pile up the baggage into a sort of wall, to afford a half-screen from the scorching sun-rays, and here recline awhile.

Next came the culinary preparations, in perfect accordance with our provisions, which were simple enough,—namely, a bag of coarse flour mixed with salt, and a few dried dates; there was no third item on the bill of fare. We now took a few handfuls of flour, and one of the Bedouins kneaded it with his unwashed hands or dirty bit of leather, pouring over it a little of the dingy water contained in the skins, and then patted out this exquisite paste into a large round cake, about an inch thick, and five or six inches across.

Meanwhile, another had lighted a fire of dry grass, colocynth roots, and dried camel's dung, till he had prepared a bed of glowing embers; among these the cake was now cast, and immediately covered up with hot ashes, and so left for a few minutes, then taken out, turned, and covered again, till at last half-kneaded, half-raw, half-roasted, and burnt all round, it was taken out to be broken up between the hungry band, and eaten scalding hot, before it should

cool into an indescribable leathery substance, capable of defying the keenest appetite. A draught of dingy water was its sole but suitable accompaniment.

The meal ended, we had again without loss of time to resume our way from mirage to mirage, till "slowly flaming over all, from heat to heat, the day decreased," and about an hour before sunset we would stagger off our camels as best we might, to prepare an evening feast of precisely the same description as that of the forenoon, or more often, for fear lest the smoke of our fire should give notice to some distant rover, to content ourselves with dry dates, and half an hour's rest on the sand.

At last our dates, like Esop's bread-sack, or that of Beyhas, his Arab prototype, came to an end; and then our supper was a soldier's one; what that is my military friends will know; but grit and pebbles excepted, there was no bed in our case. After which, to remount, and travel on by moon or starlight, till a little before midnight we would lie down for just enough sleep to tantalize, not refresh. . . .

It was now the 22d of June, and the fifth day since our departure from the wells of Wokba. The water in the skins had little more to offer to our thirst than muddy dregs, and as yet no sign appeared of a fresh supply. At last about noon we drew near some hillocks of loose gravel and sandstone a little on our right; our Bedouins conversed together awhile, and then turned their course and ours in that direction. "Hold fast on your camels, for they are going to be startled and jump about," said Salim to us. Why the camels should be startled I could not understand; when on crossing the mounds just mentioned, we suddenly came on five or six black tents, of the very poorest description, pitched near some wells excavated in the gravelly hollow below. The reason of Salim's pre-

cautionary hint now became evident, for our silly beasts started at first sight of the tents, as though they had never seen the like before, and then scampered about, bounding friskily here and there, till what between their jolting (for a camel's run much resembles that of a cow) and our own laughing, we could hardly keep on their backs. However, thirst soon prevailed over timidity, and they left off their pranks to approach the well's edge, and sniff at the water below.

[A day or two afterwards a perilous incident of desert experience occurred.]

My readers, no less than myself, must have heard or read many a story of the simoom, or deadly wind of the desert, but for me I had never yet met it in full force; and its modified form, or *shelook*, to use the Arab phrase, that is, the sirocco of the Syrian waste, though disagreeable enough, can hardly ever be termed dangerous. Hence I had been almost inclined to set down the tales told of the strange phenomena and fatal effects of this "poisoned gale," in the same category with the moving pillars of sand, recorded in many works of higher historical pretensions than "Thalaba." At those perambulatory columns and sand-smothered caravans the Bedouins, whenever I interrogated them on the subject, laughed outright, and declared that beyond an occasional dust-storm, similar to those which any one who has passed a summer in Scinde can hardly fail to have experienced, nothing of the romantic kind just alluded to occurred in Arabia. But when questioned about the simoom, they always treated it as a much more serious matter, and such in real earnest we now find it.

It was about noon, the noon of a summer solstice in the unclouded Arabian sky over a scorched desert, when abrupt

and burning gusts of wind began to blow by fits from the south, while the oppressiveness of the air increased every moment, till my companion and myself mutually asked each other what this could mean, and what was to be its result. We turned to inquire of Salim, but he had already wrapped up his face in his mantle, and, bowed down and crouching on the neck of his camel, replied not a word. His comrades, the two Sherarat Bedouins, had adopted a similar position, and were equally silent. At last, after repeated interrogations, Salim, instead of replying directly to our questioning, pointed to a small black tent, providentially at no great distance in front, and said, "Try to reach *that*, if we can get there we are saved." He added, "Take care that your camels do not stop and lie down;" and then, giving his own several vigorous blows, relapsed into muffled silence.

We looked anxiously towards the tent; it was yet a hundred yards off, or more. Meanwhile, the gusts grew hotter and more violent, and it was only by repeated efforts that we could urge our beasts forward. The horizon rapidly darkened to a deep violet hue, and seemed to draw in like a curtain on every side, while at the same time a stifling blast, as though from some enormous oven opening right on our path, blew steadily under the gloom; our camels too, began, in spite of all we could do, to turn round and round and bend their knees, preparing to lie down. The simoom was fairly upon us.

Of course we had followed our Arabs' example by muffling our faces, and now with blows and kicks we forced the staggering animals onward to the only asylum within reach. So dark was the atmosphere, and so burning the heat, that it seemed that hell had risen from the earth, or descended from above. But we were yet in time, and at the moment when the worst of the concen-

trated poison-blast was coming around, we were already prostrate, one and all, within the tent, with our heads well wrapped up, almost suffocated, indeed, but safe; while our camels lay without like dead, their long necks stretched out on the sand, awaiting the passing of the gale.

On our first arrival the tent contained a solitary Bedouin woman, whose husband was away with his camels in the Wady Sirhan. When she saw five handsome men like us rush thus suddenly into her dwelling without a word of leave or salutation, she very properly set up a scream to the tune of the four crown pleas, murder, arson, robbery, and I know not what else. Salim hastened to reassure her by calling out, "Friends," and without more words threw himself flat on the ground. All followed his example in silence.

We remained thus for about ten minutes, during which a still heat like that of red-hot iron slowly passing over us was alone to be felt. Then the tent walls began again to flap in the returning gusts, and announced that the worst of the simoom had gone by. We got up, half dead with exhaustion, and unmuffled our faces. My comrades appeared more like corpses than living men, and so, I suppose, did I. However, I could not forbear, in spite of warnings, to step out and look at the camels; they were still lying flat as though they had been shot. The air was yet darkish, but before long it brightened up to its usual dazzling clearness. During the whole time that the simoom lasted the atmosphere was entirely free from sand or dust, so that I hardly know how to account for its singular obscurity.

[After reaching the cultivated district of the Djowf, where they were hospitably received and dwelt for some time in comfort, the travellers set out again, to cross the dreadful sand-passes of the Nefood.]



Much had we heard of them from Bedouins and countrymen, so that we had made up our minds to something very terrible and very impracticable. But the reality, especially in these dog-days, proved worse than ought heard or imagined.

We were now traversing an immense ocean of loose reddish sand, unlimited to the eye, and heaped up in enormous ridges, running parallel to each other from north to south, undulation after undulation, each swell two or three hundred feet in average height, with slant sides and rounded crests furrowed in every direction by the capricious gales of the desert. In the depths between the traveller finds himself as it were imprisoned in a suffocating sand-pit, hemmed in by burning walls on every side ; while at other times, while laboring up the slope, he overlooks what seems a vast sea of fire, swelling under a heavy monsoon wind, and ruffled by a cross blast into little red-hot waves. Neither shelter nor rest for eye or limb amid torrents of light and heat poured from above on an answering glare reflected below.

Add to this the weariness of long summer days of toiling—I might better say wading—through the loose and scorching soil, on drooping, half-stupefied beasts, with few and interrupted hours of sleep at night, and no rest by day because no shelter, little to eat and less to drink, while the tepid and discolored water in the skins rapidly diminishes, even more by evaporation than by use, and a vertical sun, such a sun, strikes blazing down till clothes, baggage, and housings all take the smell of burning, and scarce permit the touch. The boisterous gayety of the Bedouins was soon expended, and scattered, one to front, another behind, each pursued his way in silence only broken by the angry snarl of the camels when struck, as they often were, to improve their pace. . . .

The loose sand hardly admits of any vegetation: even



the ghada, which, like many other Euphorbias, seems hardly to require either earth or moisture for its sustenance, is here scant and miserably stunted; none can afford either shelter or pasture. Sometimes a sort of track appears, more often none; the moving surface has long since lost the traces of those who last crossed it. . . .

Near sunset of the second day we came in sight of two lonely pyramidal peaks of dark granite, rising amid the sand-waves full in our way. "'Aalames-Sa'ad," the people call them, that is, "the signs of good luck," because they indicate that about one-third of the distance from Be'er-Shekeek to Djebel Shomer has been here passed. They stand out like islands, or rather like the rocks that start from the sea near the mouth of the Tagus, or like the Maldivé group in the midst of the deep Indian Ocean. Their roots must be in the rocky base over which this upper layer of sand is strewn like the sea-water over its bed; we shall afterwards meet with similar phenomena in other desert spots. Here the understratum is evidently of granite, sometimes it is calcareous. As to the average depth of the sand, I should estimate it at about four hundred feet, but it may not unfrequently be much more; at least I have met with hollows of full six hundred feet in perpendicular descent. . . .

Soon we reached the summit of a gigantic sand ridge. "Look there," said Djedey' to us, and pointed forward. Far off on the extreme horizon a blue cloud-like peak appeared, and another somewhat lower at its side. "Those are the mountains of Djobbah, and the nearest limits of Djebel Shomer," said our guide. Considering how loose the water-skins now flapped at the camel's side, my first thought was, "How are we to reach them?" All the band seemed much of the same mind, for they pushed on harder than before.

But the farther we advanced the worse did the desert grow, more desolate, more hopeless in its barren waves; and at noon our band broke up into a thorough *saufte qui peut*; some had already exhausted their provisions, solid or liquid, and others were scarcely better furnished; every one goaded on his beast to reach the land of rest and safety. Djedey', my comrade, and myself kept naturally together. On a sudden my attention was called to two or three sparrows, twittering under a shrub by the wayside. They were the first birds we had met with in this desert, and indicated our approach to cultivation and life. I bethought me of tales heard in childhood, at a comfortable fireside, how some far-wandering sailors, Columbus and his crew, if my memory serves me right, after days and months of dreary ocean, welcomed a bird that, borne from a yet undiscovered coast, first settled on their mast. My comrade fell a-crying for very joy.

However, we had yet a long course before us, and we ploughed on all that evening with scarce an hour's halt for a most scanty supper, and then all night up and down the undulating labyrinth, like men in an enchanter's circle, fated always to journey and never to advance.

The morning broke on us still toiling amid the sands. By daylight we saw our straggling companions like black specks here and there, one far ahead on a yet vigorous dromedary, another in the rear dismounted, and urging his fallen beast to rise by plunging a knife a good inch deep into its haunches, a third lagging in the extreme distance. Every one for himself and God for us all!—so we quickened our pace, looking anxiously before us for the hills of Djobbah, which could not now be distant. At noon we came in sight of them all at once, close on our right, wild and fantastic cliffs, rising sheer on the margin of the sand sea. We coasted them awhile, till at

a turn the whole plain of Djobbah and its landscape opened on our view. . . .

My camel was now at the end—not of his wits, for he never had any, but of his legs—and hardly capable of advance, while I was myself too tired to urge him vigorously, and we took a fair hour to cross a narrow white strip of mingled salt and sand that yet intervened between us and the village.

Without its garden walls was pitched the very identical tent of our noble guide, and here his wife and family were anxiously awaiting their lord. Djedey' invited us—indeed he could not conformably with Shomer customs do less—to partake of his board and lodging, and we had no better course than to accept of both. So we let our camels fling themselves out like dead or dying alongside of the tabernacle, and entered to drink water mixed with sour milk.

---

## THE MOCHA COFFEE DISTRICT.

CARSTENS NIEBUHR.

[As one of the earliest of scientific travellers, an extract from the works of Carstens Niebuhr may prove of interest. This distinguished traveller was born at Lüdinvorth, Hanover, in 1733, entered the Danish service in 1760, and was appointed in 1761 to accompany a scientific expedition to Arabia. All his companions died within a year, but he remained six years in the country, and after his return published "Description of Arabia" and "Travels in Arabia and the Surrounding Countries." He died in 1815. We select from his writings several statements about the customs and productions of the Arabs.]

WE had one opportunity of learning their ideas of the benefits to be derived from medicine. Mr. Cramer had given a scribe an emetic which operated with extreme

violence. The Arabs, being struck at its wonderful effects, resolved all to take the same excellent remedy, and the reputation of our friend's skill thus became very high among them. The Emir of the port sent one day for him; and, as he did not go immediately, the Emir soon after sent a saddled horse to our gate. Mr. Cramer, supposing that this horse was intended to bear him to the Emir, was going to mount him, when he was told that this was the patient he was to cure. We luckily found another physician in our party; our Swedish servant had been with the hussars in his native country, and had acquired some knowledge of the diseases of horses. He offered to cure the Emir's horse, and succeeded. The cure rendered him famous, and he was afterwards sent for to human patients.

[Their journey lay through the interior of Yemen, where they were well received.]

I hired an ass, and its owner agreed to follow me as my servant on foot. A turban, a great-coat wanting the sleeves, a shirt, linen drawers, and a pair of slippers were all the dress that I wore. It being the fashion of the country to carry arms in travelling, I had a sabre and two pistols hung by my girdle. A piece of old carpet was my saddle, and served me likewise for a seat, a table, and various other purposes. To cover me at night, I had the linen cloak which the Arabs wrap about their shoulders to shelter them from the sun and rain. A bucket of water, an article of indispensable necessity to a traveller in these arid regions, hung by my saddle.

[His course led him to the plantations of the famous Mocha coffee. He thus describes the region.]

Neither asses nor mules can be used here. The hills are to be climbed by steep and narrow paths; yet in compari-

son with the parched plains of the Tehama, the scenery seemed to me charming, as it was covered with gardens and plantations of coffee-trees.

Up to this time I had seen only one small basaltic hill; but here whole mountains were composed chiefly of those columns. Such detached rocks formed grand objects in the landscape, especially where cascades of water were seen to rush from their summits. The cascades, in such instances, had the appearance of being supported by rows of artificial pillars. These basalts are of great utility to the inhabitants; the columns, which are easily separated, serve as steps where the ascent is most difficult, and as materials for walls to support the plantations of coffee-trees, upon the steep declivities of the mountains.

The tree which affords the coffee is well known in Europe; so that I need not here describe it particularly. The coffee-trees were all in flower at Bulgosa, and exhaled an exquisitely agreeable perfume. They are planted upon terraces, in the form of an amphitheatre. Most of them are only watered by the rains that fall, but some, indeed, from large reservoirs upon the heights, in which spring-water is collected in order to be sprinkled upon the terraces, where the trees grow so thick together that the rays of the sun can hardly enter among their branches. We were told that those trees, thus artificially watered, yielded ripe fruit twice in the year; but the fruit becomes not fully ripe the second time, and the coffee of this crop is always inferior to that of the first.

Stones being more common in this part of the country than in the Tehama, the houses—as well of the villages as those which are scattered solitarily over the hills—are built of this material. Although not to be compared to the houses of Europe for commodiousness and elegance, yet they have a good appearance; especially such of them

as stand upon the heights, with amphitheatres of beautiful gardens and trees around them.

Even at this village of Bulgosa we were greatly above the level of the plain from which we had ascended; yet we had scarcely climbed half the ascent to Kusma, where the Emir of this district dwells, upon the loftiest peak of the range of mountains. Enchanting landscapes there meet the eye on all sides.

We passed the night at Bulgosa. Several of the men of the village came to see us, and after they retired we had a visit from our hostess, with some young women accompanying her, who were all very desirous to see the Europeans. They seemed less shy than the women in the cities; their faces were unveiled, and they talked freely with us. As the air is fresher and cooler upon these hills, the women have a finer and fairer complexion than in the plain. Our artist drew a portrait of a young girl who was going to draw water, and was dressed in a shirt of linen, chequered blue and white. The top and middle of the shirt, as well as the lower part of the drawers, were embroidered with needle-work of different colors.

[He tells the following story about the miraculous powers of Ismael Melek, a former king of Taas, and now its patron saint.]

Two beggars had asked charity of the Emir of Taas, but only one of them had tasted of his bounty. Upon this the other went to the tomb of Ismael Melek to implore his aid. The saint, who, when alive, had been very charitable, stretched his hand out of the tomb and gave the beggar a letter containing an order on the Emir to pay him a hundred crowns. Upon examining this order with the greatest care, it was found that Ismael Melek had written it with his own hand and sealed it with his own seal. The governor could not refuse payment; but to avoid all subsequent

trouble from such bills of exchange, he had a wall built, enclosing the tomb.

[We shall conclude these extracts with Niebuhr's account of his reception at the important city of Sana, which he reached after many difficulties, and gained admission to the palace of the Imâm.]

The hall of audience was a spacious square chamber, having an arched roof. In the middle was a large basin with some *jets d'eau*, rising fourteen feet in height. Behind the basin, and near the throne, were two large benches, each a foot and a half high; upon the throne was a space covered with silken stuff, on which, as well as on both sides of it, lay large cushions. The Imâm sat between the cushions, with his legs crossed in the Eastern fashion; his gown was of a bright-green color, and had large sleeves. Upon each side of his breast was a rich filleting of gold lace, and on his head he wore a great white turban. His sons sat on his right hand and his brothers on the left. Opposite to them, on the highest of the two benches, sat the Vizier, and our place was on the lower bench.

We were first led up to the Imâm, and were permitted to kiss both the back and the palm of his hand, as well as the hem of his robe. It is an extraordinary favor when the Mohammedan princes permit any person to kiss the palm of the hand. There was a solemn silence through the whole hall. As each of us touched the Imâm's hand a herald still proclaimed, "God preserve the Imâm!" and all who were present repeated these words after him. I was thinking at the time how I should pay my compliments in Arabic, and was not a little disturbed by this noisy ceremony.

We did not think it proper to mention the true reason of our expedition through Arabia; but told the Imâm that, wishing to travel by the shortest ways to the Danish colo-



nies, in the East Indies, we had heard so much of the plenty and security which prevailed through his dominions, that we had resolved to see them with our own eyes, so that we might describe them to our countrymen. The Imâm told us we were welcome to his dominions, and might stay as long as we pleased. After our return home he sent to each of us a small purse containing ninety-nine *komassis*, two and thirty of which make a crown. This piece of civility might, perhaps, appear no compliment to a traveller's delicacy. But, when it is considered that a stranger, unacquainted with the value of the money of the country, obliged to pay every day for his provisions, is in danger of being imposed upon by the money-changers, this care of providing us with small money will appear to have been sufficiently obliging. . . .

The city of Sana is situated at the foot of Mount Nik-kum, on which are still to be seen the ruins of a castle, which the Arabs suppose to have been built by Shem. Near this mountain stands the citadel; a rivulet rises upon the other side, and near it is the Bostan el-Metwokkel, a spacious garden, which was laid out by the Imâm of that name, and has been greatly embellished by the reigning Imâm. The walls of the city, which are built of bricks, exclude this garden, which is enclosed within a wall of its own. The city, properly so called, is not very extensive; one may walk around it in an hour. There are a number of mosques, some of which have been built by Turkish Pashas. In Sana are only twelve public baths, but many noble palaces, three of the most splendid of which have been built by the reigning Imâm. The materials of these palaces are burnt bricks, and sometimes even hewn stones; but the houses of the common people are of bricks which have been dried in the sun.

The suburb of Bir el-Arsab is nearly adjoining the city



on the east side. The houses of this village are scattered through the gardens, along the banks of a small river. Fruits are very plenteous; there are more than twenty different kinds of grapes, which, as they do not all ripen at the same time, continue to afford a delicious refreshment for several months. The Arabs likewise preserve grapes by hanging them up in their cellars, and eat them almost through the whole year. Two leagues northward from Sana is a plain named Rodda, which is overspread with gardens, and watered by a number of rivulets. This place bears a great resemblance to the neighborhood of Damascus. But Sana, which some ancient authors compare to Damascus, stands on a rising ground, with nothing like florid vegetation about it. After long rains, indeed, a small rivulet runs through the city; but all the ground is dry through the rest of the year. However, by aqueducts from Mount Nikkum, the town and castle of Sana are, at all times, supplied with abundance of excellent fresh water.

[After a week's stay, the travellers set out on their return, the Imâm sending each of them on their departure a complete suit of clothes. He also sent a letter to the Emir of Mocha, bidding him to pay them two hundred crowns as a farewell present. They reached Mocha, and sailed thence for Bombay. The last of Niebuhr's companions died in India, after which he returned by way of Persia, Armenia, and Asia Minor, finally reaching Denmark in 1767. His journey may be said to have inaugurated the era of intelligent scientific exploration.]

## IN THE CAPITAL OF NEDJED.

WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE.

[We have told, from Palgrave's writings, the story of the desert in its unmitigated severity. To this lifeless world of sand are sharply contrasted the extensive cultivated regions of Arabia, which for ages have lain in the heart of this desert realm almost unknown to the world, and were first made known to modern Europeans by the fearless traveller above named. Favored by an Oriental cast of features, a thorough knowledge of the Arabic language and literature, and a familiarity with the habits of the people gained by years of residence in the East, Palgrave safely traversed realms where a knowledge of his Christian belief would have brought him certain death. After a period of residence in various oases, he entered the great district of Nedjed, and journeyed to its capital city, Ri'ad, the stronghold of the fanatical Mohammedan sect of Wahabees. The approach to this city is thus picturesquely described.]

FOR about an hour we proceeded southward, through barren and undulating ground, unable to see over the country to any distance. At last we attained a rising eminence, and crossing it, came at once in full view of Ri'ad, the main object of our long journey,—the capital of Nedjed and half Arabia, its very heart of hearts.

Before us stretched a wild open valley, and in its foreground, immediately below the pebbly slope on whose summit we stood, lay the capital, large and square, crowned by high towers and strong walls of defence, a mass of roofs and terraces, where overtopping all frowned the huge but irregular pile of Feysul's royal castle, and hard by it rose the scarce less conspicuous palace, built and inhabited by his eldest son, 'Abdallah. Other edifices, too, of remarkable appearance broke here and there through the maze of



AN ARAB SHEIKH.



gray roof-tops, but their object and in-dwellers were yet to learn.

All around for full three miles over the surrounding plain, but more especially to the west and south, waved a sea of palm-trees above green fields and well-watered gardens; while the singing, droning sound of the water-wheels reached us even where we had halted, at a quarter of a mile or more from the nearest town-walls. On the opposite side southward, the valley opened out into the great and even more fertile plains of Yemamah, thickly dotted with groves and villages, among which the large town of Manfoohah, hardly inferior in size to Ri'ad itself, might be clearly distinguished.

Farther in the background ranged the blue hills, the ragged Sierra of Yemamah, compared some thirteen hundred years since, by 'Amroo-ebn-Kelthoom, the Shomerite, to drawn swords in battle array; and behind them was concealed the immeasurable Desert of the South, or Dahna. On the west the valley closes in and narrows in its upward windings towards Derey'ecyah, while to the south-west the low mounds of Aflaj are the division between it and Wady Dowasir. Due east in the distance a long blue line marks the farthest heights of Toweik, and shuts out from view the low ground of Hasa and the shores of the Persian Gulf.

In all the countries which I have visited, and they are many, seldom has it been mine to survey a landscape equal to this in beauty and in historical meaning, rich and full alike to eye and mind. But should any of my readers have ever approached Damascus from the side of the Anti-Lebanon, and surveyed the Ghootah from the heights above Mazzeh, they may thence form an approximate idea of the valley of Ri'ad when viewed from the north. Only this is wider and more varied, and the circle of vision here em-

braces vaster plains and bolder mountains; while the mixture of tropical aridity and luxuriant verdure, of crowded population and desert tracks, is one that Arabia alone can present, and in comparison with which Syria seems tame, and Italy monotonous.

[Palgrave was permitted to reside in Ri'ad under the assumed character of a physician, many patients of note coming to him. He made the most of his opportunities for observation. The following is what he has to tell of the famous Mocha coffee.]

Be it known, by way of prelude, that coffee though one in name is manifold in fact; nor is every kind of berry entitled to the high qualifications too indiscriminately bestowed on the comprehensive genus. The best coffee, let cavillers say what they will, is that of the Yemen, commonly entitled "Mokha," from the main place of exportation. Now, I should be sorry to incur a lawsuit for libel or defamation from our wholesale or retail salesmen; but were the particle not prefixed to the countless labels in London shop-windows that bear the name of the Red Sea haven, they would have a more truthful import than what at present they convey.

Very little, so little indeed as to be quite inappreciable, of the Mocha or Yemen berry ever finds its way westward of Constantinople. Arabia itself, Syria, and Egypt consume fully two-thirds, and the remainder is almost exclusively absorbed by Turkish and Armenian œsophagi. Nor do these last get for their limited share the best or the purest. Before reaching the harbors of Alexandria, Jaffa, Beyrout, etc., for further exportation, the Mokhan bales have been, while yet on their way, sifted and resifted, grain by grain, and whatever they may have contained of the hard, rounded, half-transparent, greenish-brown berry, the only one really worth roasting and pounding, has been

carefully picked out by experienced fingers; and it is the less generous residue of flattened, opaque, and whitish grains which alone, or almost alone, goes on board the shipping.

So constant is this selecting process, that a gradation regular as the degrees on a map may be observed in the quality of Mokha, that is, Yemen, coffee even within the limits of Arabia itself, in proportion as one approaches to or recedes from Wadi Nejran and the neighborhood of Mecca, the first stages of the radiating mart. I have myself been times out of number an eye-witness of this sifting; the operation is performed with the utmost seriousness and scrupulous exactness, reminding me of the diligence ascribed to American diamond-searchers, when scrutinizing the torrent sands for their minute but precious treasure.

The berry, thus qualified for foreign use, quits its native land on three main lines of export,—that of the Red Sea, that of the inner Hedjaz, and that of Kaseem. The terminus of the first line is Egypt, of the second Syria, of the third Nedjed and Shomer. Hence Egypt and Syria are, of all countries without the frontiers of Arabia, the best supplied with its specific produce, though under the restrictions already stated; and through Alexandria or the Syrian seaports, Constantinople and the North obtain their diminished share. But this last stage of transport seldom conveys the genuine article, except by the intervention of private arrangements and personal friendship or interest.

Where mere sale and traffic are concerned, substitution of an inferior quality, or an adulteration almost equivalent to substitution, frequently takes place in the different storehouses of the coast, till whatever Mokha-marked coffee leaves them for Europe and the West is often no more like the real offspring of the Yemen plant than the log-

wood preparations of a London fourth-rate retail wine-seller resemble the pure libations of an Oporto vineyard.

The second species of coffee, by some preferred to that of Yemen, but in my poor opinion inferior to it, is the growth of Abyssinia; its berry is larger, and of a somewhat different and a less heating flavor. It is, however, an excellent species; and whenever the rich land that bears it shall be permitted by man to enjoy the benefits of her natural fertility, it will probably become an object of extensive cultivation and commerce. With this stops, at least in European opinion and taste, the list of coffee, and begins the list of beans.

While we were yet in the Djowf, I described with sufficient minuteness how the berry is prepared for actual use;\* nor is the process any way varied in Nedjed or other Arab lands. But in Nedjed an additional spicing of saffron, cloves, and the like, is still more common; a fact which is easily explained by the want of what stimulus tobacco affords elsewhere. A second consequence of non-smoking among the Arabs is the increased strength of their coffee decoctions in Nedjed, and the prodigious frequency of their use; to which we must add the larger "finjans," or coffee-cups, here in fashion. So sure are men, when debarred of one pleasure or excitement, to make it up by another.

[Palgrave gives the following picturesque description of the Wahabee capital:]

We wrap our head-gear, like true Arabs, round our chins, put on our grave-looking black cloaks, take each a long stick in hand, and thread the narrow streets inter-

---

\* This is done very much as elsewhere, by roasting, pounding, and then boiling the coffee berry.



mediate between our house and the market-place at a funeral pace, and speaking in an undertone. Those whom we meet salute us, or we salute them; be it known that the lesser number should always be the first to salute the greater, he who rides him who walks, he who walks him who stands, the stander the sitter, and so forth; but never should a man salute a woman: difference of age or even of rank between men does not enter into the general rules touching the priority of salutation. If those whom we have accosted happen to be acquaintances or patients, or should they belong to the latitudinarian school, our salutation is duly returned. But if, by ill fortune, they appertain to the strict and high orthodox party, an under-look with a half-scowl in silence is their only answer to our greeting. Whereat we smile, *Malvolio*-like, and pass on.

At last we reach the market-place; it is full of women and peasants, selling exactly what we want to buy, besides meat, fire-wood, milk, etc.; around are customers, come on errands like our own. We single out a tempting basket of dates, and begin haggling with the unbeautiful *Phyllis*, seated beside her rural store. We find the price too high. "By Him who protects *Feysul*," answers she, "I am the loser at that price." We insist. "By Him who shall grant *Feysul* a long life, I cannot bate it," she replies. We have nothing to oppose to such tremendous asseverations, and accede or pass on, as the case may be.

Half of the shops, namely, those containing grocery, household articles of use, shoemakers' stalls, and smithies, are already open and busily thronged. For the capital of a strongly centralized empire is always full of strangers, come will they nill they on their several affairs. But around the butchers' shops awaits the greatest human and canine crowd: my readers, I doubt not, know that the only licensed scavengers throughout the East are the dogs.

Nedjeans are great flesh-eaters, and no wonder, considering the cheapness of meat (a fine fat sheep costs at most five shillings, often less) and the keenness of mountaineer appetites. I wish that the police regulations of the city would enforce a little more cleanliness about these numerous shambles; every refuse is left to cumber the ground at scarce two yards' distance. But dogs and dry air much alleviate the nuisance,—a remark I made before at Ha'yel and Bereydah; it holds true for all Central Arabia.

[The quarter of the city inhabited by the most orthodox Wahabees is thus described.]

Mosques of primitive simplicity and ample space,—where the great dogma, not however confined to Ri'ad, that “we are exactly in the right, and every one else is in the wrong,” is daily inculcated to crowds of auditors, overjoyed to find Paradise all theirs and none's but theirs,—smaller oratories of Musallas, wells for ablution, and Kaabah-directed niches adorn every corner, and fill up every interval of house or orchard. The streets of this quarter are open, and the air healthy, so that the invisible blessing is seconded by sensible and visible privileges of Providence. Think not, gentle reader, that I am indulging in gratuitous or self-invented irony; I am only rendering expression for expression, and almost word for word, the talk of true Wahabees, when describing the model quarter of their model city. This section of the town is spacious and well-peopled, and flourishes, the citadel of national and religious intolerance, pious pride, and genuine Wahabecism.

Round the whole town run the walls, varying from twenty to thirty feet in height; they are strong, in good repair, and defended by a deep trench and embankment. Beyond them are the gardens, much similar to those of

Kaseem, both in arrangement and produce, despite the difference of latitude, here compensated by a higher ground level. But immediately to the south, in Yemamah, the eye remarks a change in the vegetation to a more tropical aspect.

[Palgrave obtained permission to visit the royal stables, where the finest specimens of the famous Nedjed breed of horses are kept. Of these he gives the following interesting description.]

The stables are situated some way out of the town, to the northeast, a little to the left of the road which we had followed at our first arrival, and not far from the gardens of 'Abd-er-Rahman the Wahabee. They cover a large square space, about one hundred and fifty yards each way, and are open in the centre, with a long shed running round the inner walls; under this covering the horses, about three hundred in number when I saw them, are picketed during the night; in the daytime they may stretch their legs at pleasure within the central court-yard. The greater number were accordingly loose; a few, however, were tied up at their stalls; some, but not many, had horse-cloths over them. The heavy dews which fall in Wady Haneefah do not permit their remaining with impunity in the open night air; I was told also that a northerly wind will occasionally injure the animals here, no less than the land wind does now and then their brethren in India. About half the royal stud was present before me, the rest were out at grass; Feysul's entire muster is reckoned at six hundred, or rather more.

No Arab dreams of tying up a horse by the neck; a tether replaces the halter, and one of the animal's hind legs is encircled about the pastern by a light iron ring, furnished with a padlock, and connected with an iron chain of two feet or thereabouts in length, ending in a rope,

which is fastened to the ground at some distance by an iron peg; such is the customary method. But should the animal be restless and troublesome, a foreleg is put under similar restraint. It is well known that in Arabia horses are much less frequently vicious or refractory than in Europe, and this is the reason why geldings are here so rare, though not unknown. No particular prejudice, that I could discover, exists against the operation itself; only it is seldom performed, because not otherwise necessary, and tending, of course, to diminish the value of the animal.

But to return to the horses now before us: never had I seen or imagined so lovely a collection. Their stature was indeed somewhat low; I do not think that any came fully up to fifteen hands; fourteen appeared to me about their average, but they were so exquisitely well shaped that want of greater size seemed hardly, if at all, a defect. Remarkably full in the haunches, with a shoulder of a slope so elegant as to make one, in the words of an Arab poet, "go raving mad about it;" a little, a very little, saddle-backed, just the curve which indicates springiness without any weakness; a head broad above and tapering down to a nose fine enough to verify the phrase of "drinking from a pint-pot," did pint-pots exist in Nedjed; a most intelligent and yet a singularly gentle look, full eye, sharp thorn-like little ear, legs fore and hind that seemed as if made of hammered iron, so clean and yet so well twisted with sinew; a neat, round hoof, just the requisite for hard ground; the tail set on, or rather thrown out at a perfect arch; coats smooth, shining, and light, the mane long, but not overgrown nor heavy, and an air and step that seemed to say, "Look at me, am I not pretty?" their appearance justified all reputation, all value, all poetry.

The prevailing color was chestnut or gray; a light bay, an iron color, white or black, were less common; full bay,

flea-bitten or piebald, none. But if asked what are, after all, the specially distinctive points of the Nedjee horse, I should reply the slope of the shoulder, the extreme cleanness of the shank, and the full, rounded haunch, though every other part, too, has a perfection and a harmony unwitnessed (at least by my eyes) anywhere else.

Nedjee horses are especially esteemed for great speed and endurance of fatigue; indeed, in this latter quality, none come up to them. To pass twenty-four hours on the road without drink and without flagging is certainly something; but to keep up the same abstinence and labor conjoined under the burning Arabian sky for forty-eight hours at a stretch is, I believe, peculiar to the animals of the breed. Besides, they have a delicacy, I cannot say of mouth, for it is common to ride them without bit or bridle, but of feeling and obedience to the knee and thigh, to the slightest check of the halter and the voice of the rider, far surpassing whatever the most elaborate manège gives a European horse, though furnished with snaffle, curb, and all.

I often mounted them at the invitation of their owners, and without saddle, rein, or stirrup, set them off at full gallop, wheeled them round, brought them up in mid career at a dead halt, and that without the least difficulty or the smallest want of correspondence between the horse's movements and my own will; the rider on their back really feels himself the man-half of a centaur, not a distinct being.

[Eventually Palgrave's residence in Ri'ad grew perilous through the enmity of Abdallah, son of Feysul, the reigning monarch, for the reason that the physician refused to furnish him poison with which to dispose of his brother. It became necessary to escape secretly from the city.]

Our plan for the future was soon formed. A day or two we were yet to remain in Ri'ad, lest haste should seem to

imply fear, and thereby encourage pursuit. But during that period we would avoid the palace, out-walks in gardens or after nightfall, and keep at home as much as possible. Meanwhile, Aboo-'Eysa was to get his dromedaries ready, and put them in a court-yard immediately adjoining the house, to be laden at a moment's notice.

A band of travellers was to leave Ri'ad for Hasa a few days later. Aboo-'Eysa gave out publicly that he would accompany them to Hofhoof, while we were supposed to intend following the northern or Sedeyr track, by which the Na'ib, after many reciprocal farewells and assurances of lasting friendship, should we ever meet again, had lately departed. Mobeyreek, a black servant in Aboo-'Eysa's pay, occupied himself diligently in feeding up the camels for their long march with clover and vetches, both abundant here; and we continued our medical avocations, but quietly, and without much leaving the house.

During the afternoon of the 24th we brought three of Aboo-'Eysa's camels into our court-yard, shut the outer door, packed, and laded. We then awaited the moment of evening prayer; it came, and the voice of the Mu'eddineen summoned all good Wahabees, the men of the town-guard not excepted, to the different mosques. When about ten minutes had gone by, and all might be supposed at their prayers, we opened our door. Mobeyreek gave a glance up and down the street to ascertain that no one was in sight, and we led out the camels. Aboo-'Eysa accompanied us. Avoiding the larger thoroughfares, we took our way by by-lanes and side-passages towards a small town-gate, the nearest to our house, and opening on the north. A late comer fell in with us on his way to the Mesjid, and as he passed summoned us also to the public service. But Aboo-'Eysa unhesitatingly replied, "We have this moment come from prayers," and our interlocutor, fearing to be

himself too late and thus to fall under reprehension and punishment, rushed off to the nearest oratory, leaving the road clear. Nobody was in watch at the gate. We crossed its threshold, turned southeast, and under the rapid twilight reached a range of small hillocks, behind which we sheltered ourselves till the stars came out, and the "wing of night," to quote Arab poets, spread black over town and country.

[Aboo-'Eysa returned to the city, so as to escape suspicion of being involved in the flight, the travellers arranging to meet him, on his departure with the caravan, at a selected spot.]

After winding here and there, we reached the spot assigned by Aboo-'Eysa for our hiding-place. It was a small sandy depth, lying some way off the beaten track, amid hillocks and brushwood, and without water; of this latter article we had taken enough in the goat-skins to last us for three days. Here we halted, and made up our minds to patience and expectation.

Two days passed drearily enough. We could not but long for our guide's arrival, nor be wholly without fear on more than one score. Once or twice a stray peasant stumbled on us, and was much surprised at our encampment in so drougthy a locality. Sometimes leaving our dromedaries crouching down, and concealed among the shrubs, we wandered up the valley, climbed the high chalky cliffs of Toweyk, to gain a distant glimpse of the blue sierra of Hareek in the far south, and the white ranges of Toweyk north and east. Or we dodged the numerous nor over-shy herds of gazelles, not for any desire of catching them, but simply to pass the time and distract the mind weary of conjecture. So the hours went by, till the third day brought closer expectation and anxiety, still increasing while the sun declined, and at last went down;



yet nobody appeared. But just as darkness closed in, and we were sitting in a dispirited group beside our little fire, for the night air blew chill, Aboo-'Eysa came suddenly up, and all was changed for question and answer, for cheerfulness and laughter.

[There was no evidence of pursuit, and the fugitives reached the cultivated district of Hasa without molestation. We shall conclude with Palgrave's description of the Arabian women.]

My fair readers will be pleased to learn that the veil and other restraints inflicted on the gentle sex by Islamitic rigorism, not to say worse, are much less universal, and more easily dispensed with in Hasa; while in addition, the ladies of the land enjoy a remarkable share of those natural gifts which no institutions, and even no cosmetics, can confer,—namely, beauty of face and elegance of form. Might I venture on the delicate and somewhat invidious task of constructing a “beauty-scale” for Arabia, and for Arabia alone, the Bedouin women would, on this kalometer, be represented by zero, or at most  $1^{\circ}$ ; a degree higher would represent the female sex of Nedjed; above them rank the women of Shomer, who are in their turn surmounted by those of Djowf. The fifth or sixth degree symbolizes the fair ones of Hasa; the seventh those of Katar; and lastly, by a sudden rise of ten degrees at least, the seventeenth or eighteenth would denote the pre-eminent beauties of Oman.

Arab poets occasionally languish after the charmers of Hedjaz; I never saw any one to charm me, but then I only skirted the province. All bear witness to the absence of female loveliness in Yemen; and I should much doubt whether the mulatto races and dusky complexions of Hadramaut have much to vaunt of. But in Hasa a decided improvement on this important point is agreeably



evident to the traveller arriving from Nedjed, and he will be yet further delighted on finding his Calypsos much more conversible, and having much more, too, in their conversation than those he left behind him in Sedeyr and 'Aared.

---

## PILGRIMAGE TO MECCA AND MEDINA.

RICHARD F. BURTON.

[Captain Burton, whose discovery of the great lake Tanganyika, in Central Africa, we have elsewhere chronicled, preceded his African explorations by a daring and successful journey to Mecca and Medina in the disguise of a Moslem pilgrim. This journey took place forty years after that of Burckhardt,—elsewhere given,—but is told in more lively and graphic language, and supplies deficiencies in the older narrative. We therefore give some extracts from Burton's work. Burton studied the Mohammedan requisites thoroughly, joined a society of dervishes under the name of Shekh Abdullah, and professed to be an Afghan by birth. Thus prepared, he took passage from Suez for Djidda, the port of Mecca, July 1, 1853. His narrative continues as follows:]

IMMENSE was the confusion on the eventful day of our departure. Suppose us standing on the beach, on the morning of a fiery July day, carefully watching our hurriedly-packed goods and chattels, surrounded by a mob of idlers who are not too proud to pick up waifs and strays, while pilgrims rush about apparently mad, and friends are weeping, acquaintances vociferating adieux, boatmen demanding fees, shopmen claiming debts, women shrieking and talking with inconceivable power, children crying,—in short, for an hour or so we were in the thick of a human storm. To confound confusion, the boatmen have moored their skiff half a dozen yards away from the

shore, lest the porters should be unable to make more than double their fare from the pilgrims.

[While crossing to the Arabian shore, the pilgrims are accustomed to repeat the following prayer, which is a good example of Moslem invocation :]

O Allah, O Exalted, O Almighty, O All-pitiful, O All-powerful, thou art my God, and sufficeth to me the knowledge of it! Glorified be the Lord my Lord, and glorified be the faith my faith! Thou givest victory to whom thou pleasest, and thou art the glorious, the merciful! We pray thee for safety in our goings-forth and in our standings-still, in our words and our designs, in our dangers of temptation and doubts, and the secret designs of our hearts. Subject unto us this sea, even as thou didst subject the deep to Moses, and as thou didst subject the fire to Abraham, and as thou didst subject the iron to David, and as thou didst subject the wind, and the devils, and genii, and mankind to Solomon, and as thou didst subject the moon and El-Burak to Mohammed, upon whom be Allah's mercy and His blessing! And subject unto us all the seas in earth and heaven, in the visible and in thine invisible worlds, the sea of this life, and the sea of futurity. O thou who reignest over everything, and unto whom all things return, Khyar! Khyar'

[It was Burton's secret purpose to reach Mecca by way of Medina, and on reaching Yembo he joined the pilgrims bound for the latter city. The route lay over a desert region.]

We travelled through a country fantastic in its desolation,—a mass of huge hills, barren plains, and desert vales. Even the sturdy acacias here failed, and in some places the camel-grass could not find earth enough to take root in. The road wound among mountains, rocks, and hills of

granite, over broken ground, flanked by huge blocks and boulders, piled up as if man's art had aided nature to disfigure herself. Vast clefts seemed like scars on the hideous face of earth; here they widened into dark caves, there they were choked up with glistening drift sand. Not a bird or a beast was to be seen or heard; their presence would have argued the vicinity of water, and though my companions opined that Bedouins were lurking among the rocks, I decided that these Bedouins were the creatures of their fears. Above, a sky like polished blue steel, with a tremendous blaze of yellow light, glared upon us, without the thinnest veil of mist or cloud. The distant prospect, indeed, was more attractive than the near view, because it borrowed a bright azure tinge from the intervening atmosphere; but the jagged peaks and the perpendicular streaks of shadow down the flanks of the mountainous background showed that no change for the better was yet in store for us.

[After a deep rest from their fatigue they set out on the most dangerous portion of the route.]

We travelled that night up a dry river-course in an easterly direction, and at early dawn found ourselves in an ill-famed gorge, called *Shuab el-Hadj* (the "Pilgrim's Pass"). The loudest talkers became silent as we neared it, and their countenances showed apprehension written in legible characters. Presently, from the high, precipitous cliff on our left, thin blue curls of smoke—somehow or other they caught every eye—rose in the air, and instantly afterwards rang the loud, sharp cracks of the hill-men's matchlocks, echoed by the rocks on the right. My shugduf had been broken by the camel's falling during the night, so I called out to Mansúr that we had better splice the frame-work with a bit of rope; he looked up, saw me laughing, and with an ejaculation of disgust disappeared. A number of

Bedouins were to be seen swarming like hornets over the crests of the rocks, boys as well as men carrying huge weapons, and climbing with the agility of cats. They took up comfortable places in the cut-throat eminence, and began firing upon us with perfect convenience to themselves.

The height of the hills and the glare of the rising sun prevented my seeing objects very distinctly, but my companions pointed out to me places where the rock had been scarped and a kind of breastwork of rough stones—the Sangah of Afghanistan—piled up as a defence, and a rest for the long barrel of the matchlock. It was useless to challenge the Bedouins to come down and fight us upon the plain like men; and it was equally unprofitable for our escort to fire upon a foe ensconced behind stones. We had, therefore, nothing to do but to blaze away as much powder and to veil ourselves in as much smoke as possible; the result of the affair was that we lost twelve men, besides camels and other beasts of burden. Though the bandits showed no symptoms of bravery, and confined themselves to slaughtering the enemy from their hill-top, my companions seemed to consider this questionable affair a most gallant exploit.

[After two more days of severe travel they came in sight of the city of Medina.]

Half an hour after leaving the Wady el-Akik, or “Blessed Valley,” we came to a huge flight of steps, roughly cut in a long, broad line of black, scoriaceous basalt. This is called the *Mudarraj*, or flight of steps over the western ridge of the so-called El-Harratain; it is holy ground, for the Prophet spoke well of it. Arrived at the top, we passed through a lane of black scoria, with steep banks on both sides, and, after a few minutes, a full view of the city suddenly opened on us. We halted our beasts as if by

word of command. All of us descended, in imitation of the pious of old, and sat down, jaded and hungry as we were, to feast our eyes with a view of the Holy City. The prayer was, "O Allah! this is the *Haram* (sanctuary) of the Prophet; make it to us a protection from hell fire, and a refuge from eternal punishment! O, open the gates of thy mercy, and let us pass through them to the land of joy!"

As we looked eastward, the sun arose out of the horizon of low hills, blurred and dotted with small tufted trees, which gained a giant stature from the morning mists, and the earth was stained with gold and purple. Before us lay a spacious plain, bounded in front by the undulating ground of Nedjed; on the left was a grim barrier of rocks, the celebrated Mount Ohod, with a clump of verdure and a white dome or two nestling at its base. Rightward, broad streaks of lilac-colored mists were thick with gathered dew, there pierced and thinned by the morning rays, stretched over the date-groves and the gardens of Kuba, which stood out in emerald-green from the dull tawny surface of the plain. Below, at the distance of about two miles, lay El Medina; at first sight it appeared a large place, but a closer inspection proved the impression to be an erroneous one.

[Burton thus describes the Prophet's mosque:]

Passing through muddy streets—they had been freshly watered before evening-time—I came suddenly upon the mosque. Like that at Mecca, the approach is choked up by ignoble buildings, some actually touching the holy *enceinte*, others separated by a lane compared with which the road around St. Paul's is a Vatican square. There is no outer front, no general aspect of the Prophet's mosque; consequently, as a building it has neither beauty nor dignity. And entering the Bab el-Rahmah—the Gate of Pity

—by a diminutive flight of steps, I was astonished at the mean and tawdry appearance of a place so universally venerated in the Moslem world. It is not like the Meccan mosque, grand and simple, the expression of a single sublime idea; the longer I looked at it the more it suggested the resemblance of a museum of second-rate art, a curiosity-shop, full of ornaments that are not accessories, and decorated with pauper splendor.

[He thus describes his manner of spending the day while residing in Medina:]

At dawn we arose, washed, prayed, and broke our fast upon a crust of stale bread, before smoking a pipe and drinking a cup of coffee. Then it was time to dress, to mount, and to visit the Haram in one of the holy places outside the city. Returning before the sun became intolerable, we sat together, and with conversation, shishas and chibouques, coffee and cold water perfumed with mastich-smoke, we whiled away the time till our *ariston*, an early dinner which appeared at the primitive hour of eleven A.M. The meal was served in the *majlis* on a large copper tray, sent from the upper apartments. Ejaculating “Bismillah”—the Moslem grace—we all sat round it, and dipped equal hands in the dishes set before us. We had usually unleavened bread, different kinds of meat and vegetable stews, and at the end of the first course plain boiled rice, eaten with spoons; then came the fruits, fresh dates, grapes, and pomegranates.

After dinner I used invariably to find some excuse—such as the habit of a “Kaylulah” (mid-day siesta), or the being a “Saudawi” or person of melancholy temperament—to have a rug spread in the dark passage, and there to lie reading, dozing, smoking, or writing, all through the worst part of the day, from noon to sunset. Then came the hour

for receiving and paying visits. The evening prayers ensued, either at home or in the Haram, followed by our supper, another substantial meal like the dinner, but more plentiful of bread, meat, vegetables, rice, and fruits. In the evening we sometimes dressed in common clothes and went to the café; sometimes, on festive occasions, we indulged in a late supper of sweetmeats, pomegranates, and dried fruits. Usually we sat upon mattresses spread upon the ground in the open air at the Shekh's door, receiving evening visits, chatting, telling stories, and making merry, till each, as he felt the approach of the drowsy god, sank down into his proper place and fell asleep.

[The caravan from Damascus arriving, and starting soon after for Mecca, Burton and his companions joined it. The route taken was the short desert road, instead of the longer coast road. One day's experience will serve as an example.]

This day's march was peculiarly Arabia. It was a desert peopled only with echoes,—a place of death for what little there is to die in it,—a wilderness, where, to use my companion's phrase, there is nothing but He (Allah). Nature, scalped, flayed, discovered her anatomy to the gazer's eye. The horizon was a sea of mirage; gigantic sand-columns whirled over the plain; and on both sides of our road were huge piles of bare rock, standing detached upon the surface of sand and clay. Here they appeared in oval lumps, heaped up with a semblance of symmetry; there a single boulder stood, with its narrow foundation based upon a pedestal of low, dome-shaped rock. All are of a pink coarse-grained granite, which flakes off in large crusts under the influence of the atmosphere.

[A few days afterwards they were attacked by a fierce tribe of Bedouins, whom, however, they soon put to flight. Burton thus describes his part in the affray:]



At the beginning of the skirmish I had primed my pistols, and sat with them ready for use. But soon seeing that there was nothing to be done, and, wishing to make an impression, —nowhere does Bobadil now “go down” but in the East,— I called aloud for my supper. Shekh Nur, exanimate with fear, could not move. The boy Mohammed ejaculated only an “Oh, sir!” and the people around exclaimed in disgust, “By Allah! he eats!” Shekh Abdullah, the Meccan, being a man of spirit, was amused by the spectacle. “Are these Afghan manners, Effendim?” he inquired from the shugduf behind me. “Yes,” I replied aloud, “in my country we always dine before an attack of robbers, because that gentry is in the habit of sending men to bed supperless.” The Shekh laughed aloud, but those around him looked offended.

[After midnight of the next day they came within sight of Mecca. Burton was roused by a general excitement in the caravan. “Mecca! Mecca!” cried some voices; “The Sanctuary, O the Sanctuary!” exclaimed others, and all burst into loud cries of “*Labeyk!*” not unfrequently broken by sobs. A short distance farther, and they entered the northern suburb. After an hour or two of sleep they rose at dawn, in order to perform the ceremonies of arrival. After having bathed, they walked in their pilgrim garb to the *Beit Allah*, or “House of God.”]

There at last it lay, the bourne of my long and weary pilgrimage, realizing the plans and hopes of many and many a year. The mirage medium of fancy invested the huge catafalque and its gloomy pall with peculiar charms. There were no giant fragments of hoar antiquity as in Egypt, no remains of graceful and harmonious beauty as in Greece and Italy, no barbaric gorgeousness as in the buildings of India; yet the view was strange, unique, and how few have looked upon the celebrated shrine! I may truly say that, of all the worshippers who clung weeping



to the curtain, or who pressed their beating hearts to the stone, none felt for the moment a deeper emotion than did the Hadji from the far north. It was as if the poetical legends of the Arab spoke truth, and that the waving wings of angels, not the sweet breeze of morning, were agitating and swelling the black covering of the shrine. But, to confess humbling truth, theirs was the high feeling of religious enthusiasm, mine was the ecstacy of gratified pride.

[Burton's account of the visit to the famous Black Stone is curious and amusing.]

For a long time I stood looking in despair at the swarming crowd of Bedouin and other pilgrims that besieged it. But the boy Mohammed was equal to the occasion. During our circuit he had displayed a fiery zeal against heresy and schism, by foully abusing every Persian in his path; and the inopportune introduction of hard words into his prayers made the latter a strange patchwork. He might, for instance, be repeating "and I take refuge with thee from ignominy in this world," when, "O thou rejected one, son of the rejected!" would be the interpolation addressed to some long-bearded Khorasani,—“and in that to come—O hog and brother of a hoggess!” And so he continued till I wondered that no one dared to turn and rend him.

After vainly addressing the pilgrims, of whom nothing could be seen but a mosaic of occiputs and shoulder-blades, the boy Mohammed collected about half a dozen stalwart Meccans, with whose assistance, by sheer strength, we wedged our way into the thin and light-legged crowd. The Bedouins turned round upon us like wildcats, but they had no daggers. The season being autumn, they had not swelled themselves with milk for six months; and they had become such living mummies that I could

have managed single-handed half a dozen of them. After thus reaching the stone, despite popular indignation, testified by impatient shouts, we monopolized the use of it for at least ten minutes. Whilst kissing it and rubbing hands and forehead upon it I narrowly observed it, and came away persuaded that it is a big *aërolite*.

[On September 12 the pilgrims set out for Mount Arafat, passing the traditional tomb of Adam on their way. We have already given Burckhardt's description of the ceremonies here.]

Arafat is about a six hours' march, or twelve miles, on the Taif road, due east of Mecca. We arrived there in a shorter time, but our weary camels, during the last third of the way, frequently threw themselves upon the ground. Human beings suffered more. Between Muna and Arafat I saw no less than five men fall down and die upon the highway; exhausted and moribund, they had dragged themselves out to give up the ghost where it departs to instant beatitude. The spectacle showed how easy it is to die in these latitudes; each man suddenly staggered, fell as if shot, and, after a brief convulsion, lay still as marble. The corpses were carefully taken up, and carelessly buried that same evening, in a vacant space among the crowds encamped upon the Arafat plain.

Nothing can be more picturesque than the view the mountain affords of the blue peaks behind, and the vast encampment scattered over the barren yellow plain below. On the north lay the regularly pitched camp of the guards that defend the unarmed pilgrims. To the eastward was the Scherif's encampment with the bright mahmals and the gilt knobs of the grander pavilions; whilst, on the southern and western sides, the tents of the vulgar crowded the ground, disposed in dowars, or circles, for penning cattle.

After many calculations, I estimated the number to be not less than fifty thousand of all ages and sexes.

[After the sermon on Arafat, the ceremony of "stoning the Great Devil" is performed: The "Shaytan el-Kabir" is a dwarf buttress of rude masonry, about eight feet high by two and a half broad, placed against a rough wall of stones.]

As the ceremony of "Ramy," or Lapidation, must be performed on the first day by all pilgrims between sunrise and sunset, and as the fiend was malicious enough to appear in a rugged pass, the crowd makes the place dangerous. On one side of the road, which is not forty feet broad, stood a row of shops belonging principally to barbers. On the other side is the rugged wall of the pillar, with a *chevaux-de-frise* of Bedouins and naked boys. The narrow space was crowded with pilgrims, all struggling like drowning men to approach as near as possible to the Devil; it would have been easy to run over the heads of the mass. Among them were horsemen with rearing chargers. Bedouins on wild camels, and grandees on mules and asses, with outrunners, were breaking a way by assault and battery.

I had read Ali Bey's self-felicitations upon escaping this place with "only two wounds in the left leg," and had duly provided myself with a hidden dagger. The precaution was not useless. Scarcely had my donkey entered the crowd than he was overthrown by a dromedary, and I found myself under the stamping and roaring beast's stomach. By a judicious use of the knife I avoided being trampled upon, and lost no time in escaping from a place so ignobly dangerous. Finding an opening at last, we approached within about five cubits of the place, and holding each stone between the thumb and forefinger of the ring hand, cast it at the pillar, exclaiming, "In the name of

Allah, and Allah is Almighty, I do this in hatred of the Fiend and to his shame."

The seven stones being duly thrown, we retired, and, entering the barber's booth, took our places upon one of the earthen benches around it. This was the time to remove the *ihram*, or pilgrim's garb, and to return to *ihlal*, the normal state of El Islam. The barber shaved our heads, and, after trimming our beards and cutting our nails, made us repeat these words: "I purpose loosening my *ihram* according to the practice of the Prophet, whom may Allah bless and preserve! O Allah, make unto me in every hair, a light, a purity, and a generous reward! In the name of Allah, and Allah is Almighty!" At the conclusion of his labor the barber politely addressed to us a "Naiman,"—Pleasure to you! To which we as ceremoniously replied, "Allah give thee pleasure!"

[In conclusion we give Burton's description of a sermon in the great mosque of Mecca.]

After returning to the city from the sacrifice of sheep in the valley of Muna, we bathed, and when noon drew nigh we repaired to the Haram for the purpose of hearing the sermon. Descending to the cloisters below the Bab el-Ziyadah, I stood wonderstruck by the scene before me. The vast quadrangle was crowded with worshippers sitting in long rows, and everywhere facing the central black tower: the showy colors of their dresses were not to be surpassed by a garden of the most brilliant flowers, and such diversity of detail would probably not be seen massed together in any other building upon earth. The women, a dull and sombre-looking group, sat apart in their peculiar place. The Pasha stood on the roof of Zem Zem, surrounded by guards in Nizam uniform. Where the principal ulema stationed themselves the crowd was thicker;

and in the more auspicious spots naught was to be seen but a pavement of heads and shoulders.

Nothing seemed to move but a few dervishes, who, censer in hand, sidled through the rows and received the unsolicited alms of the faithful. Apparently in the midst, and raised above the crowd by the tall, pointed pulpit, whose gilt spire flamed in the sun, sat the preacher, an old man with snowy beard. The style of head-dress called *taylasan* covered his turban, which was white as his robes, and a short staff supported his left hand.

Presently he arose, took the staff in his right hand, pronounced a few inaudible words, and sat down again on one of the lower steps, whilst a Muezzin, at the foot of the pulpit, recited the call to sermon. Then the old man stood up and began to preach. As the majestic figure began to exert itself there was a deep silence. Presently a general "Amin" was intoned by the crowd at the conclusion of some long sentence. And at last, towards the end of the sermon, every third or fourth word was followed by the simultaneous rise and fall of thousands of voices.

I have seen the religious ceremonies of many lands, but never—nowhere—ought so solemn, so impressive, as this spectacle.

---

## A SHIPWRECK ON THE COAST OF OMAN.

WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE.

[We have already given two selections from the works of Palgrave, but cannot resist the desire to give a third, in view of the exciting interest of the conclusion of his story of Arabian travel, which came perilously near being cut short by death in the waters of the Arabian Sea. The narrative of the shipwreck and narrow escape which ended his journey is vividly told. It had been his purpose to complete his

journey by an exploration of the province of Oman, and for this purpose he took ship from the harbor of Sohar for Muscat, to avoid some nine days of land travel. What followed we give in his words.]

TOWARDS evening a light southwesterly breeze sprang up, and we spread our sails, hoping by their aid, though the wind was not precisely from the right quarter, to find our way, after some tacking and wearing, into Muscat harbor. But the breeze rapidly grew till it became a strong gale, and in half an hour's time it was a down-right storm, baffling all nautical manœuvres. One of our sails was blown to rags, the others were with difficulty got in, and when night closed we were driving under bare poles before a fierce southwester over a raging sea, while the sky, though unclouded, was veiled from view by a general haze, such as often accompanies a high storm. The passengers were frightened, but the sailors and I rather enjoyed the adventure, knowing that we were by this time far off the coast, clear of all rocks, and, in short, anticipating nothing worse than a day or two extra at sea before getting round to Muscat.

The moon rose—she was in her third quarter—and showed us a weltering waste of waters, where we were scudding entirely alone; some other vessels which had been in sight at sunset had now totally disappeared. The passengers, and Yoosef among the number, dismayed by the mad roll of the ship, no longer steadied by a stitch of canvas, by the dashing of the waves, and all the confusion of a storm, sat huddled below in the aft cabin, while the helmsman, the captain, and myself held on to the ropes of the quarter, and so kept our places as best we might; the Sonnees with the Nedjeans recited verses out of the Koran; the Omanee sailors laughed, or tried to laugh, for some of them, too, began to think the matter serious; no one,

however, anticipated the sudden catastrophe near at hand.

It may have been, to judge by the height of the moon above the horizon, about ten of the night, or a little earlier, when we remarked that the ship, instead of bounding and tossing over the waves as before, began to drive low in the water, with a heavy lurch of a peculiar character. One of the sailors approached the captain and whispered in his ear; in reply the captain directed them to sound the hold. Two men went to work, and found the lower part of the vessel full of water. Hastily they removed some side boardings, and saw a large stream pouring into the hole from sternwards; a plank had started.

The captain rose in despair full length, and called out, "Irmoo!" ("Throw overboard!"), hoping that lightening the ship of her cargo might yet save her. In a moment the hatchways amidships were removed, and all hands were busy to execute the last and desperate duty. But no more than three bales had been cast into the deep, when a ripple of blue, phosphoric light crossed the main-deck; the sea was already above board. No chance remained. "Ikhamoo!" ("Plunge for it!"), shouted the captain, and set the example by leaping himself amid the waves. All this passed in less than a minute; there was no time for deliberation, or attempt to save anything.

How to get clear of the whirl which must follow the ship's going down was my first thought. I clambered at once on the quarter-deck, which was yet some feet raised above the triumph of the lashing waves, invoked Him who can save by sea as well as by land, and dived head foremost as far as I could. After a few vigorous strokes out, I turned my face back towards the ship, whence a wail of despair had been the last sound I had heard.



Then I saw amid the raging waters the top of the mizzen-mast just before it disappeared below with a spiral movement, while I was yet looking at it. Six men—five passengers and one sailor—had gone down with the vessel. A minute later, and boards, mats, and spars were floating here and there amid the breakers, while the heads of the surviving swimmers now showed themselves, now disappeared, in the moongleam and shadow.

So rapidly had all this taken place that I had not a moment for so much as to throw off a single article of dress; though the buffeting of the waves soon eased me of turban and girdle. Nor had I even leisure for a thought of deliberate fear; though I confess that an indescribable thrill of horror, which had come over me when the blue glimmer of the water first rippled over the deck, though scarce noticed at the time, haunted me for months after. But at the actual moment, the struggle for life left no freedom for backward-looking considerations, and I was already making for a piece of timber that floated not far off, when, on looking around more carefully, I descried at some distance the ship's boat; she had been dragged after us thus far at a long tow, Arab fashion, though who had cut her rope before the ship foundered was what no one of us could ever discover. She had now drifted some sixty yards off, and was dancing like an empty nut-shell on the ocean.

Being, like the Spanish sailors in "*Don Juan*," well aware "That a tight boat will live in a rough sea, Unless with breakers close beneath her lee," I gave up the plank, and struck out for the new hope of safety. By the time I had reached her, three of the crew had already established themselves there before me; they lent me a hand to clamber in; others now came up, and before long nine men, besides the lad, nephew of the captain, were in her, closely packed. So soon as I found myself in this ark of respite,



though not of safety, I bethought me of Yoosef, whom I had not seen since the moment of our wreck. He was not along with us; but while, scarce hoping, I shouted out his name over the waters to give him a chance of a signal, "Here I am, master, God be praised!" answered the dripping head; and we hauled him in to take his fortune with the rest.

We were now twelve,—namely, the captain, his nephew, the pilot, and four of the crew; the remaining five consisted of one of the passengers from 'Okdah,—for the other had gone down in the ship,—the runaway scapegrace of Manfoohah, and a native of Soroeyk, besides Yoosef and myself. Three others at this moment came swimming up, and wished to enter, but the boat, calculated to contain eight or nine at most, was already overloaded, especially for so mad a sea, and to admit a new burden was out of the question. However, the poor fellows got hold of a spare yard-arm, which had floated up from the sunken vessel. This we made fast to the boat's stern by a rope, and thus took the three in tow clinging to it, two passengers and a sailor.

Four oars were stowed in the boat, and her rudder, unshipped, lay in the bottom, along with a small iron anchor and an extra plank or two. The anchor was without delay heaved overboard by the pilot and myself as a superfluous weight, and so were the planks. Meanwhile, some of the sailors prepared to do as much for the passengers, observing, not without a certain show of reason on their side, that with so many on board, there could be remarkably little hope of ever reaching shore; that the boat was after all the sailors' right, and the rest might manage on the beam astern as best they could.

Fortunately, during the voyage I had become a particular friend of the captain and pilot, besides earning the special

good-will of a merry, sturdy young seaman now in the boat. So I addressed myself to them first, and then to all the crew, and declared the expulsory proposition to be utterly unjust, wicked, and not fit for discussion, and then, to cut short reply, I proceeded, aided by the pilot, who seconded me manfully throughout, to distribute the oars among the sailors; as indeed it was high time to do, in order to steady the boat, over which every wave now broke, threatening to send us to the bottom after her old companion. The captain took post at the rudder, while the pilot and myself set to bailing out the water partly with a leathern bucket which one of the crew had kept the presence of mind to bring with him from the ship (holding the handle between his teeth no less cleverly than Cæsar did his sword off the Alexandrian Pharos), and partly with a large scoop belonging to the boat; both implements were in constant requisition, since every bucketful or scoopful of water thrown out was by the next wave repaid with usury, so fiercely did the storm rage around.

The Sonnee of Djebel'Okdah sat up in the boat repeating verses of the Koran; the captain's nephew showed extraordinary spirit for a boy of his age; the sailors managed their oars with much skill and courage, keeping us carefully athwart the roll of the sea; the rest, and I am sorry to say Yoosef for one, were so terribly frightened that they had completely lost their wits, and lay like dead men amid the water in the boat's bottom, neither raising a head nor saying a word.

Indeed, our position, though not wholly without a gleam of hope, seemed very nearly desperate. We were in an open, overloaded boat, her movements yet further embarrassed by the beam in tow, far out at sea,—so far as to be quite beyond view of the coast, though the high shore hereabouts can be seen at a long distance, even by moon-

light,—with a howling wind, every moment on the increase, and tearing waves like huge monsters coming on as though with purpose to swallow us up. What reasonable chance had we of ever reaching land? All depended on the steerage and on the balance and support afforded by the oars; and even more still on the providence of Him who made the deep; nor indeed could I get myself to think that He had brought me thus far to let me drown, just at the end of my journey, and in so very unsatisfactory a way, too; for had we then gone down, what news of the events off Sowadah would ever have reached home? Or when? So that, altogether, I felt confident of getting somehow or another on shore, though by what means I did not exactly know.

The Mahometans on board (they were two)—so at least, poor fellows, their demeanor seemed to show—prayed as best they might; the Biadeeyah mostly kept silence, or exchanged a few words relative to the management of the boat, while the young sailor already mentioned cracked jokes as coolly as though he had been in his cottage on shore, making the rest laugh in spite of themselves, and thus keeping up their spirits,—the best thing just then to be done, for to lose heart would have been to lose all.

From an idea that so learned a man (in Arab estimation) as I ought, among other acquirements, to be better acquainted with the chart than any one else, and perhaps, too, because I seemed to be less thrown out of my reckonings than most of our party, all referred to me for the direction of our hazardous course. By the stars, a few of which were dimly visible between mist and moonlight, I guessed the whereabouts of shore. It lay almost due south; but the hurricane had now veered and blew from between west and north; hence we were obliged to follow a southeasterly line, in order to avoid the sudden destruction of giving a broadside to the waves. Once sure of this

point, I made the men keep our boat's head steady on the tack just explained, and for a long hour we pulled on, baling out the water every moment, and encouraging each other to keep up good heart; that land could not be far off. At last I saw, by the milky moonlight, a rock which I remembered sighting on the previous afternoon; it was the Rock of Djeyn, an outlying point of the Sowadah group, and now at some distance on our leeboard. "Courage!" I cried out, "there is Djeyn." "Say it again, say it again; God bless you!" they all exclaimed, as though the repetition of the good news would make it of yet better augury; but I perceived that none of them had his senses enough about him to see the black peak, which now loomed distant over the sea. "Is it near?" asked he of Djebel-'Okdah. "Close by," I answered, with a slight inaccuracy, which the duty of cheering the crew might, I hope, excuse. "Pull away, we shall soon pass it." But in my own individual thought I much doubted the while whether we ever should, so rapidly did the boat fill from the spray around, while a moment's mis-steerage would have sent us all to the bottom.

Another hour of struggle; it was past midnight or thereabouts, and the storm, instead of abating, blew stronger and stronger. A passenger, one of the three on the beam astern, felt too numb and wearied out to retain his hold by the spar any longer; he left it and, swimming with a desperate effort up to the boat, begged in God's name to be taken in. Some were for granting his request, others for denying; at last two sailors, moved with pity, laid hold of his arms where he clung to the boat's side and helped him in. We were now thirteen together, and the boat rode lower down in the water, and with more danger than ever; it was literally a hand's breadth between life and death.

Soon after, another, Ibraheem by name, and also a passenger, made a similar attempt to gain admittance. To comply would have been sheer madness, but the poor wretch clung to the gunwale and struggled to clamber over, till the nearest of the crew, after vainly entreating him to quit hold and return to the beam, saying, "It is your only chance of life, you must keep to it," loosened his grasp by main force, and flung him back into the sea, where he disappeared forever. "Has Ibraheem reached you?" called out the captain to the sailor now alone astride of the spar. "Ibraheem is drowned," came the answer across the waves. "Is drowned," all repeated in an undertone, adding, "and we, too, shall soon be drowned also." For, in fact, such seemed the only probable end of all our endeavors. For the storm redoubled in violence; the baling could no longer keep up with the rate at which the waves entered; the boat became waterlogged; the water poured in, hissing, on every side; she was sinking, and we were yet far out in the open sea.

"Ikhamool!" ("Plunge for it!") a second time shouted the captain. "Plunge who may, I will stay by the boat so long as she stays by me," thought I, and kept my place. Yoosef, fortunately for him, was lying like a corpse, past fear or motion; but four of our party, one a sailor, the other three passengers, thinking that all hope of the boat was now over, and that nothing remained them but the spar, or Heaven knows what, jumped into the sea. Their loss saved the remainder; the boat lightened and righted for a moment; the pilot and I baled away desperately; she rose clear once more of the water; those in her were now nine in all,—eight men and a boy, the captain's nephew.

Meanwhile, the sea was running mountains, and during the paroxysm of struggle, while the boat pitched heavily, the cord attached from her stern to the beam snapped

asunder. One man was on the spar; yet a minute or so the moonlight showed us the head of the five swimmers as they strove to regain the boat. Had they done it we were all lost; then a huge wave separated them from us. "May God have mercy on the poor drowning men!" exclaimed the captain. Their bodies were washed ashore off Seeb three or four days later. We now remained sole survivors, if indeed we were to prove so.

Our men rowed hard, and the night wore on; at last the coast came in full view. Before us was a high black rock jutting out into the foaming sea, whence it rose sheer, like the wall of a fortress; at some distance on the left a peculiar glimmer and a long white line of breakers assured me of the existence of an even and sandy beach. The three sailors now at the oars, and the man of 'Okdah, who had taken the place of the fourth, grown reckless by long toil under the momentary expectation of death, and longing to see an end anyhow to this protracted misery, were for pushing the boat on the rocks, because the nearest land, and thus having it all over as soon as possible. This would have been certain destruction. The captain and pilot, well-nigh stupefied by what they had undergone, offered no opposition. I saw that a vigorous effort must be made, so I laid hold of them both, shook them to arouse their attention, and bade them take heed to what the rowers were about, adding that it was sheer suicide, and that our only hope of life was to bear up for the sandy creek, which I pointed out to them at a short distance.

Thus awakened from their lethargy, they started up and joined me in expostulating with the sailors. But the men doggedly answered that they could hold out no more; that whatever land was nearest they would make for it, come what might, and with this they pulled on straight towards the cliff.



The captain hastily thrust the rudder into the pilot's hand, and springing on one of the sailors, pushed him from the bench and seized his oar, while I did the same to another on the opposite side, and we now got the boat's head round towards the bay. The refractory sailors, ashamed of their own faintheartedness, begged pardon, and promised to act henceforth according to our orders. We gave them back their oars, very glad to see a strife so dangerous, especially at such a moment, soon at an end, and the men pulled for the left, though full half an hour's rowing yet remained between us and the breakers, and the course which we had to hold was more hazardous than before, because it laid the boat almost parallel with the sweep of the water. But half an hour, yet I thought we should never come opposite the desired spot.

At last we neared it, and then a new danger appeared. The first row of breakers, rolling like a cataract, was still far off shore, at least a hundred yards, and between it and the beach appeared a white yeast of raging waters, evidently ten or twelve feet deep, through which, weary as we all were, and benumbed with the night chill and the unceasing splash of the spray over us, I felt it to be very doubtful whether we should have strength to struggle. But there was no avoiding it, and when we drew near the long white line, which glittered like a witchfire in the night, I called out to Yoosef and the lad, both of whom lay plunged in death-like stupor, to rise and get ready for the hard swim now inevitable. They stood up, the sailors laid aside their oars, and a moment after the curling wave capsized the boat, and sent her down as though she had been struck by a cannon-shot, while we remained to fight for our lives in the sea.

Confident in my own swimming powers, but doubtful how far those of Yoosef might reach, I at once turned to

look for him, and, seeing him close by me in the water, I caught hold of him, telling him to hold fast and I would help him to land. But with much presence of mind he thrust back my grasp, exclaiming, "Save yourself, I am a good swimmer, never fear for me!" The captain and the young sailor laid hold of the boy, the captain's nephew, one on either side, and struck out with him for the shore. It was a desperate effort; every wave overwhelmed us in its burst and carried us back in its eddy, while I drank much more salt water than was at all desirable. At last, after some minutes long as hours, I touched land, and scrambled up the sandy beach as though the avenger of blood had been behind me. One by one the rest came ashore,—some stark naked, having cast off or lost their remaining clothes in the whirling eddies; others yet retaining some part of their dress. Every one looked around to see whether his companions arrived, and when all nine stood together on the beach, all cast themselves prostrate on the sands to thank Heaven for a new lease of life granted after much danger and so many comrades lost.

Then rising, they ran to embrace each other, laughed, cried, sobbed, danced. I never saw men so completely unnerved as they on this first moment of sudden safety. One grasped the ground with his hands, crying out, "Is this really land we are on?" Another said, "And where are our companions?" A third, "God have mercy on the dead; let us now thank Him for our own lives!" A fourth stood bewildered; all their long and hard-stretched self-possession gave way. Yoosef had lost his last rag of dress; I had, fortunately, yet on two long shirts (one is still by me) reaching down to the feet, Arab fashion. I now gave my companion one, keeping the other for myself; my red skull-cap had also held firm on my head, so that I was as well off or better than any. "We may count



this day for the day of our birth; it is a new life after death," said the young Omancee sailor. "There have been others praying for us at home, and for their sake God has saved us," added the pilot, thinking of his family and children. "True; and more so, perhaps, than you know of," replied I, remembering some yet farther distant.

While we were thus conversing, and beginning to look around and wonder on what part of the coast we had landed, the distant sound of a gun was heard on the right. "That must be the morning gun of Seeb," said the captain. Seeb, being a fortified town, and often a royal residence, has the privilege of a garrison and artillery; now, from the whereabouts of our wreck, opposite Sowadah, we could not be very far thence. We were yet discussing this point, when another gun made itself heard from inland. "That must be from the palace at Bathat-Farzah" (the valley of Farzah), said another. "Thoweynee is certainly there, for the palace guns never fire except when the Sultan is in residence with his court."

It was now the first glimmer of doubtful dawn, and the wind sweeping furiously along the beach rendered some shelter necessary; for we were dripping and chilled to the bone. So we crept to leeward of a cluster of bushes, and there each dug out for himself a long trench in the sand; and after having thus put ourselves in some degree under cover, we waited for the morning, which seemed as though it would never come. At last the moonlight faded away, and the sun rose, though his rays did not reach us quite so soon as we should have desired, for the creek where we had landed was bordered on either side by high hills, shutting out the horizon. These hills ended in precipices towards the sea; on the left was the very rock on which the despairing impatience of the crew had almost driven us the night before; it looked

horrible. The wind yet blew high, and we were shivering with cold in our scanty clothing. Those who, like myself, had come on shore with more than what was absolutely necessary for decency, had shared it with those who had nothing.

When the sunbeams at last struck over the hill-side on the right, we hastened to warm ourselves and to dry our apparel,—a task speedily performed with so slender a wardrobe. Next we reconnoitred the position, with which some of the crew found themselves to be not wholly unacquainted. It was a little to the east of Seeb; but between us and that town was a high and broad range of rocks, on which our naked feet had no great disposition to venture; on the west we were hemmed in by a corresponding barrier. But landwards the valley ran up sandy between the hills, and in that direction appeared an easier path, leading ultimately, so the sailors averred, to the Sultan's country palace,—the same whence we had heard the night gun, nor could it be very far off. Once at the palace, all reckoned on the well-known liberality of Thoweynee for obtaining assistance.

Thither we resolved to go; yet before setting out we turned back to look once more on the sea, still raging in mad fury. Not a trace of our saviour boat appeared, not a sail in sight, though the day before (a day that now seemed a year ago) there had been many. Ten large vessels, part belonging to the Persian coast, part to the Omanee, had gone down besides our own, close to the Sowadah rocks, that very night; three, as I afterwards learned, perished with every soul on board; from one alone the entire crew escaped; the rest lost, some more, some less; we had, at any rate, companions in misfortune. Gazing on the ocean, every one made aloud the ordinary resolution of shipwrecked sailors never to attempt the faithless element

again; a resolution kept, I doubt not, as steadily as most such,—that is, for a fortnight or three weeks.

[It will suffice to say, in conclusion, that the shipwrecked party were hospitably received by the Sultan, but that Palgrave was attacked by typhus fever, and forced to give up his projected journey through Oman. On his recovery he returned to Syria, whence he had set out.]

---

## JERUSALEM, THE HOLY CITY.

ELIOT WARBURTON.

[A record of travels would be highly incomplete were there not included a description of Jerusalem, that city to which the feet of pilgrims have been for ages turned, and around which the thoughts of so many "true believers" cluster. Yet in selecting such a description we suffer from an embarrassment of riches. It has been so abundantly described that choice becomes very difficult, particularly as we are obliged to tell the story in fair completeness within the brief space we can devote to it. The selection given is from Eliot Warburton's "*The Crescent and the Cross*," the work of a distinguished writer, and which has been very popular. The writer was born in Ireland in 1810, and lost his life in the wreck of the ship "*Amazon*" in 1852. He was the author of various works of history, biography, and fiction. Our account begins where the travellers approached Jerusalem, coming from Jaffa.]

HENCEFORTH our path necessitated one perpetual climb, scramble, or slide: slippery rocks, yawning into deep fissures, or so round and smooth as to render firm footing impossible, constituted the only road. Yet this has been, for four thousand years, the highway between Jerusalem and the western plains that border on the sea. Chariots never could have been used here, and it would be impossible for cavalry to act, or even to advance against a

hostile force. The scenery resembled that of the wildest glens of Scotland, only that here the gray crags were thickly tufted with aromatic shrubs, and instead of the pine, the sycamore, the olive, and the palm shaded the mountain's side.

We passed by the village of Jeremiah and the "Terebinthine Vale." In the last we recognize the scene of David's combat with Goliath, and its little brook still sparkles here as freshly as when he picked thence pebbles to smite the Philistine. Generally speaking the river-beds were as dry as the path we trod, and this was the only stream but one that I saw between Jaffa and the Jordan. A large caravan was assembled on its banks, with all its picturesque variety of laden camels, mules with gay trappings, mountain cavaliers with turban and embroidered vests, veiled women on donkeys, half-naked Arabs with long spears, dwellers in cities with dark kaftan or furred pelisse. All, however various their nation, profession, or appearance, were eagerly quaffing the precious stream or waiting under "the shadow of a high rock" for the caravan to proceed.

The hills became more and more precipitous as we approached Jerusalem; most of them were of a conical form, and terraced to their summit. Yet on these steep acclivities the strenuous labor of the Israelite had formerly grown corn, wine, and oil; and, on the terraces that remained uninjured, the few present inhabitants still plant wheat, and vineyards, and olive-groves. There was no appearance of water, except the inference that might be drawn of wells within the few villages that hung on the mountain's side.

The pathway continued as rough as ever, while we wound through the rocky defiles leading to the upper plains; but it was much more frequented, and I had joined a large and various company for the sake of listening to

their talk about the city that now absorbed every other interest. At each acclivity we surmounted we were told that the next would reveal to us the object of our destination; and at length, as we emerged upon a wide and sterile plain, the leading pilgrims sank upon their knees, the most contagious shout of enthusiasm I ever heard burst from each traveller, and every man of that large company—Arab, Italian, Greek, and Englishman—exclaimed, each in his own tongue, “El Khuds!” “Gerusalemma!” “Ili-giopolis!” “The Holy City!”

It was, indeed, Jerusalem; and had the Holy City risen before us in its palmiest days of magnificence and glory, it could not have created deeper emotion, or been gazed at more earnestly and with intenser interest. . . .

Apart from all associations, the first view of Jerusalem is a most striking one. A brilliant and uncheckered sunshine has something mournful in it when all that it shines upon is utterly desolate and drear. Not a tree or green spot is visible; no sign of life breaks the solemn silence; no smile of nature's gladness ever varies the stern scenery around. The flaming, monotonous sunshine above, and the pale, distorted, rocky wastes beneath realize but too faithfully the prophetic picture, “Thy sky shall be brass and thy land shall be iron.” To the right and left, as far as the eye can reach, vague undulations of colorless rocks extend to the horizon. A broken and desolate plain in front is bounded by a wavy, battlemented wall, over which towers frown, and minarets peer, and mosque domes swell, intermingled with church turrets and an indistinguishable mass of terraced roofs. High over the city, to the left, rises the Mount of Olives; and the distant hills of Moab, almost mingling with the sky, afford a background to the striking picture. . . .

I had always pictured to myself Jerusalem as standing

upon lofty hills and visible from afar. It is, on the contrary, on the edge of the wide platform by which we approached from Jaffa, and is commanded by the Mount of Olives, the Hill of Scopas, and other eminences, from which it is divided by the deep and narrow ravines called the Valley of Jehosaphat and the Vale of Hinnom. These ravines meet in the form of a Y, the lower part of which describes the precipitous glen through which the brook Kedron flows in winter to the Dead Sea.

The site of the city is in itself unique. Selected originally from the strength of its position only, it offers none of the features usually to be found surrounding the metropolis of a powerful people. No river nor any stream flows by it; no fertility surrounds it; no commerce seems able to approach its walls; no thoroughfare of nations finds it in the way. It seems to stand apart from the world, exempt from its passions, its ambitions, and even its prosperity. Like the high-priest who once ministered in its temple, it stands solitary and removed from all secular influences, and receives only those who come to worship at its mysteries. All the other cities of the earth are frequented by votaries of gain, science, luxury, or glory; Zion offers only privations to the pilgrim's body, solemn reflections for his thoughts, awe for his soul; her palaces are ruins, her hostels are dreary convents, her chief boast and triumph is a Tomb.

[Entering Jerusalem, our traveller found quarters for the night in the Latin convent of the Terra Santa, the richest and most influential in Palestine. He afterwards removed to a private house, under a host whom he humorously depicts.]

The greater part of the time I passed at Jerusalem I was as solitary as in the desert. In the cool of the evening I used to ride up the Mount of Olives, or explore the

glens and caverns, once the refuge places of the Prophets, now the resort of robbers and outlaws. If I had been reconnoitring for Titus I could not have made myself more familiar with every feature of the doomed city than solitude and curiosity conspired to make me during those frequent rambles. Towards noon I was driven by the heat to take shelter in my apartments, which I shall describe, as affording a specimen of the houses of Jerusalem. I passed only one night in the dreary hospice of the Terra Santa, and the next evening found myself, on my return from a distant ride, the tenant of Abou Habib, in the Via Dolorosa.

He was a portly old Christian, very like Lablache in the garb of Figaro, but that a long robe of brown silk enveloped his person, and a capacious turban his broad brow. He could speak but few words of Italian, and the gesticulations with which he endeavored to express some difficult emotion in Arabic were irresistibly ludicrous. He piqued himself on his cookery, and was continually inventing some new abomination of grease and rice to tempt my appetite. There was a hospitality about the old fellow, notwithstanding his reputed avaricious propensities, that prevented me from ever scrutinizing his bills. If he made the most of his guests in one respect, he also did it in every other.

My servant was quite superseded in the culinary department. As soon as I rose in the morning it was Abou Habib who presented my coffee; when I came in from riding, pipe and coffee were handed by Abou Habib; and in a few moments rissoles in vine-leaves, or pieces of pilan in cucumbers, with a broiled fowl and a flask of *Vino d'Oro*, were presented by Abou Habib. If I clapped my hands throughout the day, the same portly figure presented itself; if I fell asleep on the divan, I found him fanning



away the flies ; at dinner he was at once cook and butler ; in the evening he was killing chickens while he whistled a tune, or plucking them as he chanted some unintelligible old song ; he even climbed the housetop to offer my pipe, and at length actually took to grooming my horses.

The entrance to this house of hospitality was by a narrow flight of stone steps leading out of the *Via Dolorosa* ; a door opened thence into a court-yard, where my horses were stabled in an enclosure and picketed to the wall by the fetlock ; a corridor, in which there were doors leading to a kitchen on one side and sleeping-rooms on the other, connected this outer with an inner court, shaded by a few lemon- and cypress-trees. In this were my apartments, consisting of a sleeping-room and a large wainscoted chamber, surrounded with a divan and diversified with a variety of shelves, presses, and cupboards. Opposite were the sleeping-apartments of my host, his buxom wife, and her blooming sister. These women seemed to lead a life of perfect idleness, for the indefatigable *Abou Habib* was all in all, and monopolized all the offices of the establishment, even to dressing, in more senses than one, a young son of his who was the plague of the household.

My host was civil and humble, even to servility ; but the female members of his family appeared to be as free from constraint as they were from forwardness. During a short but severe illness they attended me with the greatest kindness, and afterwards gave me lessons in Arabic, and folding turbans, and other Eastern accomplishments. . . . It was pleasant, when evening fell, as I lay on the divan and looked upon the clear, bright sky, against which the cypresses trembled in the night breeze, to hear the low, sweet, plaintive voices in which these Eastern women sang the songs of their historic land. *Hebron* was their native



place, and they were Christians, though they had never heard of the Bible, but the name of the Koran was familiar to them.

Their dress in the house consisted of a close-fitting tunic, buttoned from beneath the bosom for some distance down, thence open to allow free motion to their limbs, that were clothed with very full, loose trousers, tied at the ankle, and falling over the slippered foot. The bosom was generally open, or but partly enclosed by the crape garment within; a light turban or a handkerchief of Damascus silk covered the head, from which the rich hair flowed free, or was plaited into two long braids. In the streets the Christian women wear the *yashmak*, or veil, across the face, as the Moslems do, but in the house it is entirely laid aside. The women of all religions pass much of their time on the house-tops, peeping through the circular tiles that are built into a wall so as to admit the air yet conceal the inhabitants of each roof.

[From this digression concerning private life in Jerusalem we return to our traveller's description of the city.]

I rode forth to make a circuit of the city, "to walk round about her and mark well her battlements." Sadly has all changed since this proud challenge was spoken, yet the walls are still towering and imposing in their effect. They vary in height from twenty to sixty feet, according to the undulations of the ground, and are everywhere in good repair. The columns and architraves, as old at least as the Roman-conquered city, that are worked into these walls instead of ruder stones, bear eloquent testimony to the different nature of their predecessors. A bridle-path leads close to their base all round; the valleys of Hinnom and Jehosaphat yawn suddenly beneath them on the west, south, and north, separating them from

Mount Gihon, the Hill of Evil Counsel, and the Mount of Olives.

These hills are utterly barren, and lonely as fear can make them. Though within gunshot of the city, robberies are here committed with impunity, and few people venture to leave the walls without being well armed and attended. The deep gloom of the Valley of Hinnom; the sterility of all around; the silence and desolation so intense, yet so close to the city; the sort of memory with which I could trace each almost familiar spot, from the Tower of Hippicus to the Hill of Scopas, made this the most interesting excursion I ever undertook. Now we look down upon the Pool and Valley of Gihon from the summit of Mount Zion; now upon the Vale of Hinnom, with the Pool of Siloam, and Aceldama beyond the brook; now over Mount Moriah, with the Valley of Jehosaphat beneath, and the village of Siloam on the opposite side, scattered along the banks where Kedron used to flow. Then, passing through the Turkish cemetery and over the brook Kedron, we come to the venerable garden of Gethsemane, in which, say the legends, still stand the olive-trees that sheltered Christ.

This garden is only a small grove, occupying perhaps two acres of ground, but it is one of the best authenticated scenes of interest about Jerusalem. From it a steep and rocky path leads to the three summits of the Mount of Olives, on the loftiest of which stands the Church of the Ascension. An Armenian priest admitted me into the sacred enclosure, motioned to a little monk to lead about my horse, and led the way in silence to the roof of the church. From hence is the most interesting, if not the most striking, view in the world.

From such a summit might the great leader of the people have viewed the land, which was to be the reward of their desert wanderings. From it is laid bare every

fibre of the great heart of Palestine. The atmosphere is like a crystal lens, and every object in the Holy City is as clear as if it lay within a few yards, instead of a mile's distance. Each battlement upon those war-worn walls, each wild flower that clusters over them; the dogs prowling about the waste places among the ruins and cactus and cypress; the turbaned citizen slowly moving in the streets; all these are recognizable almost as clearly as the prominent features of the city.

The eminence called Mount Moriah lies nearest to our view, just above the narrow Valley of Jehosaphat. The city wall passes over the centre of it, embracing a wide enclosure, studded with cypresses and cedars, in the centre of which stands the magnificent Mosque of Omar. This is of a very light, fantastic architecture, bristling with points, and little spires, and minarets, many of which have gilded crescents that flash and gleam in the sunshine; while the various groups of Moslems, seated on bright carpets, or slowly wandering among the groves, give life and animation to the scene.

The mosque occupies the site of the Temple, and is held holy by the Moslem as the place where Abraham offered Isaac to be a sacrifice. To the left of the mosque enclosure within the walls is a space covered with rubbish and jungles of the prickly pear; then part of the Hill of Zion, and David's Tower. To the right of the enclosure is the Pool of Bethesda, beyond which St. Stephen's Gate affords entrance to the Via Dolorosa, a steep and winding street, along which Christ bore the Cross in his ascent to Calvary. To the right of the street, and towards the north, stands the hill of Aera, on which Salem, the most ancient part of the city, was built, they say, by Melchisedek. This hill is enclosed by the walls of the modern town; but the hill of Bezetha lies yet farther to the

right, and was enclosed within the walls that the Romans stormed. Beyond Bezetha stands the Hill of Scopas, wherefrom Titus gazed upon Jerusalem the day before its destruction, and wept for the sake of the beautiful city. . . .

Beneath us is the Garden of Gethsemane, the Valley of Hinnom with its Tophet, and the Vale of Jehosaphat with its brook Kedron, which meets the waters of Siloam at the Well of Job. The Tombs of the Kings, of Nehemiah, of Absalom, and of the Judges, lie before us; the caves of the Prophets everywhere pierce the rocks, that have so often resounded to the war-cry of the Chaldean, the Roman, the Saracen, and the Crusader. Beyond the city spreads the Vale of Rephaim, with Bethlehem in the distance; every rock, and hill, and valley that is visible bears some name that has rung in history. And then the utter desolation that everywhere prevails,—as if it was all over with that land, and the “rocks had indeed fallen, and the hills indeed had covered” the mighty, the beautiful, and the brave, who once dwelt there in prosperity and peace. No flocks, no husbandmen, nor any living thing is there, except a group of timid travellers—turbaned figures, and veiled women, and a file of camels—winding along the precipitous pathway under the shadow of the palm-tree.

Descending from the Mount of Olives, I re-entered the city by St. Stephen's Gate, where Turkish soldiers constantly keep guard; turning to the left, I visited the Pool of Bethesda, and then wandered slowly over the Via Dolorosa, in which is pointed out each spot where the Saviour fell under the burden of the Cross, as he bore it to Calvary along this steep and rugged way.

In after-days I impatiently traversed the squalid city, with a monk for my guide, in search of its various localities of traditionary sanctity; but I will not ask the reader to stoop to such a labor. My monkish cicerone pointed out

to me where Dives lived, where Lazarus lay, where the cock crowed or roosted that warned Peter of his crime, and even where the blessed Virgin used to wash her son's linen. It is difficult to speak of such things gravely, and yet I would not have one light feeling or expression intermingled with the solemn subjects of which this chapter attempts to treat. . . .

The character of the city within corresponds with that of the country without. Most of it is very solitary and silent; echo only answers to your horse's tread; and frequent waste places, among which the wild dog prowls, convey an indescribable impression of desolation. It is not those waste places alone that give such an air of loneliness to the city, but many of the streets themselves, dark, dull, and mournful-looking, seem as if the Templars' armed tread was the last to which they had resounded. The bazaars and places of business are confined to one small quarter of the city; everywhere else you generally find yourself alone. No one is even there to point out your way; and you come unexpectedly upon the Pool of Bethesda, or wander among the vaulted ruins of the Hospitalers' courts, without knowing it.

The remains of the ancient city that meet your eye are singularly few; here and there a column is let into the wall, or you find that the massive and uneven pavement is of costly marble; but, except the Pools of Hezekiah and Bethesda, the Tower of Hippicus, and some few other remains, preserved on account of their utility, there is little of art to connect the memory with the past.

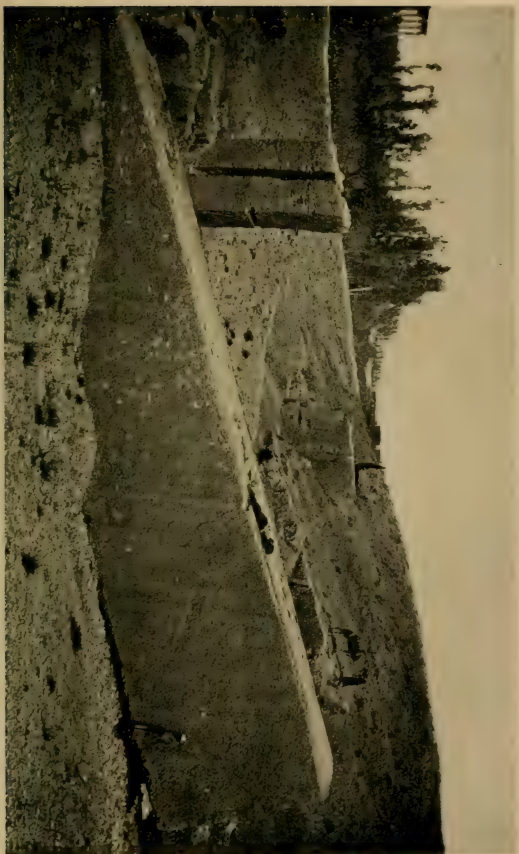
The chief place of interest in Jerusalem is the Holy Sepulchre, whose site I believe to be as real as the panorama that the priests have gathered round it must needs be false. You descend, by a narrow lane and a flight of steps, into a small enclosure, where a guard of Turkish soldiers is

stationed to keep peace among the Christians. After paying tribute to this infidel police, you enter into a large circular hall, supported by a colonnade of eighteen pillars, and surrounded by a large dome, in the centre of which is a pavilion containing the Holy Sepulchre. The whole of this church has been so frequently described that I shall only mention that within its walls are collected a panorama of all the events that took place at the crucifixion; the place where Christ was scourged; the hole in the rock where the Cross stood; the fissure where the rock was rent in twain; the place where the soldiers cast lots for the garments; the stone whereon the body was anointed; and, lastly, the grave wherein it was laid.

[This monkish topography has found few believers, the monks themselves, of whom there are at least a thousand in Palestine, being in greater part, if not wholly, "utterly illiterate and unenlightened," while those of different sects manifest towards each other a spirit of hostility the very reverse of Christ-like.]

The warehouse of relics and pilgrim ornaments at the Latin convent is furnished with such a stock as would seem inexhaustible, were it not that these articles are actually a subject of extensive merchandise in Europe, and, like paper currency, acquire all their value by passing through the hands of those spiritual dealers. There are about seven hundred persons employed at Bethlehem in the manufacture of beads, crosses, mother-of-pearl carvings, etc. The monks receive them as raw material; but having been rubbed on the Sepulchre, and having had mass said over them, they assume the value that makes them sought for by the devotees of the south of Europe. . . .

The present population [of Jerusalem] of about twelve thousand souls [now said to be about twenty-five thousand] find a very scanty subsistence, and have no com-



GREAT STONE IN QUARRY, BALBEK.





merce whatever to assist them. Alms and pilgrims are the principal, if not the only sources of wealth. The Jews, Latins, and Greeks are entirely dependent on such resources.

---

## BAALBEC, THE CITY OF THE SUN.

WILLIAM C. PRIME.

From "Tent Life in the Holy Land," copyright, 1857, by Harper & Bros.

[The Prime brothers have all been earnest and intelligent travellers. They are, or were, three in number,—Rev. Samuel Irenæus Prime, editor of the *New York Observer*, Rev. Edward D. G. Prime, also an editor and proprietor of the above-named paper, and William Cooper Prime, a lawyer and the author of "Boat-Life in Egypt and Nubia" and "Tent-Life in the Holy Land," from the latter of which the present selection is made. We have chosen from his interesting work a description of Baalbec, one of the most remarkable ruins the world possesses.]

FROM Sulghiyeh to Baalbec the road was picturesque and wild. Sometimes we went along precipitous hill-sides, looking down a thousand feet into the ravines, through which loud brawling streams went swiftly towards the Mediterranean, and at others we traced the course of such streams with the hills far above us.

We lunched in a deep, warm, sunny valley, cooling our wine with snow that we had brought from the high ridge of the mountain as we crossed it, such were the changes of climate from hour to hour. Our route lay through the mountains of the Anti-Lebanon range, from which we at length emerged on the great plain that lies between it and the true Lebanon, whose lofty and grand hills, snow-capped and magnificent, now towered in the western sky. As we came out on the plain the grand ruins of Baalbec

were visible before us, and we rode on at a rapid pace towards them.

If all the ruins of ancient Rome that are in and around the modern city were gathered together in one group, they would not equal the extent of the ruins of Baalbec. The remark may seem strange, or even extravagant, but I believe it to be literally true. And yet a mystery hangs about these mighty relics which time will never unfold. Who laid up these vast walls, who carved these stately columns, who walked these halls and worshipped in these temples? is almost as dark a question as who built the pyramids of Sakkara? or who slept in the sarcophagus of Cheops? Standing in the Temple of the Sun, and looking up to the sky through its shattered roof, I asked the question of the blue air that knows so many mysteries, and received the answer of the sky.

Somewhere beyond or this side of the blue—somewhere there are immortals who know it all, whose knees once pressed these marble floors with the devotion of worshippers, whose voices once echoed in these arches in hymns of praise. Altars and worshippers are dust, and the sun, day by day, looks down through the broken roof on the deserted and ruinous fane that they built to his worship, and laughs with his soft summer laugh at the memory of their wind-scattered incense.

And there to-day it seems not strange that men should worship the sun, who, with the same smile, looks down on the ruined temple as he looked down on the temple-builders thousands of years ago.

There is something in the heart of man that worships the immutable more than the invisible. The creature of the day reaches out his arms and longs to embrace that which was born a thousand years ago, and adores that which will last a thousand years to come. But that which

changes not as the years change; that which stands up firm above the shifting sands of the desert of life; that which looks down from a clear sky beyond driving mists; he bows down before that, and of that he begs immortality. For, after all, the innate religion of the human heart, of which so much is written and so much said, is the desire for eternity of existence, which men in a state of nature but guess at and dimly understand. It was not so strange that the men of old times worshipped the sun and stars.

I, too, half worshipped the sky that night, as I sat in my tent-door, under the lofty columns of the Temple of the Sun.

The modern village of Baalbec is situated on the north and east of the great temples, on the level of the plain, above which the latter are elevated. The platform of the temples, which I shall hereafter describe, is bounded on the east by the eastern colonnades of the great Temple of the Sun, which runs along the edge of it, and of which many of the columns and the carved ceiling are now fallen and lying in fragments below, forming an immense mass of ruin. Outside of these our tents were pitched; I had intended to place them in the temple.

As we approached the vast pile and entered the old Saracen wall which surrounded it, I paused in silent wonderment before the ruins. We went in silence around the sustaining wall of the platform on which the ruins stand, looking up at the massive temples that were piled on it. On the north side I found a dark archway, and we all rode into it. It was a long cavern in the platform, built of immense stones, arched overhead; and as we rode into it two or three hundred feet the busts of men looked down on us from the dimly lighted vaults, as if in wonder at this strange entrance of horsemen to their silent abodes.

Returning, we continued round the temple, taking the wall of some fellah's garden at a flying leap on the north-west corner, and so coming down by the other side, where we saw and were astounded by the great stones which have been so frequently described. I had been long familiar with Egyptian grandeur, but I confessed at once that Egypt knew nothing to compare with these. Returning at length to the place at which we had entered the village, I attempted to mount the fallen columns and massive stones, which lay heaped up on the eastern side of the enclosure, and gain access to the temple platform itself. In this I succeeded. The horse Mohammed would go into the second-story window of a New York house if I rode him at it seriously. He leaped from stone to stone like a cat, and climbed up forty feet of *débris* that I could with great difficulty have accomplished myself. I found a better path down, but not practicable for the loaded mules, and accordingly I directed the men to pitch the tents under the eastern colonnade of the great temple.

Certainly I could not have desired a spot more picturesque. A stream of clear water ran close behind us, and when the moon rose, late at night, and shone on the grand columns and its gray old walls, the scene was sufficiently grand.

I shall not attempt to sketch the supposed history of Heliopolis. That it was a city of early Phœnician origin I think may be taken for granted, from the name Baalbec, and that it was greatly beautified in the days of the Roman emperors may be inferred from the present magnificent ruins, that are evidently of that period. All this we may safely affirm, but more than this must be conjectured.

If the reader will bear with me a little, I will endeavor to give him such a description of the ruins as will enable him to form some idea of their magnitude, and conjecture

almost as well as those who have visited them the name and character of their founders.

The site of these ruins was originally a plain, extending miles to the north and to the south. They are situated a half-mile from the eastern side of the valley. On this plain a platform has been elevated by building a sustaining wall of immense stone, and arched galleries or passages, as well as arched chambers, on which earth has been heaped and levelled. The platform thus erected is of irregular shape, one part in the main being a large rectangular parcel, and another hexagonal, extending northeastward from the first, and yet another rectangular piece against this. The height of the upper level of the platform from the plain may be thirty feet, sufficient to command a view limited only by the distant mountains of Lebanon.

On this platform were erected numerous splendid temples, courts, chapels, altars, and places of study and of prayer. In the days of its glory it can hardly be doubted that it was, with one exception, the most magnificent temple in the world. Not, indeed, so massive, grand, and imposing as Karnak, but in its airy beauty, the richness of its Corinthian columns, the splendor of its high cornices and friezes, and the light, heaven-aspiring character of all its architecture, it must have been the most brilliant and beautiful of all the places of heathen worship.

Commencing our view with the outside of the platform wall, at the southwest corner, we find the great stones which form the most celebrated feature of Balbec.

Of these there are just twenty, and, as I have seen hitherto no full and accurate account of these stones, although many imperfect and inaccurate have been published, I shall not apologize for stopping to describe them.

Though they are but twenty very rough stones, they

are, nevertheless, among the most interesting relics of antiquity in the world.

They are in two rows, one on the south side of the great platform and the other on the west. Commencing with the row on the west side, and going southward, I found ten stones, measuring in order as follows (the first one is comparatively small, and I have lost the measurement): the next, 30 feet, then 31, 30.6, 30.6, 32, 30.6, 30, 32.4, 30.6. Each stone is thirteen feet high and ten feet six inches thick. The thickness varies an inch or two.

This wall stands alone, and has never been carried up. There is no structure on it, but the stones are gray and time-worn. A door-way has been cut through one of these stones, which admitted me to the space between it and the sustaining wall of the platform, which is built of levelled stone. This space is grass-grown and level, and from it I climbed to the top of the wall of large stones. They were smoothly cut, fitting exactly against each other, but at the point of junction of each two stones they were notched in the front in a peculiar manner, and for purposes which I shall hereafter mention. The notch was about four feet long up and down the line of junction, about a foot wide and eight inches deep at the top, running to a point, and out to the edge of the stones at the bottom of the notch.

This row of stones continues to the southwest corner of the platform, which, by a rough wall, is projected so as to rest on the corner-stone and the next one to it, and on these a high sustaining wall is built. The height on this corner of the whole platform must be about forty feet. The corner-stone in continuation of this wall is of the same class as the others, but not so large. It is about thirteen feet each way. But after turning the corner, we find that this stone projects about two feet beyond the line of the



wall above it, and is bevelled or worked off to the face of that wall. Then follow six stones, precisely similar to those we have described, whose entire length is one hundred and eighty-nine feet. But these also project as does the corner-stone, and are worked off from about four feet below their upper sides to the line of the wall above it, instead of having a perpendicular face with the peculiar notches I have described in the others.

But the wall above these last six stones is the wonder of Balbec and the world. It consists of three stones, exactly covering the six below them. Their length is, therefore, one hundred and eighty-nine feet, and I measured them three times without being able to detect a difference in them, though there may be an inch or two as described by others. The height of these stones, on the face, is thirteen feet, just that of the stones on which they rest, and the depth must be guessed at. In the plans of Casas, which I have before me, it is given at sixteen feet four inches (French, of course), and it may be fairly estimated at fifteen feet.

It is true that on these stones the wall of the platform is continued up. But that wall has manifestly nothing to do with the original design of the layers of this cyclopean structure. There is nothing else in or around Balbec which bears any relation or resemblance to these stones, or indicates the existence of the same grandeur of design and power of execution.

I say there is nothing like it in or around Balbec. I am wrong. In the quarry, a half-mile from here, lies a stone sixty-eight feet some inches long, seventeen feet wide, and fourteen feet six inches in thickness. The end of this has not been trimmed off. This done, would reduce it probably to the average length of the three now in position.

There can be no doubt, it seems to me, that this stone

was to be placed in position on the wall at the western side, in continuation of the three on the south, connected with them by a corner-stone. The notches I have spoken of were the commencement of the working down of the upper part of these stones, which were left solid until the large stones were in position on them, when they were to be sloped up to them, as I have described those under the three great stones.

But I apprehend no one can see any indication that the other works at Baalbec are of the same age or by the same persons with these gigantic rocks. The contrast between them and the Roman wall above is greater than between the Roman and the later Saracen walls laid upon them when Baalbec was made a fortress.

Who, then, built these two walls? Who cut these twenty stones, sole memorials of a work which was gigantic in its design beyond any other work on the face of the earth, but abandoned in its very commencement?

I have no doubt that they are of an age long preceding the Roman Empire, an age of giant thoughts, such as planned the Pyramids, or the mighty columns and architecture of Karnak. The Romans found them here, the evidence of an unknown race and a forgotten power, and on them built their gorgeous temples. Storms beat on the airy structures of the Romans, and they stood firm and bright in the succeeding sunshine. But earthquakes came and shook them down, and the works of the giants laughed at the earthquakes, and stood firm while shattered capitals and architraves were rained down on and around them.

In building their platform the Romans, or whoever continued the works at Baalbec, used the south wall, but preferred not to use the western, leaving it exposed, and, apparently, useless, running their wall about twenty feet inside of it. This wall is of bevelled stone, and may be of

more ancient date than the Roman temples. Of this it is impossible, at present, to affirm anything. I confess that my subsequent examination of the galleries and chambers under the platform led me to think that the immediate predecessors of the Romans were men of intermediate power, more like the hewers of the twenty stones, but not nearly so great in their ideas.

On the highest part of the platform, in the southwest corner of it, stood a grand temple, of which only six columns, supporting part of the architrave, now remain. These columns are each seven feet six inches in diameter at the base, and are alone left of seventy that formed the peristyle of a temple of the most elegant Corinthian style. They are visible throughout the extent of the plain of Baalbec, over which the temple must have shown with great brilliancy. The floor of the temple appears to have been terraced up towards the south side, as it ascends in that direction, and the pavement remains. It is a remarkable fact that, under the temple, the platform has, so far as now known, no chambers or galleries. An excavation would, doubtless, open interesting rooms. I tried various methods of obtaining access, but all in vain, though I am satisfied that such exist, and, doubtless, judging from such as I found elsewhere, of great splendor.

In front of this temple was a large quadrangular court, surrounded by exquisite little semicircular temples, all gorgeously carved in florid Corinthian, and each having five dead windows or recesses for statues, and small semicircular seats or niches under them. The latter are strangely and beautifully carved; one has an eagle among stars forming the top, another a winged globe, many have scallop-shells, beautifully cut.

This quadrangle was filled with various buildings, of which the ruins lie in it. It opens into a hexagonal court

also surrounded with niches for statues, and this into a grand portico, flanked by two square towers, of which the ancient form is totally lost by the Saracen changes. I presume that the grand steps to the temple led up from the plain here, but they are now gone, nor is there any trace of them.

Returning to the great temple, and descending to a lower level of the platform, on the east, we came to the great Temple of the Sun, the walls of which are still standing.

It had a peristyle of thirty-six columns, plain shafts with elegant Corinthian capitals, and four inner columns fluted, making forty in all. These are mostly fallen and broken to pieces, but on the northwest side nine remain standing, and support the ceiling of the peristyle. This ceiling is composed of immense stones, elaborately carved in compartments, with fruits, flowers, and busts of gods and goddesses.

Entering the temple by a hole in the Saracen wall that closes it, we find a grand door-way which was square, the top being trilithic, two stones resting on the pilasters or side posts, the middle one keyed in between these. This middle stone has been shaken from its position, and the outer two, opening a little, have let it slip down, but it is caught by the width of its upper part, and thus hangs, threatening destruction to whoever passes under it. On the under side of this stone is carved an eagle, whose wings, or the tips of them, are left on the other stones. The tips touch two cupids, one of which scaled off when the eagle fell. The other was battered by the early Christians, whose vandalish propensities are so noticeable in Egyptian temples. The eagle's bill holds a wreath and bundle of flowers. Within, the temple is battered and bruised, and defaced with the names of hundreds of modern travellers. Still it is gorgeous, and was glorious. The carving of the

oak-leaves and acorns, of the delicate bead-work, and of the intricate and innumerable patterns and ornaments, surpasses all the work in stone that I have seen elsewhere. Wreaths, festoons, and garlands are wrought all over the walls with the utmost skill and taste.

On the east side of this temple there are yet standing four of the columns which support a very perfect specimen of the frieze, but no description can convey an idea of the elaborate nature of it. Bulls' and lions' heads alternate with oak-leaves and grapes, and various other patterns.

The top of this architrave is disfigured by a rude stone wall, piled on it by the Saracens, the object of which I am at a loss to guess at.

There are many other ruins of buildings on the great platform and connected with it, but I pass from them to the vaults below. I postponed an examination of these until the third day of our visit, having devoted a part of the previous day to finding an entrance under the great temple, which I have already stated was without result.

There are three great galleries under the platform. Two running from north to south, and one connecting the two. Besides these, there are a large number of chambers, all built in the same massive style. The lower rows of stones are very large,—much larger than anything seen in the Roman structures above-ground. The arches are, in many cases, evidently built on a plan quite different from that which was adopted in laying these stones.

The only room of special beauty to which I obtained access appeared never to have been visited before by any traveller. Walking up the eastern gallery, I observed a sort of window, into which I mounted by Whitely's shoulders. It was all dark. I lighted a piece of paper with a match and threw it in. It fell ten feet, and showed me a hard

floor for an instant, on which I jumped, without stopping to calculate how I should get back again.

I lit a candle, and found on the ground a considerable quantity of straws, blown in through the hole at which I had entered. Gathering these together, I called Whitely and Moreright to come in. They came as I had, helping each other. Then I touched my candle to the pile and it flashed up brilliantly, long enough to show us a lofty square chamber with arched ceiling elaborately carved in the style of the ceiling of the peristyle of the Temple of the Sun. There were places for statues on the side-walls, and a doorway that once opened to the outer ground, but now closed with large stone, probably in Saracen times. Thus much I saw and the fire vanished. We helped each other out, and walked up and down these vast subterranean halls for nearly two hours before we were called away.

The eastern gallery opened up at its extremity directly into the platform near the smaller temple, and appears to have been used for processions. Frequent busts appear in the key-stones of the arch, but all of them are so much defaced as to be unrecognizable.

I have not pretended to give a full account of the Roman ruins in Baalbec. Enough is accomplished if I have given the reader a general idea of their grandeur and extent.

---

## DAMASCUS, THE PEARL OF THE ORIENT.

BAYARD TAYLOR.

[Few travellers have been so successful in eliciting the poetry from nature, and investing the beauties of scenery with a charm derived from the mind of the observer, as Bayard Taylor, one of the most favorite of modern travellers. Aside from his notable works of European

travel, he made journeys of exploration in Africa and Asia, the story of which is told in three volumes, of which we have here to do with the second, "*The Lands of the Saracen; or, Pictures of Palestine, Asia Minor, Sicily, and Spain.*" From this work we select an account of his visit to Damascus, and of the famous approach to that most ancient of Oriental cities.]

IN the morning we left the baggage to take care of itself and rode on to Damascus as fast as our tired horses could carry us. The plain, at first barren and stony, became enlivened with vineyards and fields of wheat as we advanced. Arabs were everywhere at work, ploughing and directing the watercourses. The belt of living green, the bower in which the great city, the Queen of the Orient, hides her beauty, drew nearer and nearer, stretching out a crescent of foliage for miles on either hand that gradually narrowed and received us into its cool and fragrant heart. We sank into a sea of olive-, pomegranate-, orange-, plum-, apricot-, walnut-, and plane-trees, and were lost. The sun sparkled in the rolling surface above; but we swam through the green depths below his reach, and thus, drifted on through miles of shade, entered the city. . . .

Damascus is considered by many travellers as the best remaining type of an Oriental city. Constantinople is semi-European; Cairo is fast becoming so; but Damascus, away from the highways of commerce, seated alone between the Lebanon and the Syrian Desert, still retains, in its outward aspect and in the character of its inhabitants, all the pride and fancy and fanaticism of the times of the Caliphs. With this judgment, in general terms, I agree; but not to its ascendancy in every respect over Cairo.

True, when you behold Damascus from the Salahiyeh, the last slope of the Anti-Lebanon, it is the realization of all that you have dreamed of Oriental splendor,—the world has no picture more dazzling. It is Beauty carried to the



Sublime, as I have felt when overlooking some boundless forest of palms within the tropics. From the hill, whose ridges heave behind you till in the south they rise to the snowy head of Mount Hermon, the great Syrian plain stretches away to the Euphrates, broken at distances of ten and fifteen miles by two detached mountain-chains. In a terrible gorge at your side the river Barrada, the ancient Pharpar, forces its way to the plain, and its waters, divided into twelve different channels, make all between you and those blue island hills of the desert one great garden, the boundaries of which your vision can barely distinguish. Its longest diameter cannot be less than twenty miles. You look down upon a world of foliage, and fruit, and blossoms, whose hue, by contrast with the barren mountains and the yellow rim of the desert which encloses it, seems brighter than all other gardens in the world. Through its centre, following the course of the river, lies Damascus; a line of white walls, topped with domes and towers and tall minarets, winding away for miles through the green sea. Nothing less than a city of palaces, whose walls are marble and whose doors are ivory and pearl, could keep up the enchantment of that distant view.

We rode on for an hour through the gardens before entering the gate. The fruit-trees, of whatever variety,—walnut, olive, apricot, or fig,—were the noblest of their kind. Roses and pomegranates in bloom starred the dark foliage, and the scented jasmine overhung the walls. But as we approached the city the view was obscured by high mud walls on either side of the road, and we only caught glimpses now and then of the fragrant wilderness.

The first street we entered was low and mean, the houses of clay. Following this, we came to an uncovered bazaar with rude shops on either side protected by mats stretched

in front and supported by poles. Here all kinds of common stuffs and utensils were sold, and the street was filled with crowds of Fellahs and Desert Arabs. Two large sycamores shaded it, and the Seraglio of the Pasha of Damascus, a plain two-story building, faced the entrance of the main bazaar, which branched off into the city.

We turned into this, and after passing through several small bazaars stocked with dried fruits, pipes and pipe-bowls, groceries, and all the primitive wares of the East, reached a large passage covered with a steep wooden roof, and entirely occupied by venders of silk-stuffs. Out of this we passed through another, devoted to saddles and bridles; then another, full of spices, and at last reached the grand bazaar, where all the richest stuffs of Europe and the East were displayed in the shops.

We rode slowly along through the cool twilight, crossed here and there by long pencils of white light, falling through apertures in the roof, and illuminating the gay turbans and silk caftans of the lazy merchants. But out of this bazaar, at intervals, opened the grand gate of a khan, giving us a view of its marble court, its fountains, and the dark arches of its store-rooms; or the door of a mosque, with its mosaic floor and pillared corridor. The interminable lines of bazaars, with their atmospheres of spice and fruit and fragrant tobacco; the hushed tread of the slippered crowds; the splash of falling fountains and the bubbling of innumerable narghilehs; the picturesque merchants and their customers, no longer in the big trousers of Egypt, but the long caftans and abas of Syria; the absence of Frank faces and dresses,—in all these there was the true spirit of the Orient, and, so far, we were charmed with Damascus.

At the hotel in the Soog el-Haràb, or Frank quarter, the illusion was not dissipated. It had once been the home of

some rich merchant. The court into which we were ushered is paved with marble, with a great stone basin, surrounded with vases of flowering plants, in the centre. Two large lemon-trees shade the entrance, and a vine, climbing to the top of the house, makes a leafy arbor over the flat roof. The walls of the house are painted in horizontal bars of blue, white, orange, and white,—a gay grotesqueness of style which does not offend the eye under an Eastern sun. On the southern side of the court is the *liwan*, an arrangement for which the houses of Damascus are noted. It is a vaulted apartment twenty feet high, entirely open towards the court, except a fine-pointed arch at the top, decorated with encaustic ornaments of the most brilliant colors. In front, a tessellated pavement of marble leads to the doors of the chambers on each side. Beyond this is a raised floor covered with matting, and along the farther end a divan, whose piled cushions are the most tempting trap ever set to catch a lazy man. Although not naturally indolent, I find it impossible to resist the fascination of this lounge. Leaning back, cross-legged, against the cushions, with the inseparable pipe in one's hand, the view of the court, the water-basin, the flowers and lemon-trees, the servants and dragomen going back and forth, or smoking their narghilehs in the shade,—all, framed in the beautiful arched entrance, is so perfectly Oriental, so true a tableau from the times of good old Haroun al-Raschid, that one is surprised to find how many hours have slipped away while he has been silently enjoying it.

Opposite the *liwan* is a large room paved with marble, with a handsome fountain in the centre. It is the finest in the hotel, and now occupied by Lord Dalkeith and his friends. Our own room is on the upper floor, and is so rich in decorations that I have not yet finished the study

of them. Along the side, looking down on the court, we have a mosaic floor of white, red, black, and yellow marble. Above this is raised a second floor, carpeted and furnished in European style. The walls for the height of ten feet are covered with wooden panelling, painted with arabesque devices in the gayest colors, and along the top there is a series of Arabic inscriptions in gold. There are a number of niches or open closets in the walls, whose arched tops are adorned with pendant wooden ornaments resembling stalactites, and at the corners of the room the heavy gilded and painted cornice drops into similar grotesque incrustations. A space of bare white wall intervenes between this cornice and the ceiling, which is formed of slim poplar logs, laid side by side, and so covered with paint and with scales and stripes and net-work devices in gold and silver, that one would take them to be clothed with the skins of the magic serpents that guard the Valley of Diamonds. My most satisfactory remembrance of Damascus will be this room.

My walks through the city have been almost wholly confined to the bazaars, which are of immense extent. One can walk for many miles without going beyond the cover of their peaked wooden roofs, and in all this round will find no two precisely alike. One is devoted entirely to soap, another to tobacco, through which you cough and sneeze your way to the bazaar of spices, and delightedly inhale its perfumed air. Then there is the bazaar of sweetmeats; of vegetables; of red slippers; of shawls and caftans; of bakers and ovens; of wooden ware; of jewelry, —a great stone building, covered with vaulted passages; of Aleppo silks; of Baghdad carpets; of Indian stuffs; of coffee; and so on through a seemingly endless variety.

As I have already remarked, along the line of the bazaars are many khans, the resort of merchants from all parts of Turkey and Persia, and even India. They are large,

stately buildings, and some of them have superb gate-ways of sculptured marble. The interior courts are paved with stone, with fountains in the centre, and many are covered with domes, resting on massive pillars. The largest has a roof of nine domes, supported by four grand pillars, which enclose a fountain. The mosques, into which no Christian is allowed to enter, are in general inferior to those of Cairo, but their outer courts are always paved with marble, adorned with fountains, and surrounded by light and elegant corridors. The grand mosque is an imposing edifice, and is said to occupy the site of a former Christian church.

Another pleasant feature of the city is its coffee-shops, which abound in the bazaars and on the outskirts of the gardens, beside the running streams. Those in the bazaars are spacious rooms with vaulted ceilings, divans running around the four walls, and fountains in the centre. During the afternoon they are nearly always filled with Turks, Armenians, and Persians, smoking the narghileh, or water-pipe, which is the universal custom in Damascus. The Persian tobacco, brought here by the caravans from Baghdad, is renowned for this kind of smoking. The most popular coffee-shop is near the citadel, on the banks and over the surface of the Pharpar. It is a rough wooden building, with a roof of straw mats, but the sight and sound of the rushing waters as they shoot away with arrowy swiftness under your feet, the shade of the trees that line the bank, and the cool breeze that always visits the spot, beguile you into a second pipe ere you are aware.

"*El mà, wa el khódra, wa el widj el hàssan*,—water, verdure, and a beautiful face," says an Arab proverb, "are three things which delight the heart," and the Syrians avow that all three are to be found in Damascus. Not

only on the three Sundays of each week, but every day, in the gardens about the city, you may see whole families (and if Jews or Christians, many groups of families) spending the day in the shade, beside the beautiful waters. There are several gardens fitted up purposely for these picnics, with kiosks, fountains, and pleasant seats under the trees. You bring your pipes, your provisions, and the like with you, but servants are in attendance to furnish fire and water and coffee, for which, on leaving, you give a small gratuity. Of all the Damascines I have yet seen, there is not one but declares his city to be the Garden of the World, the Pearl of the Orient, and thanks God and the Prophet for having permitted him to be born and to live in it.

But except the bazaars, the khans, and the baths, of which there are several most luxurious establishments, the city itself is neither so rich nor so purely Saracenic in its architecture as Cairo. The streets are narrow and dirty, and the houses, which are never more than two low stories in height, are built of sun-dried bricks, coated with plaster. I miss the solid piles of stone, the elegant door-ways, and, above all, the exquisite hanging balconies of carved wood which meet one in the old streets of Cairo. Damascus is the representative of all that is gay, brilliant, and picturesque in Oriental life; but for stately magnificence, Cairo, and, I suspect, Baghdad, is its superior.

We visited the other day the houses of some of the richest Jews and Christians. Old Abou-Ibrahim, the Jewish servant of the hotel, accompanied and introduced us. It is customary for travellers to make these visits, and the families, far from being annoyed, are flattered by it. The exteriors of the houses are mean; but after threading a narrow passage, we emerged into a court rivalling in profusion of ornament and rich contrast of colors one's early idea of the Palace of Aladdin. The floors and fountains

are all of marble mosaic; the arches of the *liwan* glitter with gold, and the walls bewilder the eye with the intricacy of their adornments.

In the first house we were received by the family in a room of precious marbles, with niches in the walls resembling grottoes of silver stalactites. The cushions of the divan were of the richest silk, and a chandelier of Bohemian crystal hung from the ceiling. Silver narghilehs were brought to us, and coffee was served in heavy silver *zerfs*. The lady of the house was a rather corpulent lady of about thirty-five, and wore a semi-European robe of embroidered silk and lace, with full trousers gathered at the ankles, and yellow slippers. Her black hair was braided, and fastened at the end with golden ornaments, and the light scarf twisted around her head blazed with diamonds. The lids of her large eyes were stained with *kohl*, and her eyebrows were plucked out and shaved away so as to leave only a thin, arched line, as if drawn with a pencil, above each eye. Her daughter, a girl of fifteen, who bore the genuine Hebrew name of Rachel, had even bigger and blacker eyes than her mother; but her forehead was low, her mouth large, and the expression of her face exceedingly stupid. The father of the family was a middle-aged man, with a well-bred air, and talked with an Oriental politeness which was very refreshing. An English lady, who was of our party, said to him, through me, that if she possessed such a house she would be willing to remain in Damascus. "Why does she leave, then?" he immediately answered; "this is her house, and everything that is in it." Speaking of visiting Jerusalem, he asked me whether it was not a more beautiful city than Damascus. "It is not more beautiful," I said, "but it is more holy," an expression which the whole company received with great satisfaction. . . .

The last visit we paid was to the dwelling of a Maronite,



the richest Christian in Damascus. The house resembled those we had already seen, except that, having been recently built, it was in better condition, and exhibited better taste in the ornaments. No one but the lady was allowed to enter the female apartments, the rest of us being entertained by the proprietor, a man of fifty, and without exception the handsomest and most dignified person of that age I have ever seen. He was a king without a throne, and fascinated me completely by the noble elegance of his manner. In any country but the Orient I should have pronounced him incapable of an unworthy thought; here, he may be exactly the reverse.

Although Damascus is considered the oldest city in the world, the date of its foundation going beyond tradition, there are very few relics of antiquity in or near it. In the bazaar were three large pillars, supporting half the pediment, which are said to have belonged to the Christian Church of St. John, but, if so, that church must have been originally a Roman temple. Part of the Roman walls and one of the city gates remain; and we saw the spot where, according to tradition, Saul was let down from the wall in a basket. There are two localities pointed out as the scene of his conversion, which, from his own account, occurred near the city. I visited a subterranean chapel claimed by the Latin monks to be the cellar of the house of Ananias, in which the apostle was concealed. The cellar is, undoubtedly, of great antiquity; but as the whole quarter was for many centuries inhabited wholly by Turks, it would be curious to know how the monks ascertained which was the house of Ananias. As for the "street called Straight," it would be difficult at present to find any in Damascus corresponding to that epithet.

The famous Damascus blades, so renowned in the time of the Crusaders, are made here no longer. The art has

been lost for three or four centuries. Yet genuine old swords, of the true steel, are occasionally to be found. They are readily distinguished from modern imitations by their clear and silvery ring when struck, and by the finely watered appearance of the blade, produced by its having been first made of woven wire, and then worked over and over again until it attained the requisite temper.

A droll Turk, who is the *shekh ed-dellâl*, or Chief of the Auctioneers, and is nicknamed Abou-Anteeka (the Father of the Antiques), has a large collection of sabres, daggers, pieces of mail, shields, pipes, rings, seals, and other ancient articles. He demands enormous prices, but generally takes about one-third of what he first asks. I have spent several hours in his curiosity shop bargaining for turquoise rings, carbuncles, Persian amulets, and Circassian daggers. While looking over some old swords the other day, I noticed one of exquisite temper, but with a shorter blade than usual. The point had apparently been snapped off in fight, but owing to the excellence of the sword, or the owner's affection for it, the steel had been carefully shaped into a new point. Abou-Anteeka asked five hundred piastres, and I, who had taken a particular fancy to possess it, offered him two hundred in an indifferent way, and then laid it aside to examine other articles. After his refusal to accept my offer I said nothing more, and was leaving the shop, when the old fellow called me back, saying, "You have forgotten your sword,"—which I thereupon took at my own price.

I have shown it to Mr. Wood, the British consul, who pronounced it an extremely fine specimen of Damascus steel; and, on reading the inscription enamelled on the blade, ascertained that it was made in the year of the Hegira 181, which corresponds to A.D. 798. This was during the caliphate of Haroun al-Raschid, and who knows

but the sword may have once flashed in the presence of that great and glorious sovereign,—nay, been drawn by his own hand! Who knows but that the Milan armor of the Crusaders may have shivered its point on the field of Asakalon! I kiss the veined azure of thy blade, O Sword of Haroun! I hang the crimson cords of thy scabbard upon my shoulder, and thou shalt henceforth clank in silver music at my side, singing to my ear, and mine alone, thy chants of battle, thy rejoicing songs of slaughter!

---

## THE GIANT CITIES OF BASHAN.

J. L. PORTER.

[The world is widely strewn with the ruins of man's works of architecture. Throughout the Old World, and in many parts of the New, shattered walls, heaps of *débris*, shapeless mounds, tell where man lived and labored in the far past, vainly trusting that the work of his hands would endure forever. Only in one land which we can recall do his works endure as he left them, only in one realm can we find cities, deserted two or three thousand years ago, with habitations fit to dwell in still. This is the land of "Og, King of Bashan, of the remnant of the giants," whose iron bed was nine cubits long and four cubits broad. This historic land, in the far past, was densely peopled. In Argob, one of its provinces, Jair, a chief of the tribe of Manasseh, took sixty great cities "fenced with high walls, gates, and bars, besides unwallled towns a great many." This realm of Manasseh, in Eastern Palestine, has been little visited by travellers. Its fertile soil is now deserted, its enduring cities are not dwelt in, its luxuriant pastures are dwelt in only by wandering Arabs. Yet it is amply worth visiting, and we give from the narrative of Rev. J. L. Porter a brief account of some of its marvels.]

THE ancient cities and even the villages of Western Palestine have been almost annihilated; with the exception

of Jerusalem, Hebron, and two or three others, not one stone has been left upon another. In some places we can scarcely discover the spot where a noted city stood, so complete has been the desolation. Even in Jerusalem itself only a very few vestiges of the ancient buildings remain; the Tower of David, portions of the wall of the Temple area, and one or two other fragments,—just enough to form the subject of dispute among antiquaries.

The state of Bashan is totally different: it is literally crowded with towns and large villages; and, though the vast majority of them are deserted, *they are not ruined*. I have more than once entered a *deserted city* in the evening, taken possession of a comfortable house, and spent the night in peace. Many of the houses in the ancient cities of Bashan are as perfect as if only finished yesterday. The walls are sound, the roofs unbroken, the doors, and even the window-shutters, in their places. Let not my readers think that I am transcribing a passage from the “Arabian Nights.” I am relating sober facts; I am simply telling what I have seen, and what I purpose more fully to describe.

“But how,” you ask me, “can we account for the preservation of ordinary dwellings in a land of ruins? If one of our modern English cities were deserted for a millennium there would scarcely be a fragment of a wall standing.” The reply is easy enough. The houses of Bashan are not ordinary houses. Their walls are from five to eight feet thick, built of large squared blocks of basalt; the roofs are formed of slabs of the same material, hewn like planks, and reaching from wall to wall; the very doors and window-shutters are of stone, hung upon pivots projecting above and below. Some of these ancient cities have from two to five hundred houses still perfect, but not a man to dwell in them. On one occasion, from the battlements of

the Castle of Salcah, I counted some thirty towns and villages, dotting the surface of the vast plain, many of them almost as perfect as when they were built, and yet for more than five centuries there has not been a single inhabitant in one of them.

[When we remember that these habitations were probably erected before the Mosaic invasion of Palestine by the Israelites, and that the later inhabitants but dwelt in the houses erected by the old "giants" of Bashan, the wonder grows. More than three thousand years old, yet in order to be dwelt in to-day! There is nothing like it elsewhere in the world. Bashan has stood in the way of invading hordes, and has been many times swept over by armies of Assyrians, Turks, and other races. Its inhabitants have vanished, but its dwellings remain, proof against fire or decay, and ready to be moved into and occupied by the people who in the future shall come to till again the productive fields of this once strikingly fertile land. But we must let our traveller proceed with his narrative.]

On a bright and balmy morning in February a party of seven cavaliers defiled from the East Gate of Damascus, rode for half an hour among the orchards that skirt the old city, and then, turning to the left, struck out, along a broad beaten path through the open fields, in a south-easterly direction. The leader was a wild-looking figure. His dress was a red cotton tunic or shirt, fastened round the waist by a broad leathern girdle. Over it was a loose jacket of sheepskin, the wool inside. His feet and legs were bare. On his head was a flame-colored handkerchief, fastened above by a coronet of black camel's hair, which left the ends and long fringe to flow over his shoulders. He was mounted on an active, shaggy pony, with a pad for a saddle and a hair halter for a bridle. Before him, across the back of his little steed, he carried a long rifle, his only weapon. Immediately behind him, on powerful Arab horses, were three men in Western costume: one of

these was the writer. Next came an Arab, who acted as dragoman, or rather courier, and two servants on stout hacks brought up the rear.

On gaining the beaten track, our guide struck into a sharp canter. The great city was soon left far behind, and on turning we could see its tall white minarets shooting up from the sombre foliage and thrown into bold relief by the dark background of Anti-Lebanon. The plain spread out on each side, smooth as a lake, covered with the delicate green of the young grain. Here and there were long belts and large clumps of dusky olives, from the midst of which rose the gray towers of a mosque or the white dome of a saint's tomb. On the south the plain was shut in by a ridge of bare, black hills, appropriately named *Jebel-el-Aswad*, "the Black Mountains;" while away on the west, in the distance, Hermon rose in all its majesty, a pyramid of spotless snow. From whatever point one sees it, there are few landscapes in the world which, for richness and soft, enchanting beauty, can be compared with the plain of Damascus.

After riding about seven miles, during which we passed straggling groups of men,—some on foot, some on horses and donkeys, and some on camels, most of them dressed like our guide, and all hurrying on in the same direction as ourselves,—we reached the eastern extremity of the Black Mountains, and found ourselves on the sides of a narrow green vale, through the centre of which flows the river *Pharpar*. A bridge here spans the stream; and beyond it, in the rich meadows, the *Hauran* caravan was being marshalled.

Up to this point the road is safe, and may be travelled almost at any time; but on crossing the *Awaj* we enter the domains of the *Bedawin*, whose law is the sword, and whose right is might. Our farther progress was liable to

be disputed at any moment. The attacks of the Bedawin, when made, are sudden and impetuous; and resistance, to be effectual, must be prompt and decided. During the winter season this eastern route is in general pretty secure, as the Arab tribes have their encampments far distant on the banks of the Euphrates, or in the interior of the desert; but the war between the Druses and the government, which had just been concluded, had drawn these daring marauders from their customary haunts, and they endured the rain and snow of the Syrian frontier in the hope of plunder.

All seemed fully aware of this, and appeared to feel, here as elsewhere, that the hand of the Ishmaelite is against every man. Consequently stragglers hurried up and fell into the ranks; bales and packages on mules and camels were rearranged and more carefully adjusted; muskets and pistols were examined, and cartridges got into a state of readiness; armed men were placed in something like order along the sides of the file of animals; and a few horsemen were sent on in front, to scour the neighboring hills and the skirts of the great plain beyond, so as to prevent surprise. A number of Druses who here joined the caravan, and who were easily distinguished by their snow-white turbans and bold, manly bearing, appeared to take the chief direction in these warlike preparations, though, as the caravan was mainly made up of Christians, one of these, called Musa, was the nominal leader. It was a strange and exciting scene, and one would have thought that an attempt to reduce such a refractory and heterogeneous multitude of men and animals to anything like order would be absolutely useless. Some of the camels and donkeys, breaking loose, scattered their loads over the plain, and spread confusion all around them; others growled, kicked, and brayed; drivers shouted and gesticulated; men



and boys ran through the crowd, asking for missing brothers and companions; horsemen galloped from group to group, entreating and threatening by turns. At length, however, the order was given to march. It passed along from front to rear, and the next moment every sound was hushed; the very beasts seemed to comprehend its meaning, for they fell quietly into their places, and the long files, now four and five abreast, began to move over the grassy plain with a stillness that was almost painful.

[Leaving the fertile valley of the Pharpar, the caravan entered a dreary region. After two hours they reached a green meadow, and saw, far extending before them, the plain of Bashan,—desolate and forsaken, but with abundant promise of fertility in its soil. As they advanced they saw in the distance a black line, which rose until it appeared a Cyclopean wall. This was the Lejah, a vast field of basalt in the middle of the plain of Bashan, with an elevation of some thirty feet above the plain. Night was now at hand.]

The sun went down, and the short twilight was made still shorter by heavy clouds which drifted across the face of the sky. A thick rain began to fall, which made the prospect of a night march or a bivouac equally unpleasant. Still I rode on through the darkness, striving to dispel gloomy forebodings by the stirring memory of Bashan's ancient glory, and the thought that I was now treading its soil and on my way to the great cities founded and inhabited four thousand years ago by the giant Rephaim. Before the darkness set in, Musa had pointed out to me the towers of three or four of these cities rising above the rocky barrier of the Lejah. How I strained my eyes in vain to pierce the deepening gloom! Now I knew that some of them must be close at hand. The sharp ring of my horse's feet on pavement startled me. This was followed by painful stumbling over loose stones, and the twisting of his limbs among jagged rocks. The sky was black

overhead, the ground black beneath; the rain was drifting in my face, so that nothing could be seen.

A halt was called; and it was with no little pleasure that I heard the order given for the caravan to rest till the moon rose. "Is there any spot," I asked of an Arab at my side, "where we could get shelter from the rain?"—"There is a house ready for you," he answered. "A house! Is there a house here?"—"Hundreds of them. This is the town of Burâk."

We were conducted up a rugged winding path, which seemed, so far as we could make out in the dark and by the motion of our horses, to be something like a ruinous staircase. At length the dark outline of high walls began to appear against the sky, and presently we entered a paved street. Here we were told to dismount and give our horses to the servants. An Arab struck a light, and, inviting us to follow, passed through a low, gloomy door into a spacious chamber.

I looked with no little interest round the apartment of which we had taken such unceremonious possession; but the light was so dim, and the walls, roof, and floor so black, that I could make out nothing satisfactorily. Getting a torch from one of the servants, I lighted it and proceeded to examine the mysterious mansion; for, though drenched with rain and wearied with a twelve hours' ride, I could not rest. I felt an excitement such as I never before had experienced. I could scarcely believe in the reality of what I saw and what I heard from my guides in reply to eager questions.

The house seemed to have undergone little change from the time its old master had left it; and yet the thick nitrous crust on its floor showed that it had been deserted for long ages. The walls were perfect, nearly five feet thick, built of large blocks of hewn stones, without lime or cement of any kind. The roof was formed of large slabs of the same

black basalt, lying as regularly, and jointed as closely, as if the workmen had only just completed them. They measured twelve feet in length, eighteen inches in breadth, and six inches in thickness. The ends rested on a plain stone cornice, projecting about a foot from each side-wall. The chamber was twenty feet long, twelve wide, and ten high. The outer door was a slab of stone, four and a half feet high, four wide, and eight inches thick. It hung on pivots formed of projecting parts of the slab, working in sockets in the lintel and threshold; and, though so massive, I was able to open and shut it with ease.

At one end of the room was a small window with a stone shutter. An inner door, also of stone, but of finer workmanship, and not quite so heavy as the other, admitted to a chamber of the same size and appearance. From it a much larger door communicated with a third chamber, to which there was a descent by a flight of stone steps. This was a spacious hall, equal in width to the two rooms, and about twenty-five feet long by twenty high. A semicircular arch was thrown across it, supporting the stone roof; and a gate so large that camels could pass in and out opened on the street. The gate was of stone, and it appeared to have been open for ages. Here our horses were comfortably installed.

Such were the internal arrangements of this strange old mansion. It had only one story; and its simple, massive style of architecture gave evidence of a very remote antiquity. On a large stone which formed the lintel of the gate-way there was a Greek inscription; but it was so high up, and my light so faint, that I was unable to decipher it, though I could see that the letters were of the oldest type. It is probably the same which was copied by Burckhardt, and which bears a date apparently equivalent to the year B.C. 306.

Owing to the darkness of the night and the shortness of our stay, I was unable to ascertain from personal observation either the extent of Burâk or the general character of its buildings; but the men who gathered around me, when I returned to my chamber, had often visited it. They said the houses were all like the one we occupied, only some smaller, and a few larger, and that there were no great buildings. Burâk stands on the northeast corner of the Lejah, and was thus one of the frontier towns of ancient Argob. It is built upon rocks, and encompassed by rocks so wild and rugged as to render it a natural fortress.

After a few hours' rest the order for march was again given. We found our horses at the door, and, mounting at one, we followed Musa. The rain had ceased, the sky was clear, and the moon shone brightly, half revealing the savage features of the environs of Burâk. I can never forget that scene. Huge masses of shapeless rocks rose up here and there, among and around the houses, to the height of fifteen and twenty feet, their summits jagged and their sides all shattered. Between them were pits and yawning fissures, as many feet in depth; while the flat surfaces of naked rock were thickly strewn with huge boulders of basalt. The narrow, tortuous road by which Musa led us out was in places carried over chasms, and in places cut through cliffs. An ancient aqueduct ran alongside of it, which in former days conveyed a supply of water from a neighboring winter stream to the tanks and reservoirs from which the town gets its present name, Burâk ("the tanks"). . . .

[These aqueducts, common in eastern Syria,] appear to have been constructed as follows: a shaft was sunk to the depth of from ten to twenty feet, at a spot where it was supposed water might be found; then a tunnel was excavated on the level of the bottom of the shaft, and in the

direction of the town to be supplied. At the distance of about one hundred yards another shaft was sunk, connecting the tunnel with the surface; and so the work was carried on until it was brought close to the city, where a great reservoir was made. Some of these aqueducts are nearly twenty miles in length; and even if no living spring should exist along their whole course, they soon collect in the rainy season sufficient surface water to supply the largest reservoirs. Springs are rare in Bashan. It is a thirsty land; but cisterns of enormous dimensions—some open, others covered—are seen in every city and village. . . .

Scrambling through, or rather over, a ruinous gate-way, we entered the city of Bathanyeh. A wide street lay before us, the pavement perfect, the houses on each side standing, streets and lanes branching off to the right and left. There was something inexpressibly mournful in riding along that silent street, and looking in through half-open doors to one after another of those desolate houses, with the rank grass and weeds in their courts, and the brambles growing in festoons over the door-ways, and branches of trees shooting through the gaping rents in the old walls. The ring of our horses' feet on the pavement awakened the echoes of the city and startled many a strange tenant. Owls flapped their wings round the gray towers; daws shrieked as they flew away from the house-tops; foxes ran in and out among the shattered dwellings, and two jackals rushed from an open door and scampered off along the street before us. . . .

One of the houses in which I rested for a time might almost be termed a palace. A spacious gate-way, with massive folding doors of stone, opened from the street into a large court. On the left was a square tower some forty feet in height. Round the court, and opening into it, were the apartments, all in perfect preservation; and yet the

place does not seem to have been inhabited for centuries. Greek inscriptions on the principal buildings prove that they existed at the commencement of our era; and in the whole town I did not see a solitary trace of Mohammedan occupation, so that it has probably been deserted for at least a thousand years.

[Many of the cities of Bashan appear to have been occupied in Greek and Roman, and some of them in Mohammedan, times, and they possess many evidences of this occupation. Our author describes numbers of them, but we must confine ourselves to a few selections from his narrative.]

Salcah is one of the most remarkable cities in Palestine. It has been long deserted; and yet, as nearly as I could estimate, *five hundred* of its houses are still standing, and from three to four hundred families might settle in it at any moment without laying a stone or expending an hour's labor on repairs. The circumference of the town and castle together is about three miles. Besides the castle, a number of square towers, like the belfries of churches, and a few mosques appear to be the only public buildings. . . .

The *castle* occupies the summit of a steep conical hill, which rises to the height of some three hundred feet, and is the southern point of the mountain range of Bashan. Round the base of the hill is a deep moat, and another still deeper encircles the walls of the fortress. The building is a patchwork of various periods and nations. The foundations are Jewish, if not earlier; Roman rustic masonry appears about them; and over all is lighter Saracenic work, with beautifully interlaced inscriptions. The exterior walls are not much defaced, but the interior is one confused mass of ruins.

The view from the top is wide and wonderfully interesting. It embraces the whole southern slope of the moun-

tains, which, though rocky, are covered from bottom to top with artificial terraces and fields divided by stone fences. . . . Wherever I turned my eyes, towns and villages were seen. . . . On the section of the plain between south and east I counted *fourteen* towns, all of them, so far as I could see with my telescope, habitable like Salcah, but *entirely deserted*. From this one spot I saw *upwards of thirty* deserted towns. . . . Not only is the country—plain and hill-side alike—chequered with fenced fields, but groves of fig-trees are here and there seen, and terraced vineyards still clothe the sides of some of the hills. These are neglected and wild, but *not fruitless*. Mahmood tells us that they produce great quantities of figs and grapes, which are rifled year after year by the Bedawin in their periodical raids. Nowhere on earth is there such a melancholy example of tyranny, rapacity, and misrule as here. Fields, pastures, vineyards, houses, villages, cities,—all alike deserted and waste. Even the few inhabitants that have hid themselves among the rocky fastnesses and mountain defiles drag out a miserable existence, oppressed by robbers of the desert on the one hand and robbers of the government on the other. . . .

I could not but remark, while wandering through the streets and lanes [of the city of Kureiyeh,—the Biblical Kerieth], that the private houses bear the marks of the most remote antiquity. The few towers and temples, which inscriptions show to have been erected in the first centuries of the Christian era, are modern in comparison with the colossal walls and massive stone doors of the private houses. The simplicity of their style, their low roofs, the ponderous blocks of roughly-hewn stone with which they are built, the great thickness of the walls, and the heavy slabs which form the ceilings,—all point to a period far earlier than the Roman age, and probably even



antecedent to the conquest of the country by the Israelites. Moses makes special mention of the strong cities of Bashan, and speaks of their high walls and gates. He tells us, too, in the same connection, that Bashan was called *the land of the giants* (or Rephaim); leaving us to conclude that the cities were built by giants.

Now the houses of Kerioth and other towns of Bashan appear to be just such dwellings as a race of giants would build. The walls, the roofs, but especially the ponderous gates, doors, and bars, are in every way characteristic of a period when architecture was in its infancy, when giants were masons, and when strength and security were the grand requisites. I measured a door in Kerioth: it was nine feet high, four and a half feet wide, and ten inches thick,—one solid slab of stone. I saw the folding doors of another town in the mountains still larger and heavier. Time produces little effect on such buildings as these. The heavy stone slabs of the roofs resting on the massive walls make the structure as firm as if built of solid masonry; and the black basalt used is almost as hard as iron. . . . [These houses] are, I believe, the only specimens in the world of the ordinary private dwellings of remote antiquity. The monuments designed by the genius and reared by the wealth of imperial Rome are fast mouldering to ruin in this land; temples, palaces, tombs, fortresses, are all shattered, or prostrate in the dust; but the simple, massive houses of the Rephaim are in many cases as perfect as if only completed yesterday.

## THE WONDERS OF NINEVEH.

AUSTEN HENRY LAYARD.

[Layard, the antiquarian to whom the world is so deeply indebted for his labors at Nineveh, was of English origin, but born in Paris in 1817. He visited Asia in 1840, and a few years afterwards made his celebrated discoveries at the site of the Assyrian capital. The story of his excavations was admirably told in his "Nineveh and its Remains." He returned in 1849 and made further excavations, described in a subsequent work. He was afterwards a member of Parliament, ambassador to Spain and to Constantinople, etc. The first excavations at Mosul, the site of Nineveh, had been made by M. Botta, the French consul, in 1842, and it was his partial success that induced Layard to enter upon the labor of excavation. The work of Botta had been on the mound of Khorsabad. Layard determined to attempt that of Nimroud. Leaving Mosul on the pretence that he was going on a boar-hunt, he proceeded to Nimroud, engaged some Arabs, and went to work. An ancient chamber was quickly excavated.]

IN the rubbish near the bottom of this chamber I found several ivory ornaments, on which were traces of gilding; among them was the figure of a man in long robes, carrying in one hand the Egyptian crux ansata, part of a crouching sphinx, and flowers designed with great taste and elegance. Awad, who had his own suspicions of the object of my search, which he could scarcely persuade himself was limited to mere stones, carefully collected all the scattered fragments of gold-leaf he could find in the rubbish; and, calling me aside in a mysterious and confidential fashion, produced them wrapped up in a piece of dingy paper.

"O Bey," said he, "Wallah! your books are right, and the Franks know that which is hid from the true believer.

Here is the gold, sure enough, and, please God, we shall find it all in a few days. Only don't say anything about it to those Arabs, for they are asses, and cannot hold their tongues. The matter will come to the ears of the pasha." The sheikh was much surprised, and equally disappointed, when I generously presented him with the treasures he had collected, and all such as he might hereafter discover.

[The story that gold had been found, however, reached Mosul, and the suspicious pasha obliged Layard to discontinue his work. A new governor was appointed in January, 1846, who gave him full permission to continue his labors. They were recommenced with energy, and many interesting inscriptions and sculptures soon discovered.]

On all these figures paint could be faintly distinguished, particularly on the hair, beard, eyes, and sandals. The slabs on which they were sculptured had sustained no injury, and could be without difficulty packed and moved to any distance. There could no longer be any doubt that they formed part of a chamber, and that to explore it completely I had only to continue along the wall, now partly uncovered.

On the morning following these discoveries I rode to the encampment of Sheikh Abd-ur-rahman, and was returning to the mound, when I saw two Arabs of his tribe urging their mares to the top of their speed. On approaching me they stopped. "Hasten, O Bey," exclaimed one of them; "hasten to the diggers, for they have found Nimrod himself. Wallah, it is wonderful, but it is true! we have seen him with our eyes. There is no God but God;" and both joining in this pious exclamation, they galloped off, without further words, in the direction of their tents.

On reaching the ruins, I descended into the new trench, and found the workmen, who had already seen me as I approached, standing near a heap of baskets and cloaks.

While Awad advanced, and asked for a present to celebrate the occasion, the Arabs withdrew the screen they had hastily constructed, and disclosed an enormous human head sculptured in full out of the alabaster of the country. They had uncovered the upper part of the figure, the remainder of which was still buried in the earth. I at once saw that the head must belong to a winged lion or bull, similar to those of Khorsabad and Persepolis. It was in admirable preservation. The expression was calm, yet majestic, and the outline of the features showed a freedom and knowledge of art scarcely to be looked for in the works of so remote a period. The cap had three horns, and, unlike that of the human-headed bulls hitherto found in Assyria, was rounded and without ornament at the top.

I was not surprised that the Arabs had been amazed and terrified at this apparition. It required no stretch of imagination to conjure up the most strange fancies. This gigantic head, blanched with age, thus rising from the bowels of the earth, might well have belonged to one of those fearful beings which are pictured in the traditions of the country, as appearing to mortals, slowly ascending from the regions below. One of the workmen, on catching the first glimpse of the monster, had thrown down his basket and run off towards Mosul as fast as his legs could carry him. I learned this with regret, as I anticipated the consequences.

While I was superintending the removal of the earth, which still clung to the sculpture, and giving directions for the continuation of the work, a noise of horsemen was heard, and presently Abd-ur-rahman, followed by half his tribe, appeared on the edge of the trench. As soon as the two Arabs had reached the tents, and published the wonders they had seen, every one mounted his mare and rode

to the mound, to satisfy himself of the truth of these inconceivable reports. When they beheld the head they all cried out together, "There is no God but God, and Mohammed is his Prophet!" It was some time before the sheikh could be prevailed upon to descend into the pit and convince himself that the image he saw was of stone.

"This is not the work of men's hands," exclaimed he, "but of those infidel giants of whom the Prophet, peace be with him! has said that they were higher than the tallest date-tree; this is one of the idols which Noah, peace be with him! cursed before the flood." In this opinion, the result of a careful examination, all the bystanders concurred. I now ordered a trench to be dug due south from the head, in the expectation of finding a corresponding figure, and before nightfall reached the object of my search about twelve feet distant.

[The figures, when uncovered, proved to be a pair of winged human-headed lions, the human shape extending to the waist.]

In one hand each figure carried a goat or stag, and in the other, which hung down by the side, a branch with three flowers. They formed a northern entrance into the chamber of which the lions previously described were the southern portal. I completely uncovered the latter, and found them to be entire. They were about twelve feet in height and the same number in length. The body and limbs were admirably portrayed; the muscles and bones, although strongly developed to display the strength of the animal, showed at the same time a correct knowledge of its anatomy and form. Expanded wings sprung from the shoulder and spread over the back; a knotted girdle, ending in tassels, encircled the loins. These magnificent specimens of Assyrian art were in perfect preservation; the most minute lines in the detail of the wings

and in the ornaments had been retained with their original freshness. Not a character was wanting in the inscriptions.

[Many more chambers were subsequently opened, the most important of the sculptures being carefully packed, floated on rafts down the Tigris, and shipped to England.]

On Christmas-day I had the satisfaction of seeing a raft, bearing twenty-three cases, in one of which was the obelisk [a profusely sculptured and inscribed shaft of black marble, seven feet high], floating down the river. I watched them until they were out of sight, and then galloped into Mosul to enjoy the festivities of the season, with the few Europeans whom duty or business had collected in this remote corner of the globe.

The northwest palace was naturally the most interesting portion of the ruins, and to it were principally directed my researches. I had satisfied myself beyond a doubt that it was the most ancient building yet explored in Assyria. Not having been exposed to a conflagration like other edifices, the sculptures, bas-reliefs, and inscriptions which it contained were still admirably preserved. When the excavations were resumed after Christmas, eight chambers had been discovered. There were now so many outlets and entrances that I had no trouble in finding new rooms and halls,—one chamber leading into another. By the end of the month of April I had explored almost the whole building, and had opened twenty-eight chambers cased with alabaster slabs. . . .

By the middle of May I had finished my work at Nimroud. My house was dismantled. The doors and windows, which had been temporarily fitted up, were taken out, and, with the little furniture that had been collected together, were placed on the backs of donkeys and camels to be carried to the town. The Arabs struck their tents and

commenced their march. I remained behind until every one had left, and then turned my back upon the deserted village. We were the last to quit the plains of Nimroud; and, indeed, nearly the whole country to the south of Mosul, as far as the Zab, became, after our departure, a wilderness.

[In 1849, Layard returned to Nineveh, in the interests of the British Museum, which had profited so greatly from the results of his former work. He now began a thorough excavation of the mound of Kouyunjik, and also resumed the explorations at Nimroud.]

By the end of November several entire chambers had been excavated at Kouyunjik, and many bas-reliefs of great interest had been discovered. The four sides of a hall had now been explored. In the centre of each was a grand entrance, guarded by colossal human-headed bulls. This magnificent hall was no less than one hundred and twenty-four feet in length by ninety in breadth, the longest sides being those to the north and south. It appears to have formed a centre, around which the principal chambers in this part of the palace were grouped. Its walls had been completely covered with the more elaborate and highly-finished sculptures. Unfortunately, all the bas-reliefs, as well as the gigantic monsters at the entrance, had suffered more or less from the fire which had destroyed the edifice; but enough of them still remained to show the subject, and even to enable me in many places to restore it entirely.

There can be no doubt that the king represented as superintending the building of the mounds and the placing of the colossal halls is Sennacherib himself, and that the sculptures celebrate the building at Nineveh of the great palace and its adjacent temples described in the inscriptions as the work of this monarch. The bas-reliefs were accompanied in most instances by short epigraphs in the



cuneiform characters, containing a description of the subject with the name of the city to which the sculptures were brought. The great inscriptions on the bulls at the entrances to Kouyunjik record, it would seem, not only historical events, but, with great minuteness, the manner in which the edifice itself was erected, its general plan, and the various materials employed in decorating the hall, chambers, and roofs. When completely deciphered they will perhaps enable us to restore, with some confidence, both the general plan and elevation of the building.

[The discoveries here were great, including six human figures of gigantic proportions, while at Nimroud two copper vessels were found, filled with small articles of art and utility. In this vicinity were heaped household utensils, arms, iron instruments, glass bowls, and articles in bronze and ivory. The royal throne stood in a corner of this chamber.]

Although it was utterly impossible, from the complete state of decay of the materials, to preserve any part of it entire, I was able, by carefully removing the earth, to ascertain that it resembled in shape the chair of state of the king as seen in the sculptures of Kouyunjik and Khor-sabad, and particularly that represented in the bas-reliefs already described, of Sennacherib receiving the captives and spoil after the conquest of the city of Lachish. With the exception of the legs, which appear to have been partly of ivory, it was of wood, cased or overlaid with bronze, as the throne of Solomon was of ivory overlaid with gold.

By the 28th of January the colossal lions forming the portal to the great hall in the northwest palace of Nimroud were ready to be dragged to the river-bank. The walls and their sculptured panelling had been removed from both sides of them, and they stood isolated in the midst of the ruins. We rode one calm cloudless night to

the mound, to look on them for the last time before they were taken from their old resting-places. The moon was at her full, and as we drew nigh to the edge of the deep wall of earth rising around them, her soft light was creeping over the stern features of the human heads, and driving before it the dark shadows which still clothed the lion forms.

One by one the limbs of the gigantic sphinxes emerged from the gloom, until the monsters were unveiled before us. I shall never forget that night, or the emotions which these venerable figures caused within me. A few hours more and they were to stand no longer where they had stood unscathed amidst the wrecks of man and his works for ages. It seemed almost sacrilege to tear them from their old haunts to make them a mere wonder-stock to the busy crowd of a new world. They were better suited to the desolation around them; for they had guarded the palace in its glory, and it was for them to watch over it in its ruin.

Sheikh Abd-ur-rahman, who had ridden with us to the mound, was troubled with no such reflections. He gazed listlessly at the grim images, wondered at the folly of the Franks, thought the night cold, and turned his mare towards his tents. We scarcely heeded his going, but stood speechless in the deserted portal, until the shadows again began to creep over its hoary guardians.

[Among the discoveries made, the most important was the opening of two small chambers at Kouyunjik which contained the remains of the royal library. Tablets of baked clay, some entire, but principally broken into fragments, lay on the floor to the height of a foot or more. They were covered with inscriptions in the cuneiform character.]

These documents appear to be of various kinds. Many are historical records of wars, and distant expeditions undertaken by the Assyrians; some seem to be royal decrees,

and are stamped with the name of a king, the son of Es-sarhaddon; others again, divided into parallel columns by horizontal lines, contain lists of the gods, and probably a register of offerings made in their temples. On one Dr. Hincks has detected a table of the value of certain cuneiform letters, expressed by certain alphabetical signs, according to various modes of using them,—a most important discovery; on another, apparently a list of the sacred days in each month; and on a third, what seems to be a calendar.

The adjoining chambers contained similar relics, but in far smaller numbers. Many cases were filled with these tablets before I left Assyria, and a vast number of them have been found, I understand, since my departure. A large collection of them is already deposited in the British Museum. We cannot overrate their value. They furnish us with materials for the complete decipherment of the cuneiform character, for restoring the language and history of Assyria, and for inquiring into the customs, sciences, and, we may perhaps even add, literature of its people. The documents that have thus been discovered at Nineveh probably exceed all that have yet been afforded by the monuments of Egypt.

[These documents have, indeed, proved of inestimable value. Many of them have been read since the date of Layard's publications, and they have in considerable measure restored to us the history and literature of Assyria and Babylonia. During the winter, Layard spent some time amid the extensive ruins of Babylon, and made some excavations, but with no important result. By the spring of 1852 the funds appropriated for his excavations were so nearly exhausted, and the hope of important finds so reduced, that he ceased his labors, and left Mosul on his return to Europe, April 28, 1852.]

## THE PALACE AND JEWELS OF THE SHAH.

ARTHUR ARNOLD.

[The author of the following selection left London in 1875 for a tour through Russia and Persia. The results of this journey are given in his work, "Through Persia by Caravan," a well-told story of acute and intelligent observation. He has written, also, "From the Levant" and other works of travel. We give here a description of the main audience-hall of the Shah, in the palace at Teheran, a room of about sixty by twenty-five feet in dimensions, open at the sides, its roof, of mingled Swiss and Chinese character, supported by richly-gilded twisted columns, the ceiling set with facets of looking-glass. Near the entrance is a very large picture, containing a portrait of the Emperor of Austria.]

It is at the opposite end of this saloon that the "Shadow of God" sits on his heels, or stands to receive the envoys of Europe. But the Shah's movable throne was not occupying the central niche. There, in that place of honor, we were permitted to gaze upon one of the characteristic feats, perhaps the greatest art-work, of his majesty's long reign. This is an eighteen-inch globe, covered with jewels from the North Pole to the extremities of the tripod in which this gemmed sphere is placed. The story goes that his majesty bought—more probably accepted, at all events was in possession of—a heap of jewels for which he could find no immediate purpose. Nothing could add to the lustre of his crown of diamonds, which is surmounted by the largest ruby we have ever seen, including those of her majesty and the Emperors of Germany and Russia. He had the "Sea of Light," a diamond but little inferior to the British Koh-i-noor, the "Mountain of Light." He had coats embroidered with diamonds, with emeralds, with

rubies, with pearls, and with garnets; he had jewelled swords and daggers without number; so, possibly because his imperial mind was turned towards travel, the Shah ordered this globe to be constructed, covered with gems,—the overspreading sea to be of emeralds, and the kingdoms of the world to be distinguished by jewels of different color. The Englishman notes with pride and gratification that England flashes in diamonds; and a Frenchman may share the feeling, for France glitters illustrious as the British isles, being set out in the same most costly gems. The dominion of the Shah's great neighbor, the brand-new Empress of India, is marked with amethysts; while torrid Africa blazes against the literally emerald sea, a whole continent of rubies.

Near the globe, side by side with a French couch, worth perhaps a hundred francs, stands the Shah's throne, which is, of course, arranged for sitting after the manner of the country. It occupies a space almost as large as Mr. Spurgeon's or Mr. Ward Beecher's pulpit; for the occupants of this throne are fond of space, and occasionally have a kalia of wonderful dimensions with them upon the splendid carpet, which is fringed with thousands of pearls. The embroidered bolster upon which the Shah rests his back or arm is sewn with pearls. Behind his majesty's head is a "sun," all glittering with jewels, supported at the corners with birds in plumage of the same most expensive material.

On the other side of the niche in which the globe stands there is a table grimy with dust and extremely incongruous, the top inlaid with the beautiful work of Florence, and a model, in Sienna marble, of the Arch of Titus, both gifts from his Holiness, the infallible Pope. Near these presents, in a recess, and in a very common wooden frame, is a portrait of the late Sir Henry Havelock; and

not far off a time-piece with "running water" and a nodding peacock, a gift from the defunct East India Company in the days when Shahs received such toys as pleased them, and were not considered eligible as knights of the great orders of European courts.

At a short distance is another and a much older hall, still more exposed to public view. In this pavilion, which is built to cover and give increased dignity to the ancient throne of the Shah, the arrangements are wholly Persian. The marble floor is raised not more than three feet above the pavement of a large oblong court-yard, up the broad paths of which the sons of Iran throng to make salaam before their monarch. The Shah sits in the motionless majesty of an Oriental potentate, upon a high throne built of the alabaster-like greenish marble of Yezd, the platform being supported upon animals having the same queer resemblance to lions which is noticed in the supporters of the great fountain of the Alhambra at Grenada.

The ceiling of this old reception-hall in the Shah's palace at Teheran is fashioned in stalactites, like the ceilings in the ruins of the famous Oriental palace in Spain, and then covered with pieces of looking-glass, which, if the work were not bad and the glass were cleaned, would have a very glittering effect. In this pavilion, the background of which is hung with a few pictures in frames of looking-glass, including a portrait of a singularly handsome young Englishman, formerly attached to the British legation, the Shah reclines upon the marble platform of his throne, on those very great occasions when the hundred and fifty yards of the enclosure before it is filled with a moving crowd of his subjects, to whom he is the impersonation of law and authority. For their reverent homage he makes no sign of gratification or acknowledgment. The "proper thing" for his majesty to do when thus exhibiting himself in

solemn state, is to regard their expressions of loyalty and devotion as something far beneath his notice ; and probably the imperial gaze passing over their heads is now and then fixed upon the coarse mosaic on the wall at the end of the court-yard, showing how Rustem, the "Arthur," the legendary hero, of Persia, destroyed the White Devil,—an encounter, it should be remembered, of authenticity as respectable as that of St. George and the familiar Dragon which is stamped upon so many of the current coins of England. . . .

From the great halls of state the commander-in-chief, the minister of commerce, and other Persian grandees led our party to an orange house, through the centre of which ran the stream of clear water I have noticed before as passing beneath the saloon of the gilded columns. On the marble pavement beside this running water there were chairs and couches arranged, upon which his highness invited us to be seated. Snowy sherbet and warm tea were then served, and afterwards we proceeded to a more homely saloon than those we had seen. The architecture of this room, a succession of arcades, again carried our thoughts to Spain, in its resemblance to the mosque, now the cathedral, of Cordova. It was a large oblong apartment, the walls colored green, with raised decorations in white plaster, the room containing three rows of arches. On the walls were a great many pictures very irregularly hung. . . . At one end of the room was an object in strange contrast with the trumpery by which it was surrounded. This was an awkward, ugly chair of state studded with jewels, having a footstool, before which stood a cat-like representation of a lion, each eye a single emerald, and the body rugged with a coating of other precious stones. It was so entirely in keeping with the mixture we had everywhere observed, that the stand upon



which this chair was placed should be studded with white-headed German nails worth about twopence a dozen!

In another room we saw the imperial jewels, which, by special command of his highness the Sipar Salar, were laid out upon tables for our inspection. I fancy that no sovereign in Europe has a regalia of equal value. The Shah is especially rich in diamonds of large, but not the very largest, size. He has a great number of which the surface is as large as a silver sixpence. The imperial crown is topped with a ruby which is probably the largest in the world. The "Sea of Light," a flat, ill-cut diamond, mounted in a semi-barbaric ornament, is inferior to the great jewel worn by the Empress of India.

The display of the Shah's riches in precious stones included, of necessity, the exhibition of several coats, the fronts of which are studded and embroidered with jewels. Several of these became well known during the Shah's tour, when they were shown to the admiring gaze of European cities. There, too, was the wonderful aigrette, which the Shah's brow sustained during the grandest of the London entertainments, and beside these garments lay a number of jewelled swords and daggers. From the dazzling spectacle of this display we passed again to the orange house, where coffee and pipes were served, after which we took leave of the Shah's ministers.

The Shah is of the Kajar tribe,—a dynasty yet young, the annals of which have been marked by great cruelties. . . . The Shah himself is not unpopular, and is believed to have at heart the welfare of his subjects. Persians frequently speak of him as in personal character the best among the governing men of the country, and they are never shy in talking of their rulers. If there is any tempering in the Persian despotism, it is that of abuse of all who surround the despot. His majesty recently issued an

order that a "Box of Justice" should be fixed in a prominent place in all the large towns for the reception of petitions, which were to be forwarded direct to himself. But the oppressors found means to thwart this innocent plan by setting a watch over the boxes and upon those who wished to forward petitions.

[In truth, the people are plundered freely by the officials, even the poorest of the peasants having to pay dearly for the privilege of living. The small money-lenders are usually soldiers, and the debtor well knows that any default in payment will be followed by a plunder of all he has worth taking.]

There is a parade every morning in Teheran. It takes place in a dusty enclosure near the meidan, or principal square. We were present on several occasions at these parades, where European drill-instructors vainly labored. The Persian soldiers are fine in physique, though they look more awkward, I fancy, even than Japanese in European hats, tunics, and trousers. In England one is apt to think that militiamen display every possible awkwardness in wearing an infantry hat and scarlet tunic, but the Persian soldiers beat the rawest of our militiamen. Some wear the hat on the back of their heads like a fez, others at the side; with some it falls over their eyes. Their drill is wretched. Their officers are probably the worst part of the force. This is the special weakness and inferiority of all Oriental armies. I saw a Persian officer box the ears of a private on the parade-ground, rushing into the ranks to execute this summary punishment.

There is a reason for the deficiency of the rank and file in drill. No soldier comes to parade who can obtain work in the city. The consequence is that the *personnel* of each skeleton regiment is changed every morning, and the unhappy drill-instructor has never before him the same body of men. But this immunity from service must be paid for,

and the absent privates devote a portion of their earnings to their officers, who, from their colonel to the corporal, divide the fund contributed in respect of this temporary desertion.

[Such is the general character of despotic government. Peculation exists everywhere, public service of all kinds is wretched, and the despot usually remains in absolute ignorance of, or helpless acquiescence in, this disregard of his orders and interests.]

Every evening in Ramadan, of which there remained some days after our arrival in Teheran, the Sipar Salar entertained a regiment at dinner. The repast was served by candle-light in the straight street between the gate of the citadel and the taziah. Two lines of thick felt (*nummud*) were laid equidistant from the centre of the street, leaving about a yard of the bare road between them. Shortly before the gun-fire, his highness's guests were seated in long files upon the felt. After the gun had boomed permission, huge dishes, one to every four soldiers, each piled high with rice and stewed meat, were placed in the centre of the road, and were at once hidden from view by the overhanging heads of the hungry men, every one hard at work with his fingers. Under such circumstances, the nearer the mouth can be brought to the dish the larger is the share which can be pushed into it. Close over each dish four heads were laid together, and not a word was uttered till the platters were empty.

For the officers there was spread a wide cloth between the carpets, and a little adornment was attempted in the way of bouquets placed between the lighted candles, which were protected by Russian bell-glasses, and shone like glow-worms down the long street. In company with a number of the British legation I was looking on, when Jehungur Khan, the adjutant-general of the Persian army, one of the stoutest and most courteous men in the country, asked

us to join the soldiers in the fruit and tea which followed the pillau. We sat down, doing all we could to get rid of our legs, which had an awkward, natural tendency to cross the dining-table. My immediate neighbors were officers of the Shah's irregular cavalry, gentlemen wearing turbans almost as broad as their shoulders, and with a very Bashi-bazoukish look.

At that time a story was in circulation with reference to this Jehungur Khan, which is very possibly untrue, but, being accepted by many as correct, is curiously illustrative of Persian government. It was said that one of the courtiers who owed him a grudge had told the Shah that he (the adjutant-general) had saved eight thousand tomans out of a work in hand, and that he wished to present them to his majesty. The king of kings is much addicted to presents, and, as usual, graciously signified his willingness to accept, and Jehungur Khan had to produce the money, which he had *not* saved. . . .

In the quarter of the town near the legations there are several walled gardens, and one of these is devoted to zoology. We were about to apply for admission, when an Englishman recommended us to remain outside. The caging of the few beasts, he said, was quite uncertain. The lion was sometimes observed taking an airing, roaming where he pleased within the walls, and the bear had been seen from outside climbing a plane-tree. One is named the Shah's "English" garden, and from this his majesty lately received, with much effusion, a bunch of radishes as a present from his English gardener.

If it were not for these gardens the appearance of Teheran would indeed be miserable. We mounted upon one of the highest houses, from which we could overlook the city. Parallelograms of mud varied with cupolas of mud, representing the roofs of the houses, are the general fea-

tures, the long succession of mud roofs being now and then broken by the taller plane-trees and the cypresses of a garden. But the landscape is charming, and even the Himalayas do not present grander elevations than may be seen from Teheran; the loftiest peak of the Elburz Mountains in sight being that of Demavend, an extinct volcano, the top of which is not less than eighteen thousand five hundred feet above the sea-level. The conical summit of this high mountain is covered with perpetual snow, and some of the peaks near Demavend are not of much inferior altitude. . . .

At the house of every European of position in Teheran there is a permanent guard of soldiers, who hurriedly forsake their pipe, or game of cards upon the dust, to present arms upon the arrival of any visitor. The doors of these houses are generally open throughout the day; and as Persians regard an open door as an invitation to enter, and the rooms are never locked, and rarely closed with anything more obstructive than a cotton curtain, it is necessary there should be some guard in the door-way. Europeans talk much of the dishonesty of Persians, but our experience did not confirm the bad opinion. Our suite of rooms in this mud-built house, which had formerly belonged to the French envoy, opened upon a large, square garden enclosed by a mud wall, ruined and broken down in three or four places, by which any one might enter. Our doors and windows had no fastenings, and by either it was never difficult to enter the rooms from the garden. On the other side was a court-yard, with a fountain and a few trees in the centre; and this, except for the soldiers and servants, who lay about in the passages connecting it with the crowded street, was quite open, yet we never suffered any loss from theft. . . .

To my mind the most interesting part of Teheran is to

be found in the bazaars, which the Europeans of the legations very rarely enter, and their ladies never. The men appear to regard the shoving about to which one must more or less submit in the narrow ways of the bazaars as a serious infringement upon the dignity of their position, and the ladies consider a visit to the bazaars as simply impossible. The sight of an unveiled woman has no doubt a tendency to make Persians use language which cannot but be taken as insulting; and if Englishmen in their company are acquainted with Persian slang, they are likely enough to have a quarrel or two on hand in passing through a bazaar. Ignorance of the vernacular has unquestionably some advantages in Persia.

A long enclosure separates the buildings of the palace from the bazaar. There are in this open space two large tanks, at which camels, horses, mules, and men are always drinking. Upon a high stand a very long, huge cannon is placed, which is said to have been captured in India and brought as a trophy from Delhi; but this is probably untrue.

---

## THE TOMBS AND PALACES OF CLASSIC PERSIA.

ARTHUR ARNOLD.

[Any account of Persia seems to necessitate some attention to the relics of classic Persia, of which modern Persia is but the base shadow, some description of those striking ruins which are all that remain to show what Persia was in her pride, and to throw into still stronger relief the degradation into which she has fallen. From Arthur Arnold's "Through Persia by Caravan" we select a description of these remarkable architectural remains.]

At Murghaub we approach the grandest relics of the time when Persia was the great empire of Cyrus, of Da-



THE RUINS OF PERSEPOLIS.





rius, and of Xerxes. At three hours' ride from the village the plain is fringed with low hills, among which stands, close by the path from Ispahan to Shiraz, the tomb of Cyrus. Near this we may see rising from the snow all that remains of his city of Passargardæ, where the inscription "I am Cyrus, the King, the Achæmenian," may be read more than once upon the ruins. It is partly from the proximity of these unquestionably genuine ruins, and also from the dignity and obviously funereal character of this massive mausoleum, that it has become accepted as the original resting-place of the body of the great king. . . .

We dismounted at the tomb of Cyrus, and walked about in the snow, while Kazem made a fire, preparatory to the manufacture of an omelet. As a rule Oriental monuments owe much to the grandeur of their situation; and this is no exception. They are set in solitude; they have a surrounding of space, which is all their own. When the thought of the traveller is arrested by so vast a retrospect, he becomes more impressed by the natural grandeur of the desert; and there seems to be a hush, a natural silence of the air, which moves around these ancient monuments as if Nature herself were paying homage at these shrines of departed greatness. For more than two thousand four hundred years this tomb has defied the levelling hand of Time; and another period of not less duration may apparently be sustained without further injury.

The tomb was originally surrounded by columns, set probably in a double row, with a covered space between. But none are left standing. Most of the columns have disappeared entirely; some are prostrate; and of only a few is there a broken fragment remaining in position. These columns were not colossal, probably not more than eighteen feet high; and the space enclosed is hardly more than a

hundred and fifty feet across. In the centre of this space stands the tomb, approached by a pyramid of steps, about forty-five feet square at the base. These steps, the rise of each being two feet, are composed of large blocks of marble, the color of which has darkened to a yellowish brown. Upon a platform about eighteen feet from the ground, and twenty feet square, stands the tomb,—a small, solid, unadorned building, composed of a few blocks and huge slabs of marble; the whole being scarcely more than fifteen feet high from the platform to the peak of the marble roof. In shape it exactly resembles a child's "Noah's Ark," with the boat arrangement cut off. At one end there is a low, massive door-way, through which, if the remains of Cyrus really rested there, they were carried, to be deposited upon the floor of this little temple. By all writers, including our own Professor Rawlinson, this is accepted as the resting-place of the great king; and it is believed that his body was placed here in a golden coffin. . . .

I have never seen in any Mohammedan people an exhibition of the slightest desire for the protection of the great historic monuments of which they have been or are possessed. The pashas of Stamboul looked on unconcerned while the marbles of ancient Greece were burned to make lime for building cattle-sheds. Were it in ruins, they would as soon burn the ruins of Santa Sophia as the timbers of an old man-of-war; and for the Persians, these great ruins, which should be the pride and most sacred treasure of their country, are nothing more than useless heaps of tumbled stone. If any man needed lime in the neighborhood, or stone to build a caravansérai, he would probably use the stones of Cyrus's tomb or the columns of the Hall of Darius; and these invaluable records and memorials of a period concerning which very much more than our present knowledge might be gathered by excavation and research

upon the spot, are regarded with no more concern or attention than the bones of a dead camel.

[From this location the travellers pursued the road to Shiraz, which led past the ruins of the ancient city of Persepolis.]

The natural formation of the country in the neighborhood of these illustrious ruins is very suggestive and imposing. Journeying from Ispahan, the plain, at one end of which stand the remains of Persepolis, is approached through a vast natural gate-way, in which run the road and the river Pulvar, and of which the pillars are strangely shaped, and the many-colored mountains of the hardest limestone. The table-rock, or mountain, on the right is very remarkable; and in this entrance, which is too wide to be called a gorge, are found the massive ruins of the city of Istakr, which one has not patience to examine carefully when so near to the far more interesting remains of Persepolis. At Istakr the road winds to the left round the bold spur of the mountains which forms the background of Persepolis.

On approaching the ruins of the halls and temples and tombs of Darius and his descendants, the traveller, recalling perhaps to mind all he has seen at Baalbec, at Pæstum, and upon the Athenian Acropolis, will surely be struck with a sense of disappointment, because there is here no outline of ancient hall or temple, no realizable structure in which he can place the form of Darius or Xerxes. There is nothing more than remains of the temples of Jupiter in Athens and in Rome,—a few solitary or connected columns and the massive stones of some part of an ancient hall or propylæum. The distant aspect of the ruins of Persepolis will fall below anticipation as much as the results of their examination in detail will exceed expectation. In fact, the most interesting ruins in the world, because they are covered

and adorned with eloquent records of the past, these stones are not arranged for a *coup-d'œil*.

The mule-path passes close to the side of the mountain from which the platform of Persepolis is projected into the plain of Merodasht. Through this plain runs the river which in classic times was called Araxes, afterwards known as Bundamir, or Bendemeer, as Moore has called it in "Lalla Rookh." Standing upon the platform of Persepolis, the view across the river is uninterrupted for more than twenty miles. The extreme height of this platform where it faces the plain is about forty-five feet, its length from north to south about fifteen hundred feet, and the meagre depth from east to west about eight hundred feet.

The grandest work at Persepolis is in connection with this platform. The masonry of the supporting walls of the platform is irregular, the blocks, mostly of huge size, presenting angles of every degree. The surface of this immense work is as true and sound as it was two thousand years ago. But it is not in this that the glory of the platform rests. At its greatest height the platform is ascended from the plain by a staircase which, for the magnificence of its proportions and the beauty of construction, deserves to have been regarded as one of the wonders of the world. The staircase at Persepolis has had no equal in ancient or modern times. Compared with this, a work probably of the time of Darius, the marble stairs which lead to the Parthenon are insignificant, and the imperial steps in the Roman Coliseum barbarous. A regiment of cavalry, ten abreast, could ride easily up the double flight of the Persepolitan staircase. The steps, which appear to be composed of the hardest syenite, are twenty-two feet wide; each step rises only three and a half inches, and has a tread of fifteen inches. In some places the blocks of the masonry in the staircase are so

large that three or four steps have been hewed out of the same piece of stone.

We little thought when, in spite of the timid counsel of Mr. Erskine, then British minister at Athens, we passed a day upon the Plain of Marathon, that a few years afterwards we should stand among the ruins of the Hall of Darius, to which he probably returned after that unsuccessful expedition against the Greek; or that when we stood in sight of that splendid landscape, near where

“A king stood on the rocky brow  
That looks o’er sea-girt Salamis,”

we should afterwards enter the magnificent ruin of the Propylæum of this King of Xerxes at Persepolis. It is this building which stood at the top of the grand staircase, and the most massive of the ruins upon the platform at Persepolis are those of this edifice. Upon the piers there are inscriptions in cuneiform letters, which as clearly as the winged bulls above these writings testify the relationship between the Assyrians of Nineveh and the Medes of Persepolis. The inscription is the same on each pier, and is written in three languages. It has been translated by Sir Henry Rawlinson into the following:

“The great god, Ahura-mazda (Ormazd); he it is who has given (made) this world, who has given mankind, who has made Xerxes king, both king of the people and law-giver of the people. I am Xerxes the king, the great king, the king of kings, the king of the many-peopled countries, the supporter also of the great world, the son of King Darius the Achæmenian. Says Xerxes the king, by the grace of Ormazd I have made this gate of entrance (or this public portal), there is many another noble work besides (or in) this Persepolis which I have executed, and which my father has executed. Whatsoever noble works

are to be seen, we have executed all of them by the grace of Ormazd. Says Xerxes the king, may Ormazd protect me and my empire. Both that which has been executed by me and that which has been executed by my father, may Ormazd protect it."

This is repeated twelve times in all; and, looking upon the original with Sir Henry's translation in one's mind, it is surprising how so much can be conveyed in so few letters. Not much more than a fourth of the space which would be required for this inscription in English is occupied by the cuneiform letters. . . .

Upon the inner sides of the massive stones of this "public portal" are sculptured in low-relief the massive forms of winged bulls, some with human, others with bovine, heads. The largest of these quadrupeds have the human head, covered with a tiara, and on the shoulders wings, similar in all points to those which Mr. Layard introduced to the world from Nineveh.

Upon this vast platform at Persepolis there are remains of at least five important buildings,—four lying to the right of the Propylæum of Xerxes, and no two of them being precisely upon the same level. The first of these important buildings is the Propylæum; and near that a staircase (as elegant in construction, though much smaller than the grand flights of stairs rising from the plain to the platform) leads to the level of the building known as the Great Hall of Xerxes. This name "Hall" is given in ignorance of its real object and design. . . .

We can see that the columns which supported the portico of the Great Hall of Xerxes were of marble. Those which remain are crowned with capitals composed of two bulls' heads, placed neck to neck, forming an excellent rest for the entablature. These columns are fluted, and have upon their pedestals that ornamentation which was so long



considered a Greek invention,—the honeysuckle, with the bud of the locust; in fact, the decoration known everywhere as “the Greek honeysuckle.”

In the north portion of this Great Hall there is still more striking evidence of the debt which the perfection of architecture in Greece owes to Persia, to Assyria, and possibly to Egypt. In the capitals of these columns there is an elongated or double volute, almost identical in figure with that which is seen upon the later buildings of Greece; while upon the walls of door-ways there are sculptures, truly Oriental, of kings on thrones or on foot, attended by slaves holding the parasol of state, or the fly-chaser, equally an emblem of royal dignity. By the Persians this hall is called “Chehil Minar,” or “Forty Columns,” which is, in fact, a common name for any columned building of grand dimensions in Persia. The shabby old pavilion at Ispahan, with twenty tall columns of wood, set with grimy mirrors, is called “Chehil Minar”. . . .

The angular sides of the staircase leading to the Great Hall of Xerxes are filled in with very powerful sculptures in low-relief, in which an animal of enormous strength, with much resemblance to a lion, has fixed its teeth and claws into the hind-quarters of a bull, which fills the higher angle of the space by rearing and turning its uplifted head in helpless anguish from its devourer. . . . It is noticeable in the buildings of Persepolis, as compared with the Parthenon, that there is nothing resembling the continuous action displayed in the processions upon the frieze of the Greek building. At Persepolis, upon the sides of the staircase and in other places, there are processions; but, as a rule, one figure is exactly like the next; there is no connected action. The modern ornamentation of Teheran is like that of Persepolis in this respect: a soldier occupies a panel, another soldier of the same pattern is seen in the next, and so on.

The greatest of the buildings at Persepolis, the ruins of which are known as those of "the Hall of a Hundred Columns," stood behind the Great Hall of Xerxes. The bases of the columns and part of the outer walls remain. We can trace the regular positions of the columns, but cannot decide whether, being of wood, they have perished; or, being of stone, have been carried off for the adornment of some mosque or palace. They were certainly not very large. The area covered by this building was considerable; but neither this nor any of the buildings of Persepolis could have had anything like the grand proportions of the Temple of Jupiter at Athens. . . .

The floor of the Hall of a Hundred Columns is, for the most part, buried deep under rubbish, the washings of ages from the neighboring mountains. Against the stoutest blocks of the richly sculptured walls this detritus lies undisturbed, concealing sometimes the legs of a winged bull, at others the lower garments of a king, and how much besides which the passing traveller cannot see nor guess. What new lights for history, what treasures of antiquity, may be lying within two or three feet of the surface in these neglected ruins! In the walls of this hall there are deep recesses or niches, the likeness of which is invariably met with in every modern Persian home.

That portion of the platform farthest from the great staircase and the Propylæum of Xerxes is occupied, first, with the Palace of Darius, and, last, with the Palace of Xerxes, and in the far background, in the side of the mountain, originally approached by steps, is the tomb of Darius. Above the small door-way, which lets into a cave hewed from the solid rock, the face of the mountain is smoothed and sculptured. In the foreground of this work of ancient art is the crowned figure of the king, and at the opposite end, on the same level, an altar with fire burning

on it. Above this altar is the round full orb of the sun; and, hovering in mid-air, between the sun and the monarch, is [in Professor Rawlinson's opinion] the emblematic representation of Ahura-mazda, the "good" god of the Medes, the Ormazd of the inscription of Xerxes. The figure is that of a man crowned and robed like King Darius, his feet unsupported, his body passed through a ring, which connects a pair of vast wings. . . .

It was only in obedience to the setting sun, the god of the builders of Persepolis, that we reluctantly turned our backs upon the tomb of Darius and descended by the grand staircase to the plain. May the sun shine upon that, the noblest work of Persepolis, in all its present completeness, until it shall be in the East as it is in the West, and there shall be no more fear of ignorance accomplishing the ruin of the finest ascent ever made by human hands. . . .

It is probable that [formerly] the plain across which we rode towards the stream of the river Araxes, or Bendemeer, was not treeless, arid, and waste as at present. We have, indeed, good evidence that there, as in many other places, Persia has gone backward in production. Chardin, the French traveller, to whom the world has been so much indebted for its knowledge of Persia, says of this plain of Merodasht, that it is "*fertile, riche, abondante, belle, et délicieuse.*" When we passed over it in the present year it produced nothing but a few scrubby thorns, nibbled by the goats of the village of Kinara, to which our steps were directed.

## NAUTCH DANCERS AND HINDOO ACTORS.

ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS.

[Few writers have described more attractively life in the East than Mrs. Leonowens, whose unusual experience as governess at the court of Siam gave her unwonted opportunities for the study of life and manners in that region. Her works include "The English Governess at the Siamese Court," "The Romance of the Harem," and "Life and Travel in India," from the last named of which we select a description of the home entertainments of the rich in Bombay. The travellers had been invited to the house of one Baboo Ram Chunder, a wealthy Hindoo, and were received in a spacious pavilion, with a fountain and garden in the centre.]

THE pavilion itself was decorated in the Oriental style, hung with kinkaub (or gold-wrought) curtains and peacocks' feathers; the floors were inlaid with mosaics of brilliant colors; the roofs and pillars were decorated with rich gold mouldings; and the whole would have been very effective but for the *mélange* of European ornaments that were disposed around on the walls, tables, and shelves,—clocks, antique pictures, statues, celestial and terrestrial globes, and a profusion of common glassware of the most brilliant colors.

Ram Chunder, a young man not over thirty, with remarkably courteous manners, with that refinement and delicacy which are the distinguishing characteristics of a high-bred Hindoo, rose and bowed before us, touching his forehead with his folded hands, and then placed us on his right hand. In person he was rather stout, with peculiarly fine eyes and a benevolent expression of countenance, though he was darker in complexion than most of the Brahmans. His dress on this occasion was unusually rich

and strikingly picturesque. He wore trousers of a deep crimson satin; over this a long white muslin *angraka*, or tunic, reaching almost to the knees; over this again he wore a short vest of purple velvet embroidered with gold braid. A scarf of finest cashmere was bound around his waist, in the folds of which there shone the jewelled hilt of a dagger. On his head was a white turban of stupendous size encircled with a string of large pearls; on his feet were European stockings and a pair of antique Indian slippers embroidered with many-colored silks and fine seed-pearls.

Thus attired, he was a gorgeous figure, and, like a true high-born Hindoo, he sat quietly in his place, except that every now and then he rose and bowed with folded hands to each guest as he entered and pointed out their places, reseating himself quietly and simply. There was no sign of bustle or expectation, nor any conversation to speak of. In the course of the evening about twenty native and two or three European gentlemen were assembled in the pavilion. The Europeans were on the right, the native gentlemen on the left, and Ram Chunder in the centre. No native ladies were visible, but from the sounds of female voices behind the curtain it was evident they were not far off.

Richly-dressed native pages, stationed at the back of each guest, waved to and fro perfumed punkahs of peacock and ostrich feathers. After the usual ceremony of passing around to the guests sherbet in golden cups and *pauv suparee*, or betel-leaf and the areca-nut done up in gold-leaf, the performance began.

A herald dressed like a Hindoo angel, with wings, tail, and beak of a bird and the body of a young boy, announced with a peculiar cry, half natural and half bird-like, the presence of the Rajpoot athletes, and in stepped some ten men, their daggers gleaming in the dim light of the pavil-

ion, which flickered on the gravelled space in front and barely lighted the surrounding garden, in the centre of which stood a fountain. The Rajpoots were in the prime of life, displaying great symmetry of form and development of muscular power. Their heads were closely shaven, with the exception of a long lock of hair bound in a knot at the top of their heads; their dress consisted of a pair of red silk drawers descending half-way to the knee and bound tightly around the waist with a scarf of many colors.

The wrestlers advanced, performing a sort of war-dance; they disposed of their daggers by putting them in their topknots; they then *salââmed* before the audience and began the contest. Each slapped violently the inside of his arms and thighs; then, at a given signal, each seized his opponent by the waist. One placed his forehead against the other's breast; they then struggled, twisted, and tossed each other about, showing great skill and adroitness in keeping their feet and warding off blows. Suddenly, with a peculiar jerk, one of the wrestlers almost at the same moment dashed his opponent to the ground, and, drawing forth his dagger, stood flourishing it over the fallen victim. At this juncture a strain of music wild but tender swept from the farther end of the pavilion, seemingly given forth to arrest the premeditated thrust of the exultant victor.

They listen with heads slightly turned to one side; presently their grim, blood-thirsty expressions give place to looks of delight and wonder. All at once their faces break into smiles; simultaneously they drop their uplifted daggers, release their knees from the breasts of their prostrate foes, stoop, and taking a little earth from the gravelled walk, scatter it over their heads as a sign that the victor himself is vanquished, *salââm* to the spectators, and retire amid deafening shouts of applause.

After this the musicians struck up some lively Hindoo

airs, and at length the heavy curtains from one side of the pavilion curled up like a lotus flower at sunset, and there appeared a long line of girls advancing in a measured step and keeping time to the music. They stood on a platform almost facing us. Some of them were extraordinarily beautiful, one girl in particular. The face was of the purest oval, the features regular, the eyes large, dark, and almond-shaped, the complexion pale olive, with a slight blush of the most delicate pink on the cheeks, and the mouth was half pouting and almost infantile in its round curves, but with an expression of dejection and sorrow lingering about the corners that told better than words of weariness of the life to which she was doomed. For my part, it was difficult for me to remove my eyes from that pensive and beautiful face. Every now and then I found myself trying to picture her strange life, wondering who she was and how her parents could ever have had the heart to doom her to such a profession.

The Nautchnees, or dancing-girls, of whom there were no less than eighteen, were all dressed in that exquisite Oriental costume peculiar to them, each one in a different shade or in distinct colors, but so carefully chosen that this mass of color harmonized with wonderful effect. First, they wore bright-colored silk vests and drawers that fitted tightly to the body and revealed a part of the neck, arms, and legs; a full, transparent petticoat attached low down almost on the hips, leaving an uncovered margin all around the form from the waist of the bodice to where the skirt was secured on the hips; over this a saree of some gauze-like texture bound tightly over the whole person, the whole so draped as to encircle the figure like a halo at every point, and, finally, thrown over the head and drooping over the face in a most bewitching veil. The hair was combed smoothly back and tied in a knot behind,



while on the forehead, ears, neck, arms, wrists, ankles, and toes were a profusion of dazzling ornaments.

With head modestly inclined, downcast eyes, and clasped hands, they stood silent for some little time in strong relief against a wall fretted with fantastic Oriental carvings. The herald again gave the signal for the music to strike up. A burst of wild Oriental melody flooded the pavilion, and all at once the Nautchnees started to their feet. Poised on tiptoe, with arms raised aloft over their heads, they began to whirl and float and glide about in a maze of rhythmic movement, fluttering and quivering and waving before us like aspen-leaves moved by a strong breeze. It must have cost them years of labor to have arrived at such ease and precision of movement. The dance was a miracle of art, and all the more fascinating because of the rare beauty of the performers.

Then came the cup-dance, which was performed by the lovely girl who had so captivated my fancy. She advanced with slow and solemn step to the centre of the platform, and taking up a tier of four or five cups fitting close into one another, she placed this tier on her head and immediately began to move her arms, head, and feet in such gently undulating waves that one imagined the cups, which were all the time balanced on her head, were floating about her person, and seemingly everywhere except where she so dexterously poised and maintained them. This dance was concluded by a cup being filled with sherbet and placed in the middle of the platform. Removing the cups from her head, the dancer, her eyes glowing, her breast heaving, swept towards the filled cup as if drawn to it by some spell, round and round, now approaching, now retreating, till finally, as if unable to resist the enchantment, she gave one long sweep around it, and, clasp- ing her arms tightly behind her, lay full length upon the

pavement, and, taking up with her lips the brimming cup, drained its contents without spilling a drop. Then, putting it down empty, she rose with the utmost grace and bowed her head before us, her arms still firmly clasped behind her. The grace, beauty, and elegance of her movements were incomparable; the spectators were too deeply interested even to applaud her. She retired amid a profound and significant silence to her place.

Presently a tall, slim, graceful girl took her place on the platform with a gay smile on her face. An attendant fastened on her head a wicker wheel about three feet in diameter; it was bound firmly to the crown of her head, and all around it were cords placed at equal distances, each having a slipknot secured by means of a glass bead. In her left hand she held a basket of eggs. When the music struck up once more she took an egg, inserted it into a knot, and gave it a peculiarly energetic little jerk, which somehow fastened it firmly in its place. As soon as all the eggs were thus firmly bound in the slipknots round the wheel on her head, she gave a rapid whirl, sent them flying around, while she preserved the movement with her feet, keeping time to the music. Away she whirled, the eggs revolving round her. The slightest false movement would bring them together in a general crash. After continuing this about a quarter of an hour, she seized a cord with a swift but sure grasp, detached from it the inserted egg, managing the slipknot with marvellous dexterity, dancing all the while, till every egg was detached and placed in her basket, after which she advanced, and, kneeling before us, begged us to examine the eggs whether real or fictitious. Of course the eggs were real, and she was almost overwhelmed with shouts of "*Khoup! khoup! Matjaka! matjaka!*"—"Fine! fine! beautiful!" And then the Nautchnees vanished from the pavilion.

During the interval that followed the pages went round with *goulab-dhanees*, or bottles with rose-water, to sprinkle the guests.

Suddenly the cry of the herald announced a new scene. The heavy curtain slowly folded up, and a long line of male actors, superbly attired as Oriental kings and princes from different parts of the East, entered and took their places on the divans ranged along the farther end of the pavilion. Ram Chunder approached us and informed me that the piece about to be represented was a pure Hindoo drama, a beautiful episode from the Sanskrit epic *Mahābhārata*, called "Nalopakyanama," or the "Story of Nala."

After the kings and princes had seated themselves, in came a string of attendants arrayed in gold and gleaming armor, who took their places behind the royal personages on the divans. Then came twelve maidens attired in cloth of gold and fantastic head-gear belonging to the ancient Vedic period. Each of these girls had a cithern in her hands; they disposed themselves on seats to the left of the pavilion. After these a shrill cry of many voices announced the gods Indra, Agni, Varuna, and Yama, and in stalked four men splendidly robed, bearing gold wands, with serpents coiling around them, in their hands, and lotus-shaped crowns richly jewelled on their heads. Their raiment was one blaze of tinsel and glass jewels, made to shine with all the brilliancy of real gems.

Then came the hero Nala, with faded flowers on his tiara, dust on his garments, and looking picturesque enough with his bright scarf thrown across his shoulders, but travel-stained and very commonplace in the presence of so much gold and finery.

[Damayanti, the matchless beauty whom Nala loved, had been sought as a queen by each of the four gods. She had invited all her suitors to be present, that she might, according to custom, make public

choice of a husband. She had promised Nala to choose him in the presence of the gods themselves. But the curtain fell, and when it rose again there were five Nalas instead of one, the gods having transformed themselves to bewilder the poor maiden, and perhaps force her to choose one of them for her future husband.]

The music at this point rose and fell, now vibrating in low, tender accents, and anon rising in wild, startling emphasis of expression. At this moment the curtain parted, and there stood the cup-dancer with her quiet but entrancing beauty. Calmly she entered, looking down and meditating, as we were told, on the object of her affections. Her dress was exquisite of its kind and character; I never saw its counterpart on a Nautchnee before or after. It was a long gown without sleeves, falling from her shoulders to her feet, open at the throat, exposing a part of the neck and breast and the whole arm from the shoulder. It was very full, but of the most delicate texture, revealing the whole outline of a very lovely form. A bright border of variegated silk ran down the front and round the hem of this ancient Vedic garment, and it was fastened at the waist by a rich silk scarf. Her hair fell back, flowing down to her feet; on her head was a curious crown of an antique pattern, and over it all was thrown a long veil that streamed on the floor, and was of such a transparent texture that it looked like woven sunbeams.

Such was the impersonation of the Vedic beauty Damayanti. When she reached the centre of the circular pavilion, she lifted her eyes, and, seeing five Nalas instead of one, started backward, clasped her lovely arms on her bosom, and, rocking herself gently to and fro, moaned, "Alas! alas! there are five Nalas, all so like my own true sinless chief. How shall I discover the one to whom alone I have pledged my undying love?"

At this juncture the music ceased, and a deep silence fell

upon the audience. Every eye was riveted on that lovely creature seemingly overcome with the tide of sorrow and uncertainty that swept over her. Suddenly pausing in her moan, she turned up her fine eyes to the sky, and with some new inward light dawning as it were upon her troubled soul, said audibly, "To the gods alone I will trust. If they are indeed gods they will not deceive a poor mortal woman like me."

Then, quivering and trembling, with flushed cheeks and lustrous eyes, she folded her hands and knelt in reverence before the gods and prayed aloud, and said, "O ye gods, as in word or thought I swerve not from my love and faith to Nala, so I here adjure you to resume your immortal forms and reveal to me my Nala, that I may in your holy presence choose him for my pure and sinless husband."

Kneeling there with her face turned up, her hands folded, the outlines of her beautiful form made even more lovely by the half-softened halo of light shed over her from above, she seemed like some beautiful vision, and not a thing of flesh and blood. I never witnessed anything more truly exquisite and tender in its simple womanhood than this rendering of the beautiful Vedic character of Damayanti.

Again the voices of the musicians were heard interpreting for us the thoughts and feelings of the gods: "We are filled with wonder at her steadfast love and peerless beauty," etc. Once more the curtain is dropped, and presently it folds up again, revealing the forms of the four bright gods as at first in all the splendor of their robes, crowned and flashing with jewels, and fragrant with the garlands of fresh flowers that hang around their necks.

Damayanti rose from her bended knees. With pleased and childlike wonder she gazed at the gods one moment, then turned to her own true Nala, who stood before her in striking contrast to the gods, with moisture on his brow,

dust on his garments, soiled head-dress, and faded garland. But on recognizing him as the true Nala, she folded her hands in sudden rapture and gave a cry of joy; then, removing from her own neck her garland of mohgree-flowers, moved with quiet grace towards her lover, knelt and kissed the hem of his dusty robe, arose and threw around his neck her own fresh, radiant wreath of flowers, saying, "So I choose for my lord and husband Nishádah's noble king."

At this speech a sound of wild sorrow burst from the rejected suitors, but the gods shouted, "Well done! well done!" Then the happy Nala, turning to the blushing Damayanti, said, "Since, O maiden, you have chosen me for your husband in the presence of the gods, know this, that I will ever be your faithful lover, delight in your words, your looks, your thoughts, and so long as this soul inhabits this body, so long as the moon turns to the sun, till the sun grows cold and ceases to shine, so long shall I be thine, and thine only."

One more loud shout from the herald, the curtain dropped, the play and the day were over, for it was just twelve o'clock.

---

## THE MARVELS OF MOGUL ARCHITECTURE.

JOSEPH MOORE.

[From "The Queen's Empire; or, Ind and her Pearl," by Joseph Moore, Jr., we select the following appreciative descriptions of the strikingly beautiful monuments of Mohammedan architecture in India. These, erected during the period of the Mogul empire in that country, have ever since been objects of universal admiration, and to one of them in particular, the famous Taj Mahal, is given the palm of being the most artistically perfect and delicately beautiful of all the architectural works of man's hands. Our selections begin with a description of Delhi and its remains.]

ONE sweep to the northeast from Jeypore brought us to Delhi, the capital of the extinct Mogul Empire, the Mecca of the East. What a train of thought is suggested by its very name! With a history dating back to the mythical period of the early Aryans, it was destroyed seven times and as often rose again to dominion and grandeur.

Here the Pathans of Ghuzni, under Mohammed Ghery, founded (A.D. 1193) the Muslim empire of India, and two centuries later (1398) the ruthless Tamerlane came with his fanatical hordes to burn, plunder, and drench the streets with blood. Next the Sultan Baber, the descendant of Zhenghis Khan and Tamerlane, crossed the Indus and established the Mogul throne (1526) in the conquered city. This memorable dynasty continued to flourish, with only one interruption, and with increasing lustre, for a hundred and eighty years, under a succession, unprecedented in Indian history, of six sovereigns distinguished by their gallantry in the field, and, with one exception, by their ability in the cabinet.

This galaxy of successful though cruelly rapacious and utterly unprincipled rulers consists of Baber, Humayoon, Akbar, Jehangeer, Shah Jehan, and Aurungzebe. About these names cluster the relics of the power and splendor of the Great Moguls, the superb monuments of dazzling extravagance by which travellers are chiefly drawn to the imperial seats of Delhi and Agra.

Modern Delhi is the work of the Emperor Shah Jehan (1627-1658), a monarch celebrated for the splendor of his tastes, for the order of his finances, and for his love of building. As the new city approached completion he left Agra, whither the great Akbar had removed his court, and Delhi again became the Mogul capital.

The Fort, or citadel,—which contains the palace, now partly destroyed, the exquisite marble gem known as the



Pearl Mosque, the luxurious baths, and the lavish pavilions of state,—is the finest in India. Its gate-ways are in themselves imposing structures, and the lofty castellated walls of red sandstone describe a circuit of more than a mile. Within the enclosure of the city are the famous shalimar gardens, now called the Queen's, beyond which the inmates of the zenana, or harem, never passed. The culmination of all this magnificence is reached in the Dewan-i-Khas, or Hall of Private Audience, which overlooks the river Jumna and the plain. This edifice is of marble, open at the sides, and supported by massive square columns, the whole being adorned with mosaics of costly stones and inlaid gold. Adjoining it are the private apartments of the sovereign, where the pierced marble screens, wrought in floral designs, are of startling richness.

In this hall stood the renowned Peacock Throne, which was plundered by the Persians, a mass of solid gold flanked by two peacocks with distended tails, all studded with diamonds and rubies, sapphires, emeralds, and pearls. The value of this wonder was estimated at six crores, or sixty millions of rupees, nominally thirty millions of dollars.

On the cornices of the marble platform which bore the throne is the Persian inscription which Thomas Moore introduced so effectively in "*The Light of the Harem*":

"If there be an Elysium on earth,  
It is this, it is this."

Shah Jehan was not long permitted to enjoy the grandeur he had created. During an illness which brought him to the point of death, his four sons became involved in a bitter conflict for the succession; and so far had it been carried by the time of his recovery that he was unable to resume his authority. The bold and subtle Aurungzebe overpowered all resistance, dethroned his father, and im-

prisoned the fallen monarch in the fort at Agra. There he spent the remaining seven years of his life, within sight of that sublime mausoleum, the Taj, which he had reared to the memory of the adored wife of his youth.

Despite this heartless act, to which he added the death of his brothers, Aurungzebe lived to reign almost half a century (1658-1707), and to wage a war of intolerance for twenty-five years. But the close of his career was tortured by suspicion, gloom, and remorse, and after his death the strained empire began to decline.

Lalla Rookh was the daughter of this cruel prince, and it was from the gate of the fort, already noticed, that she set out upon the journey to reach her future husband in the Vale of Cashmere. The day of her "departure was as splendid as sunshine and pageantry could make it. The bazaars were all covered with the richest tapestry, hundreds of gilded barges upon the Jumna floated with their banners shining in the water, while through the streets groups of children went strewing the most delicious flowers around. And as Aurungzebe stood to take a last look from his balcony, the procession moved slowly on the road to Lahore."

Although Ireland's sweetest lyrist never visited the East, the scene he pictures may have been enacted at Delhi a century before his generation. But if his studies of forgotten writers have not prompted him to exaggerate, as in many instances, how completely has everything changed! Not a shred of the pomp he sketches is now to be seen. . . . Delhi is yet the revered centre of the forty millions of Muslims in India. Their cathedral mosque, the Jumna Musjid, is the most imposing religious edifice in the Peninsula. It is built of red stone, and stands on an elevated terrace, approached by a lofty flight of steps. Upon passing any of the three gates we enter an immense paved quadrangle,

with a marble reservoir in the middle, and surrounded by a cloistered colonnade.

The mosque itself, on the western side of the enclosure, is surmounted by three bulbous domes of white marble, flanked by two high minarets constructed of alternate vertical stripes of marble and red sandstone. "The whole," says Fergusson, "forms a group intelligible at the first glance, and, as an architectural object, possesses a variety of outline and play of light and shade which few buildings can equal." . . .

Delhi has now less than two hundred thousand population, but it once had almost two millions. The remains of the cities which preceded the present one are strewn in profusion over the neighboring plain, covering a distance of nearly sixty square miles. Temples and mosques, tombs and palaces, walls and forts, are here crumbling and falling unheeded and deserted.

In the midst of this decay is the magnificent Kootub Minar, the loftiest independent tower on the globe, excepting the Washington Monument. Although it has stood nearly seven hundred years, time has scarcely marred this noble achievement of Pathan architecture, unquestionably one of the wonders of the mediæval world. It far surpasses either the Campanile of Florence or the Giralda of Seville, while the tower of the Kremlin, probably the highest in Europe, is unworthy of comparison, because of its inferior construction.

We spent two days in exploring this vast area of ruins, and marvelled at the infinite waste which man has committed in the name of religion and through vain efforts to perpetuate his own memory. The moral of this sumptuous wreck, the fabrics of wealth wrung from the poor, is written in the eternal law of nations that the era of luxury is the herald of decline. A conquered race, dragging out a most abject

existence, peoples this land of fabled riches, and the vacant thrones of the tyrant Moguls, symbols of a "Paradise lost," stand in the gorgeous halls of state, waiting for Old Mortality to inscribe them with the words of Milton,—

"They themselves ordained their fall."

As we rolled away from Delhi and crossed the Jumna bridge, the young crescent faintly illuminated the snowy domes of the immaculate Pearl Mosque. In the distance we could distinguish the tall memorial column on the commanding ridge from which British guns thundered their command to the mutineers to yield the stolen city. When the train halted for a moment on the bridge, we caught the martial notes of the English bugler within the embattled citadel of the splendor-loving Shah Jehan. The exquisite marble balcony, in which the Great Moguls sat to review their legions, was vacant, and the parade-plain beneath as silent and peaceful as the shallow, winding Jumna.

[From Delhi we pass to Lahore, another city identified with the splendor of Mogul rule in India.]

Lahore, the present capital of the Punjaub, holds an important place in Mogul history, and the plain which surrounds it, like that of Delhi, is marked with the ruins of its departed greatness. It was the chosen residence of the Emperor Jehangeer, whose splendid mausoleum, richly decorated with mosaics, stands on the opposite banks of the river Ravee from the city. Before his accession to the throne this prince was called Selim, the name under which he appears in "Lalla Rookh" as the estranged lover of Noor Mahal, the "Light of the Harem." But history presents a different story of this couple from that woven by the poet's fancy. Jehangeer, who was a drunkard and of cruel instincts, already had four wives when he fell in love

with the beautiful Noor Mahal. She was the daughter of a Persian adventurer named Itmadood-Dowlah, who afterwards became prime minister of the empire. The great Akbar, father of the prince, interfered and despatched the girl to Bengal, where she married one Sher Ufgun.

When Akbar died, Jehangeer sent for the object of his affection. Her husband naturally objected to the transfer, so he was put to the sword to remove the difficulty. The lady was then brought to Agra, where the Emperor awaited her, but she indignantly refused his advances. This was the "something light as air" which Moore, with rosy imagination, has transformed into a mere lovers' tiff, upon the occasion of the Feast of Roses in the shalimar gardens at Cashmere.

The lady's ambition, however, shortly allayed her scornful anger and obscured the memory of her murdered husband. She wedded the sanguinary suitor, and was raised to the throne as the favorite Empress. At this time she was a woman of middle age. In addition to these realisms, the veil of romance in which Moore has enveloped her is further rent by the fact that she was a virago, and given to unscrupulous political intrigue.

On the other hand, it must be stated that husband and wife were very devotedly attached to each other. When the Emperor died he was profoundly mourned by Noor Mahal, who reared the costly tomb in which she was afterwards laid by his side. . . .

One relic of that storied past yet exists in all its luxurious beauty,—Shah Jehan's House of Joy, the Shalimar Gardens. We wandered through the orange-groves and erotic retreats of this elysium, picturing in our imagination the days of history and of song, when the marble pavement were trodden by the houris of the zenana, and the five hundred fountains, strung in endless vista, terrace

upon terrace, threw their sparkling jets into the sunshine to greet the august presence of the Great Mogul.

[One more Mogul city we need to visit in search of these memorials of Saracenic taste,—Akbar's splendid capital of Agra.]

When we arrived at Agra the great Mohammedan festival of the Moharram was at its height. In the bazaars, the shops of the Muslims and of many of the Hindus were closed, and the streets thronged with people in gay holiday attire. Nautch girls, wives, and daughters, all decked with the showy trinkets of the East, filled the windows and balconies, waiting for the culminating pageant of the day. As the procession approached, the crowd surged towards its head, and the excitement became intense. . . .

Agra is essentially a Mogul city, and nowhere are the wealth and splendor of that oppressive dynasty evinced to a greater degree than in its sumptuous monuments. Here Akbar located his capital and built the imposing citadel which overhangs the Jumna. Within its crenellated walls, a mile and a half in circuit, stand the architectural gems, some in a condition of ruin, which attest the magnificence of the imperial court. After passing the massive gate-way of the enclosure, itself a fortress, and crossing a garden, we come to the Hall of Public Audience. Next we enter the zenana, where the beauty of the East was once gathered, and then the luxurious baths, all lavishly adorned, which resemble the cool retreats and sprinkling fountains of the Alhambra. One of these chambers and its passages, called the Palace of Glass, are decorated with little mirrors, similar to the room at Ambher.

The Hall of Private Audience consists of two pavilions, smaller than the one at Delhi and more of the Hindu style, but almost as richly finished. Here we found the Black Throne of Akbar, upon which we coiled ourselves in Ori-

ental fashion, without, however, feeling like a Great Mogul

Then follow the elegant private apartments of the Emperor, and pavilions, kiosks, and balconies overlooking the river, seventy feet below, all of snowy marble, with exquisite fretted lattices of the same material and inlaid with mosaics of precious stones.

Near by is the immaculate Pearl Mosque, which is much larger than its queenly namesake at Delhi. Although purely Saracenic in style, this edifice depends for its exalted effect upon absolute simplicity of outline and graceful proportion, eschewing almost all ornament. The whole is of white marble, from the pavement of the court to the three crowning domes, "silvery bubbles which have rested a moment on its walls, and which the next breeze will sweep away."

Even while the Fort was in process of construction, Akbar was engaged in rearing a stupendous summer establishment about twenty miles from Agra.

The ruins of this city, for such it is, are within a walled park, seven miles in circumference, embracing the present villages Fullebpur and Sikri. The plateau of a long, rocky hill, in the centre of the enclosure, was selected for the court, and upon this site arose a prodigal array of stately piles. Red sandstone is the prevailing material, but considerable marble was also used. Many of these structures are yet intact, while others exist in a state of partial decay.

According to the statements of early travellers, Akbar once intended this "most noble city" for his seat of government. Scarcely, however, was it completed before he quitted the place for sanitary reasons. Palaces and mosques, zenanas and baths, walls and towers, tombs and gate-ways, pavilions, courts, and halls, built with the money and the labor of his subjects, were thus abandoned to neglect and decline.



This transition seems to have owed its creation to the advice of a fakir, or holy mendicant, named Shekh Selim,—whose marble tomb stands in the quadrangle of the mosque,—to commemorate the birth of the child that became the Emperor Jehangeer. Legend has interwoven its story with the history of this event, but in whatever light it may be viewed, we must conclude that Akbar either abetted a fraud or yielded to the baldest superstition.

But with all his faults Akbar was the greatest prince that ever sat on the throne of the Moguls. Although constantly at war, he never lost a battle. During his reign the dominion of the empire was vastly extended, and wise reforms were successfully introduced. While a Mohammedan by birth and education, he was tolerant of all religions. At one time he inclined to a belief in Christ, when he married the alleged Christian lady, the Miriam of Whittier's exquisite poem, whose tomb is pointed out near his own superb mausoleum at Secundra, a short drive from Agra. He invited Hindus to accept civil and military offices, and chose two wives of that faith.

Akbar's efforts to establish religious equality led him to devise an eclectic creed, which sought to unite the followers of Christ, of Zoroaster, of Brahma, and of Mohammed. In this impossible task he naturally encountered failure, and the abnormal system died with its founder.

Every department of his court was sustained upon a scale of splendor before unknown in India. Under him and his successors Agra blended the magnificence of the palaces of Nineveh and the temples of Babylon with the enchantments of the sylvan elysium of Cashmere.

Yet after the recital of all this wondrous grandeur the crowning glory of Agra and of India remains to be told. The incomparable Taj Mahal, that peerless marvel of love, of skill, of patience, of beauty, of treasure, and of power ;

the faultless, dazzling mausoleum which Shah Jehan raised to the memory of his beautiful idolized consort, in accordance with a promise made beside her death-bed. As a last request she begged of him a memorial befitting a queen. In response he vowed to rear above her remains a sepulchre that the world should hold matchless.

More than two centuries have elapsed since this shrine of affection was completed. Attracted by its fame, in that period travellers from every clime have journeyed to Agra to behold the jewelled wonder. Man is critical either from instinct or pedantry, but a single voice is yet to deny that Shah Jehan has redeemed the fullest measure of his pledge. . . .

Entering a magnificent gate-way, we find ourselves in a garden which rivals the charms of Shalimar. Before us stretches a lengthy avenue of the trembling cypress, along the middle of which a row of fountains toss their slender jets high into the stilly air,—a superb vista, a third of a mile long. At the extreme end, partially obscured by the abundant foliage, rises the Taj, so white and dazzling that it seems to be the source of the sunlight which crowns it like an aureole.

Approaching it, we mount a broad terrace of red sandstone, upon which are two mosques of the same material, one on each side. From this base we ascend to a smaller platform of polished marble, whereon four towering minarets, snowy and graceful, dart upward from the corners. In the centre of this fitting pedestal stands the Taj, radiant and of spotless white.

The edifice is square, but as the corners are truncated it might also be called octagonal. Surmounting it is a symmetrical, bulbous dome, flanked by four lesser bulbs raised on delicate pavilions. A lofty arched entrance and twin pairs of smaller arches pierce each of the four identical

façades, adding an air of lightness and plasticity to faultless proportions.

The walls of the exterior, not less than within, are lavishly embellished with inlaid vines and flowering texts from the Muslim scriptures. Indeed, it is credibly stated that the entire Koran is thus placed upon the mausoleum. Everywhere the finish is like that of a jewel-case, in supreme forgetfulness of toil or treasure.

We enter the rotunda, and stand thrilled by a beauty and solemnity which pass all expression. Lost in admiration, we unconsciously speak, and instantly the guardian Echo catches up the note and carries it round and round the lofty vault, calling it back softer and softer, as if not to wake the dead, until it fades into profound silence. Windows of marble lace temper the light within, harmonizing it with the religious sentiment which pervades the tomb.

Directly beneath the dome is the cenotaph of the Empress, covered with mosaics of flowers and foliage, wrought in turquoise and jasper, carnelian and sard, chalcedony and agate, lapis lazuli and jade, blood-stone onyx and heliotrope. Beside it is that of the Emperor, similarly adorned. Surrounding them is a screen of marble filigree elaborate and delicate beyond all conception.

In a vault below the central hall is the inlaid sarcophagus which contains the ashes of the lady of the Taj,—Moontaz-i-Mahal, the Exalted One of the Harem. There, also, close to the bride of his youth, rests the faithful Shah Jehan. Deathless love joined for evermore.

We came by moonlight to this sanctuary, when all was silent save the rippling of the Jumna, which flows by its side; and, walking round the shimmering pile, confessed that “the rare genius of the calm building finds its way unchallenged to the heart.”

## BOAR-HUNTING IN INDIA.

W. GORDON CUMMING.

[The Gordon Cummings have been men of might with the rifle and spear in the adventurous life of the hunting-field. Roualeyn Gordon Cumming, in his "Five Years of a Hunter's Life," in South Africa, has placed himself on record as a man of might and daring, in contests with the lion, elephant, and other dangerous game. A younger scion of the family, Lieutenant-Colonel W. Gordon Cumming, has made as fine a record among the tigers and other game animals of India. We subjoin some of his adventures in the chase of the wild boar.]

At the time I write of we had an institution called "The Hunt," got up for the furtherance of hog-hunting, and a small monthly sum was collected from subscribers. With this the Hunt paid for a shikaree, whose duty it was to go about the country and ascertain where pigs were to be had in rideable ground. On hunting days half the cost of the beaters was also defrayed out of this fund, the other half being paid by the sportsmen present. The meets generally lasted from four to six days,—alternate days being devoted to hunting and shooting.

The locality being fixed on, the mess-tent was sent out, and every man intending to be present sent on his servants with a small sleeping-tent and a goodly store of provender of all kinds—both solid and fluid—and as many horses and ponies as he could muster. The shikaree and his assistants were out long before daybreak, and took up positions in trees whence they could watch the pigs as they returned to the coverts from their feeding-grounds. By eight o'clock he generally reappeared, and gave in his report to the captain of the Hunt, by whom the programme for the day was arranged. . . .

The appearance of our camp was highly effective. It was generally situated in some grove of grand old mangoes. . . . By half-past ten we were in the saddle, and seldom had far to go before reaching the covert-side. . . . Pigs were always plentiful, and on the alternate days there was abundance of game of all kinds, for both gun and rifle. . . .

The field was generally well attended, and sharp contests for the honor of the first spear were numerous. At times this emulation led to hot and strong discussions; for in the excitement of a chase, when several pigs were on foot at once, and when, possibly, the hunted boar might be changed during the run, it was not always an easy matter to say whose spear had drawn first blood.

In some parts of the Dougurwah country there were dense thorny thickets which, though of no great extent, were quite impenetrable for horsemen, and on a wounded boar gaining the shelter of one of these, there was much difficulty in dislodging him. We had had a severe run after a very large old boar; he was badly speared, but managed to reach one of these, and all our attempts to induce him again to break cover were in vain. The beaters came up and advanced with fiendish yells, blowing horns and beating drums. Stones were showered into the bush, and a sharp fire of blank cartridge was kept up by a party of the Guzerat Koolie corps who had accompanied us. The boar, however, knew the strength of his position, and refused to show himself again in the open ground. He might, of course, have been shot, but such a proceeding would have been regarded in the same light as the shooting of a fox in Leicestershire; so, as we could not in honor ride away and leave him, it was agreed that we should dismount and go in at him on foot with our spears.

The project was a rash one, for though a spear is a handy

weapon when used from horseback in open ground, it is not quite so suitable when going in at an infuriated boar in a tangled thicket of thorns and long grass. We did not, however, give this part of the matter much consideration. We were about eight in number, and in the event of any one of us being in difficulties, we relied on our comrades.

The boar had taken his stand in the centre of the thicket, which was some fifty yards across, and we moved slowly in on him, with our spears shortened and pointed in advance. My greatest danger seemed to be from my neighbor on the left, who, relinquishing his spear, had armed himself with a sharp-pointed, crooked sword, which he had taken from one of the beaters, and which he held over his shoulder in painful proximity to my countenance.

Towards the centre of the thicket the ground was somewhat clearer, and most fortunately the boar selected the moment at which we gained this spot to make his charge. With savage grunts he came crashing down on us, and evidently intended to make an ugly hole in some one, but we stood steady, and the nearest spears were buried in his chest and shoulders. His weight and impetus were great, and the tough bamboo spear-shafts bent under the strain, but we closed in on him, and he yielded up his gallant spirit.

The beaters crowded in and bore him from his lair, and, on reaching the open ground, proceeded to *gralloch*. On removing the intestines, a large quantity of blood was found in the carcass. Diving their hands into the body, they scooped out the warm blood and drunk it greedily, wiping their ensanguined fingers in their long beards and moustaches. The effect was truly startling, and for all that I can say to the contrary, it may have been very good tippie.

Many of these men carried "boomerangs," a weapon I have never seen used in any other part of India. It was

made of heavy, dark wood, two inches broad, three-quarters of an inch thick, and about two and a half feet long, sharpened at the edges. These are thrown with great force, and would not infrequently knock over hares and partridges as they rose during the beat. . . .

Old boars are often very cunning, and will hang back in a thicket when the rest of the sounder breaks, stealing quietly off when the field is in hot pursuit of some of the smaller pigs. As a rule, they do not give so fast a run as a young boar or a long-legged sow; but when brought to bay they are awkward customers, and frequently leave their mark on their pursuers. Our beaters were ripped on several occasions, but fortunately the wounds were not severe, and were confined to the legs. The cut of a boar's tusk is peculiar, and is generally of the form of the letter L, like a tear in woollen cloth. Although when charging they come on with savage grunts, they seldom cry out when speared; and a pig who dies with a squeal is generally regarded as an ignoble beast, having in his veins the blood of domestic ancestors.

I remember a joke played off on a man whose deeds in the saddle were not supposed to lose aught of their importance by his own description of them. Some youngsters of the cantonment, having purchased a village pig, had been in the habit of sending it out a mile or two in a cart, and hunting it home with long bamboos. By this course of training the piggy acquired wind and some degree of speed. At length, on a day appointed, he was taken out and secured by the leg in the covert. The usual party, with the addition of the mighty hunter, were assembled at the mess tiffin, when a native came up and reported a fine boar marked down. Horses and spears were called for, and, with the guide in advance, all proceeded to the jungle-side.



Nimrod announced his intention of refraining from all active part in the proceedings, on the ground that it would be unfair for an old experienced hunter like himself to take the spear from a lot of young fellows to whom the sport was new. He was, however, assured that, without his valuable aid, the game would probably escape, and it was therefore hoped he would not practise such extreme self-denial.

On the riders taking up their positions, men were sent to free the obscene beast, which speedily appeared; and, in expectation of the customary chevy, made off at its best pace. By judicious management, all the field got thrown out with the exception of Nimrod, who was seen riding like a man, and coming up to the pig, hand over hand. Making a well-directed thrust, with a triumphant shout, he speared the beast, and a few more thrusts rolled it over. The other riders now gathered round the redoubtable hunter, who was seen standing by the prostrate *gaumtee*, waving his cap and brandishing his blood-red spear. "Gentlemen," he cried, "it was too bad of me! but really when I saw the boar break cover, my blood got up, and I was quite unable to restrain myself."

At this moment a lager, who had been previously well coached, came running up and demanded payment for his property. It was long before Nimrod again entertained the mess with his hunting exploits.

Although large boars often showed fight and gave trouble, at times they were laid low by a single spear. One morning we were hunting in a difficult country, covered with scrub bush, through which it was difficult to urge a horse at great speed, when a stout young boar was seen crossing the cover at some distance ahead. He was going at a sharp pace, and as he already had a good start, the word to ride was at once given. Away we went,

threading through the bush at a smart gallop. Hearing us coming up, the boar halted for a moment, and again started off. We now settled down to the work, and were gaining on him, when one of our party, who had been at some distance from us when we started, came down on the pig at a right angle.

The boar never swerved, but apparently charged straight ahead, and with the intention of cutting the fore legs of the horse from under him. How the horse escaped we could not imagine. The boar seemed to cross under his neck, and both were going at their best pace. In an instant the rider dropped the point of his spear between the shoulders of the boar, and with a convulsive struggle it rolled over, quite dead.

The thorns through which we hunted told heavily on the legs of the horses, and they were often much swollen after a hard day's work. A favorite remedy was the red earth from the nests of white ants boiled with the leaves of the neem-tree, till the whole formed into a thick paste. With this the legs were plastered, from above the knees downward; and the mud, on drying, formed a sort of bandage round the leg. In the early morning the horses were often taken down to the nearest tank, and kept standing for fifteen minutes in the cold water. These combined remedies seemed to draw out the thorns to the surface, whence many were extracted by careful horse-keepers; and I have seen a man come up with the back of his curry-comb covered with large thorns, which he had picked from the legs of the horse under his charge.

[We shall conclude with Colonel Cumming's narrative of an exciting chase on the banks of the Samburmuttee River. They had seen a very large boar crossing the broad shallow stream, and making for a cypress covert on its other bank. They put the shikarees on his track.]

Leaving the river, he had made a detour of about two miles in the open country, which, though cultivated, was at this season quite bare of crops. Our men were equal to the occasion, and taking up the track they moved quickly along, scoring the ground at every few yards with a short stick across the print of the boar's hoofs. We now found that he was crossing a wide bend in the river, and that the tracks would again fall into the bed of the stream. The trackers moved fast and sure, and we followed close in their wake with the crowd of beaters. At length we came to where a smaller stream joined the river, and on the ground between the two was a crop of irrigated maize, about ten feet in height, and looking very cool and green. The smaller stream was about fifteen yards in width, slow and sluggish, having about a foot of water, and an equal amount of black mud below it.

We had crossed and sent the beaters to the end next the junction of the streams, when we heard much yelling and shouting, and next moment the boar came out at speed and dashed down the slope into the stream we had just crossed. Bulkley was only a few yards from him, and, driving in his spurs, he rushed down the bank, regardless or forgetful of the muddy bottom. His horse seemed to turn heels over head, and as I checked mine and floundered slowly across, he was picking himself out of the black mud and shaking his steed to his legs again. He had lost his hunting-cap, and his spear was buried in the grimy slush. I reached the bank in safety, and, gathering up my galloway, I went on after the boar. From his great size and weight I was sure he would make a good fight, and I saw I had work cut out for me, so I determined not to irritate him with a minor poke, but, if possible, to disable or check him till such time as my friend should emerge from the mud and come to my assistance.

As the boar went along at an easy canter, I saw that I should have no difficulty in overhauling him. We were going up the side of a field, having a high mud-bank on our right, and, watching my opportunity, I lowered my spear and pressed my horse with the spur. In an instant I was alongside of the boar, and had my spear within a few inches of his shoulder, when, with a savage grunt, he made a sidelong charge at my horse. The spear took him in the neck and checked him, but with a sudden wrench he broke the bamboo shaft, leaving the head embedded in his muscles. Turning my horse sharp to the left, I got clear away, but, having only the headless spear-shaft in my hand, my offensive powers were at an end, and I saw that my only hope of getting the boar lay in my being able to keep him in view till my friend should rejoin me.

In this way we held on over many fields. At times I pursued and tried to turn the boar; at others he pursued me, and then I was forced to "advance backward." Still no signs of my friend, and I began to fear that either he or his horse had been seriously damaged. The boar had nearly reached the spot from which we had first started him in the morning, and as he went down the steep bank into the cypress cover I pulled up in despair.

At that moment I saw Bulkley coming along at a hand-gallop, and with a frantic yell I again set off after the boar. Aided by Bulkley, I succeeded in turning him towards the water, into which he hurled himself and lay still, apparently dead-beat. Springing from his horse, Bulkley lowered his spear and ran in at him, but the boar rose and charged. He was stopped by a thrust in the neck, but his great weight broke the bamboo, and though Bulkley managed to get away unscathed, we had no spears, and were now powerless for all purposes of attack. Unwilling to leave the wounded beast, and hoping that some of our men with

spare spears would soon come up, we followed him slowly down the river, and, seeing some cultivators irrigating their fields near the banks, Bulkley rode off to them in the hope of obtaining some offensive weapon.

Presently he came back armed with a short, crooked sword, but by this time the boar was going down a part of the river where he had an abrupt bank six feet in height on his immediate left. Bulkley vainly tried to force him out, as he found it impossible to reach him with the short sword. At length he made a cut, but the boar charging at the same moment, ripped his horse in the fore leg; and finding that he could not again get him to go near the pig, he handed me the sword and I took up the running.

We had come to a tributary stream, joining the river at right angles. Into this we plunged, and as the boar swam almost on a level with my saddle, I rose in the stirrups and made a cut at him with all the force I could muster. Had the weapon served me truly, I should have laid the boar in two halves; but the blade of the sword, being merely fastened into the hilt with lac, fell out, and the pig turned on me. I had just time to fend him off with my hand, receiving as I did so a slight cut over the thumb from his tusk.

Wheeling my horse round, I got away from him, when he crossed the stream, and turning up the other bank, left the main river. By this time he was nearly exhausted, and our shikaree appeared on the scene, having followed the run on foot. Another sword was procured from some cultivators. The shikaree carried his own, and one of his men had an iron-bound club. Leaving our panting steeds, we made a simultaneous rush on the boar as he stood at bay in the water. He made a last charge, but the swords cut fairly this time, and the huge beast succumbed.

I have been in at the death of many boars, but I never

saw a run so full of excitement as that which I have now endeavored to describe.

[Boar-hunting does not seem to be as dangerous a sport to the hunters in India as it is often described as being in Europe. The horses frequently receive injuries, and the beaters are often severely hurt by the tusks of the savage brutes; but so far as the sportsmen themselves are concerned, the story is a somewhat monotonous one of killing of boars and triumph of hunters.]

---

## CAVES OF ELLORA AND CITY OF NASHIK.

ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS.

[To the extract already made from Mrs. Leonowens's interesting work of travel in India we add one descriptive of the unique cavern-temples of Ellora, in their way among the most remarkable works of architecture and astonishing examples of rock excavation on the earth. To this is added an account of the neighboring city of Nashik, one of the most purely Brahmanic of existing cities.]

WE bade adieu to the old historical city of the great Arungzebe [Arungabâd] just as the first streak of sunlight was gilding the conical summit of the fortress of Dowlutabâd, and, wending our way laboriously up the steep Pipla Ghaut, we emerged on the other side on a fertile plain planted with magnificent trees and covered with innumerable mausoleums and tombs, through which our bullocks made straight for the western boundary of the beautiful hill of Rauzah. Here we reached a spot of perfect tranquillity and beauty, but which must have been at some ancient time a scene of intense activity. The present little village of Ellora, consisting of a number of Hindoo dwellings, is almost hidden among groves of fine trees, and is only remarkable because it lies immediately at the foot

of a high wall of rock in which the vast cavern-temples of this neighborhood are found, and to which it owes its prosperity.

We alighted from our wagons on the veranda of a well-built pagoda; near it was a fine reservoir with flights of broad stone steps leading down to the water's edge. On the bank or upper stonework of this reservoir are a number of artistic little Hindoo temples or shrines, the roofs supported by light, delicate pillars, giving an airy and graceful appearance to the whole village.

As soon as Govind had gone through his prayers and ablutions we started off, accompanied by a couple of sage-looking Hindoo guides, for the cavern-temples. We followed our guides for some little distance, when they left the high-road and struck a narrow, steep path, and all at once, when we were least expecting it, a sudden turn brought us into the presence of the great "rock-cut temples" that render this spot the holiest of all places in the Deccan. Down went Govind and our guides prostrate on their faces and hands.

The solitude, the quiet stillness of the spot, with the bright morning sun flooding hill and plain and penetrating the depths of these excavations, were impressive. The temple before us was a large open court and deep vaulted chamber, massive and elaborately carved, chiselled from the heart of the mountain itself, and rising up nearly a hundred feet. There were many other temples in the hill-side with door-ways, arches, pillars, windows, galleries, and verandas supported by solid stone pillars filled with figures of gods and goddesses, heroes, giants, birds, beasts, and reptiles of every shape,—quite enough to baffle the most careful student in anything like a thorough examination of their vast and intricate workmanship.

We went in and out, climbing stone-cut steps, up,



down, and round about the caves, not knowing which temple to admire most or on which to bestow undivided attention. It would take weeks to explore them thoroughly. There is a very fine cavern-temple dedicated to Pur Sawanath, "The Lord of Purity," the twenty-third of the great saints of the Jains of this era. An image resembling those that are seen of Buddha, stone tigers, and elephants bear up the altar on which he is seated; from the middle of the altar there projects a curious wheel on which is carved the Hindoo astronomical table, and a seven-headed serpent is seen over the head of the god.

Another very beautiful excavation, consisting of three temples or compartments, is dedicated to Jaggar-Nath Buddh, or "The Enlightened Lord of the Universe;" these temples are best known, however, by the name of Indra Sabha, or "The Assembly of Indra." These caves are two-storied, containing images of Indra—"the darter of the swift blue bolt," as he is called—seated on a royal elephant, with his attendants about him, and of Indranee, his wife, riding on a couchant lion, with her son in her arms and her maids around her. The sacred trees of the Hindoos—*Kalpa Vriksha*, the tree of the ages or of life—are growing out of their heads; on the one overshadowing Indra are carved peacocks, emblematic of royalty, and fruits resembling the rose-apple, sacred to love, grow on the one sprouting from the head of Indranee. This temple is unrivalled for its beauty of form and sculpture.

The next temple we visited was the Dho Máhal Lenah, "the double palace." It is full of figures and sculptured story celebrating the marriage of the god Siva with Parvatee. It is an excavation of great depth and extent, filled with countless gods and goddesses, among which the figure of Yama, the judge of the dead, commonly called Dhannah, is especially remarkable. Not far from this

cavern-temple a lovely mountain torrent comes leaping down in beautiful cascades. Near a wide pool is a rude cave with a deity in it called Dâvee, who draws multitudes of pilgrims to her shrine yearly because of her reputation for performing miracles.

There is also a temple famous in Indian song and story called Khailahsah, or "highest heaven." The mountain has been penetrated to a great depth and height to make room for this wondrous bit of sculpture. Within an area stands a pagoda almost, if not quite, a hundred feet high. It is entered by a noble portico guarded by huge stone figures of men; towering above it are, cut out of the hill, a music-gallery of the finest workmanship and five large chapels, and above all there is in front a spacious court terminating in three magnificent colonnades: huge columns uphold the music-gallery; stone elephants, looking towards us, heave themselves out of this mass of rockwork, and right in front is a grand figure of the Hindoo goddess Lakshimi being crowned queen of heaven by stone elephants that have raised themselves on their hind feet to pour water over her head from stone vessels grasped in their trunks.

Everywhere we found fresh objects of wonder, and each new cave seemed the greatest marvel of all. The entire hill-side is perforated with chatiyas, monasteries, pagodas, towers, spires, galleries, and verandas, all cut out of the solid rock. Nothing could be wilder and more fantastic than the effect produced by these excavations, situated as they are amid natural scenes very wild and romantic,—waterfalls, ravines, gorges, old gnarled forest-trees, and a dense undergrowth of brushwood.

Naturally, freely, unexpectedly, as the tree grows, was the development of early Hindoo art. Everywhere one sees an unrestrained imagination breaking through and

overleaping the bounds of judgment, reason, and even that intuitive sense of refinement to which the Hindoo mind is by no means a stranger.

[There are here in all thirty-four large temples, Buddhist, Brahmanic, and Jain. Some are cut out of the interior of the rock. Others are buildings hewn out of the granite hill-side, standing separate, and with an exterior as well as an interior architecture,—gigantic monolithic temples, in fact. It is believed that these temples date from the seventh century A.D. From Ellora the travellers journeyed to the city of Nashik, on the Thull Ghauts.]

With their forests of foliage and rich jungles the Thull Ghauts are a perpetual wonder and mystery to the natives, and the spot on which the handsome city of Nashik stands is a paradise to the Brahmans. Through it the Godaveri, sometimes called the Gunga, flows, spreading gladness and plenty everywhere. Here it was that Rama, with his beautiful wife Sita, spent the first days of their exile near a dark and dreadful forest, out of which issued the beautiful deer in pursuit of which he was obliged to leave Sita, who became an easy prey to his enemy Rawana. Here Lakshman, the brother of Rama, cut off the nose of the giantess Sarp Naki, the snake-nosed sister of Rawana, from which event the city itself is named [Nashik, "City of the Nose"].

There is doubtless an historical base to all these local traditions, for Nashik is a place of great antiquity, and is mentioned by Ptolemy by the name which it bears to-day. This land was no doubt at one time debatable ground between the advancing Aryan tribes and the aboriginal settlers. Here the Buddhists took refuge from the persecutions of the orthodox Brahmans, excavating the temples and caves that abound in this region.

Nashik is now a Brahman city in the fullest sense of the word. Brahmanic power, influence, culture, and tradition

are felt everywhere. Govind, our pundit, was in his best humor. It seems he had long desired to make a pilgrimage to this sacred spot, and here he was without any actual expense to himself and at the right moment. Nashik is said to have a population of from twenty-five to thirty thousand inhabitants, chiefly Brahmans of great wealth and famed for their religious sanctity of character.

At the jatras, or tribe-meetings, a great concourse of Brahmans, Hindoos, Rajpoots, and Mahrattas from all parts of India pour into this city, and our visit happened at this time, for the pilgrims were arriving from all parts of the Eastern world. Most of the streets were, like those usually found in Oriental cities, narrow, ill-drained, and badly paved, but there are some that are well kept, and a fine, broad thoroughfare leads almost, but not quite, through the centre of the city to the banks of the Godaveri. The lofty houses of the Brahmans, many of which are three stories high and almost palatial in appearance, were thrown open to the strangers. Pilgrims thronged the streets and were encamped along the roadside in tents in the open air or under the shade of huge trees. Highways lead everywhere down to the river, whose sanctity may be conceived from the vast numbers and characteristics of the temples that line its banks and dot the islands and rocks in the river-bed, nearly all built of a hard black rock, capable of high polish, and some in the purest style of Hindoo architecture.

As we were detained here a couple of days, being obliged to purchase a fresh pair of trotting bullocks in order to prosecute the rest of our journey, we determined to stay over and see the celebration of the *Holi*, one of the most curious festivals among the Hindoos. We took up our abode in the travellers' bungalow, some little distance from the native city, and looking out upon the English bury-

ing-ground. It is a charming spot, with a wild tangle of trees forming a sort of garden around it.

The native town of Nashik seems to be divided into three parts, the handsome and well-built portion being occupied by the wealthy Brahmans, *vakeels*, or lawyers, and *gurus*, or priests. The second division, which bears marks of great age and is not very sightly, is inhabited by merchants and traders in grain and other articles of Indian commerce. The bazaars are remarkably well stocked with shawls brought from Cashmere, silks and kinkaubs from Arungabâd, *gowrakoo*, a native manufacture of tobacco and used for smoking, and *jaggery*, a dark-brown sugar, from Bombay. In the jewellers' shops we saw some very pretty specimens of gold and silver ornaments, such as are worn by Hindoo women. The vegetable and fruit markets here are very fine. Among the fruits large trays of beautiful flowers were disposed, of which the rose of Nashik seemed to me the finest I had seen in India. Sheep, goats, and cows wander about the streets of the bazaar unmolested. Indeed, I saw cows putting their heads into the open grain-bags exposed on the shop windows of the *bunyas*, or grain-dealers, and have a good feed, for there was no one to hinder them.

One day, as we were wandering about the streets of Nashik, we strayed into an open court, and thence through an arched entrance into a large hall, where we suddenly came upon a company of men weaving a peculiar and beautiful Oriental silk. The loom was of the old-fashioned Indian type, set into the ground; the upper thread was of a pale-gold color, and the lowest of the most exquisite blue, and the fabric after it was woven had a little knot of yellow left on the surface, which gave it the appearance in one light of being woven of gold threads, and in another light of pale blue. A number of women were seated close

by preparing the silk thread for the weavers by means of a very rude spinning-wheel.

From the bazaars we set off to visit some of the most artistic temples that embellish the banks of the Godaveri. There are five structures here to-day in great repute: the temples of Maha Dèò, or the high god, Siva, Parvati, Indra, and *Jaggar Nath*, commonly called Juggernaut. Each of these temples has a large number of laymen, priests, and priestesses, or dancing-girls, attached to them. The dancing-girls are seen everywhere in the temples, on the banks of the river, and in the booths erected here and there, performing their various dances for the amusement of the pilgrims, and some of these girls were of the finest type that I had seen in any part of India.

We went into the temple of Maha Dèò, which contains some very rich and bold carvings. A figure of a god was seated on a stone altar, and all over the shrine were scattered flowers, oil, and red paint, or *shaindoor*. At the door of this temple we saw seated a very old woman, who, they told me, was once a famous beauty and a priestess of this temple. She sat there muttering idly to herself and basking in the sunlight. Age had very forcibly set its seal upon her. Her skin was drawn into the most complicated net-work of wrinkles, her arms were almost devoid of flesh, and her limbs were as tottering and feeble as those of an infant just attempting to walk; but her eyes, large, dark, and piercing, still retained a great deal of their original beauty. The people, however, regarded her as one inspired, and the women attached to the temple had a tender care for her, taking her into an adjoining chamber every night to sleep, bringing her out to her accustomed place every morning, and feeding her at regular intervals.

On the banks of the Godaveri is shown a spot where women without number have become suttees, or, as they

called them here, Sadhwees, or "pure ones." At a very gentle curve of the river are the cremation-grounds of the Hindoos, and here the ashes of men burned at a distance are brought and scattered in the holy stream, which is thought to have its source in the heart of the great Maha Dèò himself.

Next morning, when we entered into the streets of Nashik once more, the scene that presented itself to our astonished gaze was that of a vast multitude gone mad. Crowds of women dressed in fantastic attire, especially in white- and yellow-spotted muslin sarees, men in curious garbs, boys dressed like sprites or wholly nude and besmeared with yellow paint, fakeers, gossains, ascetics, Hindoos, and Brahmans, were seen in the streets shouting, laughing, throwing red paint about; rude jests were being passed; women were addressed in obscene or ribald language; persons blindfolded in the streets were left to grope their way until they removed the bandage from their eyes, friends were sent on bootless errands, etc. In fact, it was a complete saturnalia of the rudest and most grotesque description. It was the festival of the *Holi*, held in honor of Krishna's sportive character on the night of the full moon in the month of February.

That evening we went out on the banks of the Godaveri to see the termination of the festival, and it is simply impossible to describe the wild enthusiasm of this vast concourse of people. The banks of the river, the steps of the numberless temples, the courts within courts, the shrines, the altars, the great halls and music-galleries with forests of carved pillars, were closely packed with countless throngs of white-robed priests, half-naked gossains, or sparkling dancing-girls, while thousands of men, women, and children lined the banks of the Godaveri, eager and enthusiastic participants in the gay, bewildering scene.



As we stood gazing at the strange spectacle we heard the wild, discordant sounds of various musical instruments, the shrill blast of innumerable conch-shells, and the deafening beat of the tom-toms, whereupon huge fires began to blaze almost simultaneously from shore to shore at regular distances, and everywhere round them groups of strangely dressed boys performed weird circular dances, holding each other's hands and going around them; then, suddenly letting loose, they darted and leaped round and round one another and round the fire at the same time. This dance is ostensibly performed to commemorate the dance of the god Krishna with the seven gowpiahs, or milkmaids, but there is scarcely a doubt that this festival originally meant to typify the revolution of the planets round the sun.

The light from these blazing fires streaming out upon the moonlit river, the wild, discordant music, the hilarious shouts, the frantic dancers, the sparkle of the dancing-girls, the white-robed figures of the countless multitude, now flashing in sight in the glare of the firelight, and anon vanishing in the deep shadows beyond, the piles of black temples, the great trees, with their arms bending down to the river or stretching towards the clear sky,—all combined to render the last night of the festival of the Holi at Nashik a most weird and singularly fantastic sight.

From the first to the last day of our visit here there was nowhere perceptible the least trace of European influence on the people or in the city. The people and the city were just what they might have been in the days when Ptolemy wrote about the latter, purely and wholly Hindoo, and full of a Brahmanic atmosphere of religious mysticism,—a civilization quite different from anything we had ever witnessed.

## THE LAIR OF THE TIGER.

W. GORDON CUMMING.

[To the description of boar-hunting in India, which we have given from Colonel Cumming's "Wild Men and Wild Beasts," we now add some selections descriptive of tiger-hunting experiences, a form of sport far more dangerous than that of spearing the boar. As the horse is the safeguard against danger in the latter, the elephant is in the former, and such hurts as are received are usually due to foolhardy venturing on foot. We select an example of a tiger-hunt in 1856, near Indore, in Malwa.]

As we approached a ravine running down from some springs, we observed a very large tiger standing in a streamlet about two hundred yards from us. He had evidently seen us, and, after a few seconds, he moved up the hill-side, which was covered with bamboos and detached fragments of rock. On arriving at the spot where we had seen him, we came in full view of the huge beast, as he stood, a hundred paces above us, at the base of a large rock. He was watching us, with one paw raised like a pointer dog, and his head turned sideways towards us. Notwithstanding the distance, we were about to fire, when, with a series of savage growls, he charged down the hill, and rushing across the ravine, disappeared, and we saw him no more.

The word "growl," which I have used above, is, I think, inaccurate, but I know not what term to use. A tiger when lying wounded in a thicket will sometimes "growl," but when he charges the cry is more of a deep cavernous grunt, very horrible to hear, and well calculated to try a man's nerves. On one or two *rare* occasions I have heard a tiger *roar*, and have oftentimes heard him growl, but the

war-cry which he gives when charging is quite distinct from either of these.

After resting a while, we moved towards the place where we had sent our servants and tents. The jungle had been only very partially burned, and all the edges of the streams, together with large tracts of the more level jungle, were covered with grass two feet or more in height. We were skirting up the bank of a considerable stream, when we saw a tiger move up from the river on the opposite side and disappear among the bog grass. The jungle was fairly open, and we thought we might try our luck on the elephants; so, calling them up, we mounted.

We had to proceed up-stream for some distance, as the bank was too abrupt to allow the elephants to descend. Having at length effected a passage, we moved down to where we had seen the tiger, and there, among the grass, we found half the carcass of a recently killed nyllghau. Bringing the elephants abreast, we turned up the hill, and presently came on three tigers sitting quietly in the grass within thirty paces of each other. They seemed to regard us with great unconcern. Whispering to the mahout to stop, I was in the act of raising my rifle, when, with a shrill trumpet, my elephant rushed to the front. I was of course jerked down into the seat, and before I could recover myself the three tigers had vanished. Looking round for my friend, I found that his elephant had behaved even worse than mine, and had nearly smashed him against the overhanging branch of a tree. We deplored our hard fate, and abused the elephants; but had I known then all I know now, the blame, and probably the punishment, would have fallen on the mahouts.

[Timidity in tiger-hunting is somewhat generally distributed, now affecting the elephant, now the tiger, and occasionally the bold hunter himself, as the following instance serves to show.]

An old iron pit in this jungle was shown to one of my friends, some years after my visit, by one of the natives of the place. He stated that he had on one occasion taken a youthful British sportsman to this cave, in which a tiger had been marked down. A fragment of rock was hurled into the pit, and out bolted the affrighted tiger. "There," said the shikaree, pointing to the left, "there ran the tiger; the sahib stood here; and there"—pointing to a branch twenty-five feet straight over his head—"there is the mark of the sahib's bullet." It is supposed that the tiger was not the only thing that was frightened on that day.

[In the case of another tiger-hunt which Cumming describes, the sport—i.e., the killing—was not all on the side of the men. Two cubs had been slain, and the tigress, furious at the loss of her young, was crouching in a covert, when a native ventured near the spot. The animal at once sprang upon him, buried her fangs deep in his body, and shook him as a dog would a rat. The man died before the next morning. On this day a tiger was roused in a locality where several deep *nullahs*, or ravines, joined the river.]

On this day Bulkley and Arbuthnot wished to try the elephant, so they mounted him together, and proceeded to beat down the bed of the stream towards Ashburner and myself, who were posted in trees on the bank. My tree was in a good position on the edge of a deep nullah, and, mounting with my gun-bearer, we perched ourselves and sat quiet.

We soon heard the elephant trumpet, and a glimpse was obtained of the tiger by those in the howdah; but the trees hung so much over the water, and were so large and dense, that the elephant could only be driven in the centre of the stream. Stones were flung in freely from above, but the tiger would not again show, though we worked after him for two hours.

[The effects of the hot July sun proved too much for Mr. Cumming, and he had to be helped down from his tree and placed in a shady place for recovery.]

I began to feel rather better, and Ashburner shouted to the others to come and have luncheon. He was busy unpacking the basket, when we heard a great uproar from the river, followed by two shots, and, snatching up our rifles, we ran forward in time to meet Bulkley staggering up the bank with his clothes all torn and bloody.

They had dismounted from the elephant in the bed of the river, where they were joined by some of the beaters, and were on their way up the bank to join us at luncheon. Arbuthnot was somewhat in advance, and Bulkley followed with a number of beaters, when the latter suddenly called out, "The tiger! the tiger!" and fled incontinently.

Bulkley wheeled round, and at that instant the tiger charged out. It had been lying in the deep shade caused by a mass of willows, bent over by a heap of drift and *débris* from the river; and Arbuthnot and the men with him must have passed within a few yards of it on their way up the bank. As the tiger charged, Bulkley fired both barrels in his face, but, failing to stop him, turned and endeavored to get away. His foot slipped and he fell forward against the bank. At that instant the tiger seized him by the back, just over the shoulder-blade, and carried him off for about twenty yards. Bulkley had probably wounded him in his charge, for he now dropped him and retired into the bush, and did not again show. The wounded man picked himself up, and met us as we advanced, and we supported him to the spot where we had been sitting.

Cutting open his clothes, we found his back fearfully lacerated, but the discharge of blood was not great. The tiger had lifted him by the muscles of the back, and that

with no tender grasp; but we could form no idea of the actual mischief done.

A litter having been constructed, we raised him and set off for the camp. His pluck was wonderful, and he conversed freely with us on the road, and explained the whole matter. On our arrival at the tent we made all preparations for taking him to the Baroda cantonment, distant about eighty miles, where we could place him under proper medical treatment. Meanwhile, we carefully washed his wounds, and over the whole laid a huge flour poultice.

[Bulkley's wounds were long in healing, and continued to discharge for more than a year, giving at times excessive pain. He then went to Bombay and consulted an eminent surgeon, who opened the wound and extracted considerable portions of the shoulder-blade which had been splintered off by the tiger's teeth. Soon after this the wound closed and healed. Shortly after this event another hunter met with a still worse misfortune.]

Another shooting-party was out, and, as their leave was up, we daily expected them in cantonments. One morning a man arrived with the news that one of the party had been wounded by a tiger, and was on his way in. Soon after, Langton, of my regiment, was carried in on a litter. Two days before, having left his comrades, he was on his way back to Baroda alone. Hearing of a tiger in the bed of the Mhye River, he went after and wounded it. The beast got away among some rocks, and as Langton was endeavoring to dislodge him he charged, knocked him over, and bit him through the elbow-joint and thumb. The tiger then left him, and his people got him home to his tent. Men were procured, and, having placed him on a litter, they set off towards the cantonment.

In this way they moved all that afternoon, the whole of the following day, and the third till eleven A.M., when they reached Baroda. The wounded man was quite sensible

and free from any great pain, and gave us a full account of his misadventure. We got him to bed, and he soon after fell off into a drowsy state, from which he never recovered. A brother officer and I watched him during the night, and at two A.M. I saw such a decided change come over him that I at once sent for the doctor, who was himself on the sick-list. All that was possible was done for Langton, but he never rallied, and died in the afternoon. . . . There was no doubt his death was accelerated by undue exposure to the sun after the shock which he had sustained.

[While officiating as political agent at Schore, our hunter had to do with a tiger who gave his tormentors abundance of work and fought desperately for his life.]

A few miles to the southward of Schore lies a scrub jungle of some extent. In no part very dense, it contains many small ravines, filled with long grass and thorny bushes, affording good shelter to tigers, which occasionally wander up from the larger coverts, attracted by the cattle from the surrounding villages. Late one evening a shikaree whom we had stationed at this spot came in and reported that a villager had just been killed by a tiger. The man with two companions had been gathering gum from the trees, when the tiger rushed out on them from a patch of grass, seizing him in his teeth, and killing him on the spot. His comrades were unarmed, and fled to the village.

It was too late to do anything that afternoon, but all was prepared for an early start, and by sunrise next morning we had ridden out to the jungle, where we met our gun-bearers with three good elephants. I was accompanied by the civil surgeon and the adjutant of the local corps. As the country was very open, and the sun was still low in the heavens, I urged them not to fire long shots should



the tiger rise on the approach of the elephants. I calculated that we should have no difficulty in again marking him down.

All preliminaries being arranged, we went off to the spot where the tiger had been seen, and there, face downward, lay the body of the unfortunate man. His clothes were torn, and a quantity of blood was on the ground; but the tiger had apparently not been hungry, for no portion of the body was eaten, and, as it had lain in the jungle all night, we were not sanguine.

Leaving a few villagers to carry home the dead man, we moved into some grass jungle, having previously posted men in different directions on high trees with orders to keep a good lookout. The adjutant was on the left, the doctor in the centre, and I was on the right of the line. We had not gone far before the tiger, a very large male, rose from a small water-course about sixty yards on my right front, and bounded up the opposite bank. He was too far off to allow of my shooting with certainty, therefore, trusting that he would lie up in the next thicket, I reserved my fire. The doctor, however, had caught sight of him, and, greatly excited, at once loosed his piece. I saw the shots strike the ground wide of the tiger, who increased his pace, and went off giving a few angry growls. We followed him up at once, and again I implored my companions not to fire unless they were certain that they could do so with good effect.

Half a mile farther on we again started the tiger,—this time he was within a fair range of the doctor, who, however, missed him, and we feared that even my wonted good luck would not give us another chance. But the sun was now high and powerful, and as we knew that there was no strong covert within several miles, we followed on in the direction which the tiger had taken.

About a mile ahead we came up to one of our scouts on a tree, who reported that the tiger had entered the bushes which fringed the edge of a small dry nullah running up into the plain. Quietly forming up the three elephants in line, we moved slowly on, and soon after saw the tiger going off about eighty yards before us. As he seemed thoroughly scared, I deemed it prudent this time to fire, on the chance of wounding him. The doctor also fired at the same moment, and the tiger lurched heavily to one side and disappeared among the bushes.

I had just taken up another rifle, and we were cautiously advancing, when the enraged brute rushed to meet us. He was within twenty paces before we saw him, and was evidently inclined to do mischief, but again we opened fire and dropped him. He rose, however, in an instant, and again came on, roaring wickedly; but, apparently not caring to close with the elephants, he dashed through our line and went back up the nullah.

We quickly reloaded, and followed him up, carefully examining every bush and tuft of grass. In this manner we had advanced to the very head of the nullah, which terminated in a large green corinda-bush. The tiger made no sign, and we began to fear that he might have slunk away to the right or left, but, determined to make sure, I directed my mahout to take me up to the corinda-bush. The head of the elephant had almost touched the foliage when the tiger, now mad with rage, sprang at him, seizing him by the root of the trunk in his teeth, while he buried his claws in the sides of his face.

With a frantic shriek the elephant dropped his head, and endeavored to pin the tiger to the ground with his tusks. It was a moment of intense excitement, and I was seriously alarmed for the mahout, who, seated on the neck of the elephant, was in great danger of being thrown

down between the struggling brutes. My own situation, too, was by no means pleasant, for I was thrown forward in the howdah, and I dreaded lest the girths should give way. However, the *graith* was good, and I kept my position, and as the elephant with a desperate effort shook off the tiger, I found I had retained my three guns uninjured.

The tiger made off down the nullah before I could again fire, and it was some time before the elephant, who continued to dance and shriek with rage, could be sufficiently quieted to enable me to follow after him. Throughout the struggle my companions, though only a few paces off, were unable to render any assistance, fearing to fire lest they might hit the elephant. About one hundred yards down the nullah we came on the tiger, crouching under a bank. He at once charged, and this time left the mark of his teeth and claws in the head of the adjutant's elephant, but he was now less lively, and one or two shots put in with effect rolled him over. He was a fine beast, a male of the largest size, with a rich dark skin. He was, moreover, very shaggy about the sides of the head, and was altogether a good specimen.

[Our redoubtable hunter seems to have been proof against tigers. He was less so against bears, and came near receiving his quietus from one of these creatures, as the following narrative will show. Two bears had been "marked down" in a grassy and bushy place, and directing his companion, Hunt, to take post on the face of the hill above, Cumming advanced into the grass, followed by his native attendants.]

As I was carefully endeavoring to avoid treading on the dry sticks, I came on a covey of the small bustard quail. These birds are generally found in the tree jungles, and sit in the grass closely packed together, rising simultaneously, with much noise, when disturbed. I had almost stepped

on them before they rose; and as they flew up into my face I was a good deal startled. I had hardly settled my nerves when I saw the male bear about thirty paces in front of me, making off at speed towards the right. I fired at once, but the smoke came back on me; and, as it cleared away, I saw the other bear, not ten yards off, going away after the first.

I let drive with the second barrel, on which she wheeled round and came straight at me, grunting viciously. Rising on her hind legs, she attempted to seize me by the throat in her teeth; and, as I fended her off with my left arm, she got it in her mouth, and crunched it up like a cucumber. Meanwhile, she was not idle with her formidable claws, with which she tore open my clothes, and gave me an ugly score across the ribs. At the moment Bappo rushed in and shot her through the body. She dropped on all fours, but retained her hold on my hand with her teeth, tugging furiously to get me down. As we struggled, a young bear which she carried on her back, and which had been struck by my shot, fell dead at our feet; and the old lady's temper was evidently not improved by the bereavement.

Bappo behaved admirably. He again rushed to the front, and, raising his rifle, watched his opportunity for another shot. I called to him not to blow my hand off; and at that instant he fired, and the bear relaxed her grip and fell back with a ragged hole through her head. All this was the work of a few seconds.

I had now time to examine my hurts. My left wrist was nearly bitten through, both bones were smashed, and the hand twisted round. I was, moreover, cut across the ribs by the bear's claws. Holding up the wounded limb in a hanging position, I turned the hand round into its place, and supported it on the other arm till Hunt, who had now

come up, had cut some slips of bamboo, and bound the whole up with a turban. I was astonished at the utter absence of pain, for the wound was gruesome to behold. . . .

I had in my camp a native dresser from the dispensary at Maunpore, and by him my wound was artificially bound up. Both bones of the arm were smashed; the ulna was broken about an inch from the joint, and the ends protruded. The radius was also broken. I had on the third finger of my left hand a ring which had not been off for many years, and could not be removed. Knowing that my hand would probably swell up, I lost no time in filing this off. Meanwhile, food had been got ready; and after partaking of refreshment, I mounted in a litter, borne on men's shoulders, and set off for Mundlaisir, distant thirty miles, hoping there to obtain good surgical treatment. . . .

That evening [of the next day] Dr. Watson, of the Bengal army, arrived, after a thirty miles' ride from Mhow, and considerably relieved my mind by intimating his intention of endeavoring to save the hand. He pleasantly remarked that any man could cut off a limb, but that it required a surgeon to save one.

I received much attention from all my friends at Mundlaisir, and in about ten days was so far recovered as to be able to be moved in a palanquin to Mhow, where I remained under the surgical care and hospitable roof of Dr. Watson. I have no joint in that wrist, and can only partially close my hand, but the limb is serviceable in most ways; and, as Watson used to remark, "It is better than a hook." My misadventure occurred about the 16th of April, and I was not able to take the field again before the 20th of June.

## AN ELEPHANT KRAAL IN CEYLON.

JOSEPH MOORE.

[It was on the occasion of the visit of the two sons of the Prince of Wales (Albert Victor and George, who were making a tour of the world as midshipmen) to Ceylon that a grand elephant-hunt was projected, as a finale to the festivities given in their honor. Joseph Moore, author of "The Queen's Empire," was in Ceylon at the time, and took the opportunity to witness the Cingalese mode of taking this great animal. We subjoin his account of the exciting occurrence.]

THE ground chosen for the exciting sport was a narrow valley close to the Labugama water-works, by which Colombo—thirty miles distant—is to be supplied. A locality known to be frequented by elephants is selected,—one where the needful water, shade, and forage are present.

In such a spot the kraal had been erected by the natives, under the directions of their chiefs. This popular term is a heritage from the Dutch occupation, and corresponds to our word corral. It formed an irregular figure, but not unlike a square with one corner truncated. The matter of outline, however, is governed somewhat by the topography of the site. It may describe a rectangle or a triangle, but must always have the added funnel, to lead the herd to the entrance. Care must be taken not to destroy the foliage about the approach to the trap, as the elephant has a keen instinct of danger. The enclosure is constructed of the trunks of trees, nearly a foot in diameter, and firmly set in the ground, crossed with rails of lesser thickness, and usually braced from the outside with forked timbers. In place of Western modes of joining, the parts are lashed with rattan and other stout tendrils, known as jungle ropes.

The whole covered a space of some three acres, and had a height of about ten feet. Adjoining the kraal were stands for the distinguished guests and visitors from all parts of the island to view the operation of fettering the captives.

Despite its strength, such a barrier would be futile were an enraged elephant allowed to attack it with all its power. This contingency is generally prevented by stratagem; but at times it occurs, when the escape of the herd is probable. The devices employed to ward off a charge are of the simplest character, never implying force, but always depending upon man's craft and daring, and the timorous nature of the giant brute.

After the kraal had been completed, nearly three thousand natives were engaged for several weeks in securing the game. A large section of country was surrounded, and the cordon slowly contracted until about twenty elephants, comprising two distinct herds, were brought within surveillance. One chief declared that he had driven his herd eighty miles. In pursuing this work of patience, tact, and hardship, the beaters are cautious not to alarm the elephants, but to allow them, as much as possible, to pursue their usual peaceful habits in the jungle, at the same time advancing them, step by step, day and night, in the direction of the stockade. When the circle has been so reduced as to excite their mistrust, or the danger of a stampede, fires are built at close intervals around the line, and the watchers flash torches, brandish light spears, or sound a cry known to be hideous to the elephantine ear, "Harri-harri-hooi-ooi!" . . .

Sunset was upon the camp before the stir caused by the arrival of the princes had subsided, and then word came that the drive in would not be attempted until the following morning. After dinner some veterans of Indian life amused us for an hour or more with stories of elephants, tigers,



leopards, and snakes, before we retired to the rude couches to dream of encounters with savage creatures. But it was not all a dream.

Shortly before daylight, when the prattling Singalese outside made it impossible to sleep, there fell upon our ears the most appalling cry of terror that a human being could utter. In an instant we were upon our feet. Its piercing tone of despair roused the occupant of every hut, and a moment later the ominous word "cobra" flew from tongue to tongue. Men clad in pajamas and slippers, followed by excited natives, dashed to the rescue,—to find that a partition of light palm-leaves had fallen on the slumbering victim of the fright. The incident was serious enough, however, to prove the animated respect which "old Indians" have for the imperious serpent.

After this adventure we had the early tea and prepared for the bugle-call, the signal that the great spectacle of the day was about to commence. Morning passed, but without the expected summons. To occupy the time and learn the cause of the delay, we walked over the hills to the rear of the kraal, only to hear that the beaters were having difficulty in bringing the game to the entrance.

Here were stationed the large tame elephants selected to assist in noosing their wild brethren. One of the number, an enormous tusker, equipped with chains and ropes, stood the ideal of strength and docility. Encouraged by his driver we fed him with sweet stalks, which were taken with the utmost grace, and in return he gently lifted us high into the air upon his tusks, using his trunk with almost human care to guard us against a fall.

The trained elephant is associated in the Occident with amusement only, but throughout the East Indies he serves various purposes of utility. In addition to his offices in war and pageantry, of which we have already had glimpses, he

is valuable in constructing roads, moving heavy stones, uprooting small trees, clearing a jungle, hauling weighty loads, and piling timber.

Most observers agree that his power and sagacity are best displayed in the task of handling lumber. At the command of his mahout, emphasized by the prick of an iron goad, he will select a log among many,—weighing half a ton or more,—lift it upon his tusks, carry it to the required place, and return for another.

Two working in conjunction will rear a pile with the greatest accuracy, arranging the logs in rows crossing each other at right angles.

As long as silence governed the plan of strategy, visitors were enjoined from going towards the front of the kraal, and this prohibition, added to the long delay, caused much outspoken impatience; but when, suddenly, a distant storm of cries and shrill noises announced that the “drive in” was imminent, and the need of concealment past, we hurried forward to an elevated position overlooking the entrance.

The hunted elephants, terrified by the uproar, bolted headlong to the open gate, halted there for a moment undecided, and then, suspecting the trap, turned again on their pursuers. An army of natives, reinforced by many European volunteers, retired without ceremony, but only a few rods, and then promptly reformed their lines. Advancing again, the beaters boldly pricked the infuriated, trumpeting monsters with the light wands they carried, at the same time wildly gesticulating and shouting “harri-harri.” But the herd stood in close order, refusing to move forward.

A long and stirring contest now ensued, much of which was hidden from us by the tall jungle. Even when the combatants were invisible, the position of the elephants was indicated by the cracking bamboos, waving trees, sten-

torian growls, and sometimes an uplifted trunk. Under the leadership of a savage cow bent upon protecting the calf at her side, they repeatedly charged the cordon, only to be driven back by harmless screams and toy spears. Finally a native ventured too near the desperate mother, and in an instant she caught him with her trunk and crushed out his life with a mammoth foot.

It was now decided that the leader must be disabled to curb her fury. After a short truce—until a rifle was brought—the gallant brute fell, wounded near the ear; and while her blood poured out in a great stream, the little calf ran about the prostrate form in appealing distress. The cow lay perhaps five minutes, then unexpectedly rose, gathered the herd about her, and led them with a rush through the funnel and into the enclosure. I saw every one of them pass the fence,—seven wild elephants; and in the flush of that moment I had scored a rare experience. In an instant watchers sprang forward and barred the entrance. At last the captives were “kraaled.”

The instinct that two herds of elephants never mingle was dominant even during the critical struggle, the larger body, yet outside, having succeeded in maintaining separate ground, and so, for a time, escaped capture. Hence the lines were continued with unabated vigilance around the herd still in the jungle, until the gate could be safely opened for another drive.

Contrary to all precedent, steps were immediately taken for “tying up” that afternoon. Usually a night is allowed to intervene, as the prisoners spend their rage and exhaust themselves in the interval by vain assaults upon the stockade, tearing through the heavy undergrowth, and bellowing in alarm and bewilderment. By morning they stand together, silent and subdued, and as far from their tormentors as possible.

This premature movement, undertaken against the advice of the chiefs, was ordered for the reason that the Princes were timed to leave that evening. Unwisely, only two days had been allotted in the reception programme for the kraal, and so the royal guests were hurried away to Nuwara Eliya for an elk-hunt, which proved a failure. Many visitors, however, remained until the end, including the admiral and some of his lieutenants.

Briefly, the too hasty attempt at noosing, executed in a deluge of rain, was unsuccessful; this, be it noted, in defiance of the herculean efforts of three tame elephants to butt and belabor the wild ones into subjection. As the wounded cow still gave battle, she was reluctantly killed during this fray, and the marksman proudly bore off the tail as a trophy.

Let us pass over the detail of how the corral was forced that night and the captives escaped. Also of how they were soon retaken, along with six from the other herd. In a word, when the "tying up" began in earnest there were twelve unfortunates in the toils.

The victims were engaged in cooling each other with mud and water when the bars of the small rear entrance were removed and four tame elephants entered, each mounted by two or three noosers, and followed by assistants with spears and ropes. In a trice the herd took fright and charged the palisade, only to retreat before the puny wands and loud whoops of the guards. Despairing of escape, they dashed to and fro, round and round, to avoid contact with the approaching foes. Thus pressed without respite, they sometimes evinced a disposition to be warlike, which was effectually checked by a few blows or thumps from the tame animals. In these encounters the exposed riders were unnoticed and unharmed, but the men on foot were cautious to evade attack.

After long manœuvring the trained elephants managed to separate a large cow from the herd, and so ranged themselves about her that she was forced to stand. This was the opportunity wanted, and in a flash an agile native slipped under one of the friendly brutes, rope in hand. Waiting until the restless prisoner lifted her hind foot, he deftly placed the noose about her leg and withdrew. Another venture fettered the second limb, the decoys meanwhile warding off with their trunks several wrathful strokes aimed at the man.

The ropes were now firmly secured to a stout tree, and the captive left entirely alone save her calf. Then began a titanic struggle for liberty that no few words can justly portray. Finding herself baffled in untying the many knots, or in uprooting the tree, she writhed, screamed, tore at the foliage, pawed the earth, tossed clouds of dust over her back, flung her trunk about fiercely, and planted her head upon the ground for leverage to rend asunder the bonds.

At length she fell in exhaustion, anguish, and despair, and lay motionless and resigned. The natives well knew that these symptoms forebode the loss of their prize. She panted for an hour or more, sighed deeply, and died—of “broken heart.” A male, somewhat above medium size, was next submitted to the exciting ordeal with minor variations. While he stood jammed between two of the tame elephants, away from any tree, the nooser induced him to raise his hind foot by touching it gently, drew the running knot about his leg, and retreated. In this case the rope was attached to the girth of one of the trained animals, and the sagacious brute, knowing exactly what was expected of him, began to drag the captive towards a tree facing the spectators’ stands.

The wild one resisted violently, but without avail, as the

tame allies steadily pushed, butted, and pulled him across the enclosure. When the tying was complete his contortions to free himself were astonishing, though in the end he calmed down hopeless and covered with soil.

While these operations were in progress the two orphan calves became troublesome, wailing, charging to and fro, chasing the noosers, and running under the grown elephants. As the element of danger was absent, the binding of these little ones was merry work. In addition to securing one leg, a noose was passed around their necks. They bellowed, threw off the ropes, rapped their assailants, and displayed the most comical exasperation.

Elephants with tusks are comparatively rare in Ceylon, but there was a huge one in the kraal fifty or sixty years of age,—too old to be trained. Contrary to rule, he was the most cowardly of the herd, persistently declining to fight, and always eluding his pursuers. The natives were indisposed seriously to attempt his capture, and even the tame beasts preferred to leave him undisturbed.

The process of training commences by giving the captive a small quantity of food, which is increased from day to day. At the expiration of a week or two, according to the individual temper, he is chained between tame elephants and led away to bathe. If patience and kindness be exercised, in two months his driver can ride him unattended, and in another similar period he is prepared for labor.

The work of "tying up" continued a second day, but few strangers cared to remain. At the conclusion the prizes were sold by auction, realizing from sixty rupees for a calf to three hundred and fifty rupees for the largest. The tusker and one or two others were ultimately allowed to break through the palisade and return to the jungle.

## THE VENICE OF THE EAST.

SIR JOHN BOWRING.

[Sir John Bowring, born in Exeter, England, in 1792, was noted for his linguistic attainments, and his works on the poetry of several European countries. He became editor of the *Westminster Review* in 1825, and in 1849 was made British consul at Hong-Kong, and subsequently governor of that city. He also spent some time in Siam as British envoy, and wrote a valuable work on that kingdom, "The Kingdom and People of Siam," embodying his experiences and those of others. He died in 1872. From his work we make the following selections concerning the great river and the principal cities of Siam. Of the annual overflow of the Meinam River he says:]

THE Meinam has its annual inundation. Impregnated with the rich soil which it brings from the interior, in the month of June its waters begin to rise, and in August they overflow the banks to a height sometimes exceeding six feet above the ordinary level. In the first public audience I had with the first king, he called my attention to the inundation of the river as the main source of the fertility of the soil; the rice-fields become greener and more promising as the waters spread, which generally remain till the month of November, the land having the appearance of a lake. Boats traverse it in all directions, temporary canals being formed among the rice-fields to facilitate their circulation.

Pallegoix affirms that though the high lands are submerged for several months, the lower regions of the country, at a distance of thirty miles from the sea, are never inundated, which he attributes to the strength of the tide, which, in rising, drives back the descending waters with an irresistible force, and at the ebb they make their way



by the ordinary stream to the ocean, so that they have no time to spread themselves over the adjacent lands. A failure of the inundation is perdition to a large portion of the rice-crops.

But the country sometimes suffers fearfully from these inundations. That of 1831 nearly destroyed all the sugar plantations, and, three or four feet of water continuing to cover the face of the country, almost all the cattle perished. The rice-harvest was seriously affected, and the finest fruit-trees swept away, so that it was said only one durian-tree was left in Siam. But fruit abounded—fruit of singular variety and excellence—in 1855, and the mischief of the floods appeared to be wholly repaired.

When the waters of the Meinam are supposed to have reached their highest point, the king deposes one hundred Bonzes (Buddhist priests), who are instructed to command the inundation to proceed no farther. These functionaries embark on state barges, issue the royal mandate to the waters, bidding them turn back in their course, and they accompany their intervention with exorcisms, which are sometimes ineffectual, and show that the falling of the waters is no more subject to the commands of the sovereign of Siam than were the tides on the British shores controlled by the Danish king. . . .

In ascending and descending the Meinam I was amused with the novel sight of fish leaving the river,—gliding over the wet banks and losing themselves among the trees of the jungle. Pallegoix asserts that such fish will wander more than a league from the water. "Some years ago," I translate his words, "a great heat had dried up all the ponds in the neighborhood of Ayuthia; during the night torrents of rain fell. Next day, going for a walk into the country, how great was my surprise at seeing the ponds almost full, and a quantity of fish leaping about. Whence

have these fish come? I inquired of a laborer: yesterday there was not one! He said they were come under favor of the rain. In 1831, when fish were uncommonly cheap, the Bishop of Siam thought fit to buy a supply of living fish, and he poured fifty hundred-weight into his ponds; but in less than a month nine-tenths escaped during a rain that fell in the night. There are three species of this wandering fish, called *pla-xon*, *pla-duk*, *pla-mó*. The first is voracious, and about the size of a carp; salted and dried, it can be preserved for a year; it is very abundant, is exported to China, Singapore, and Java, and is a particularly wholesome and health-giving fish.

"The *dog's-tongue* is a fish shaped like the sole; it attaches itself to the bottom of boats, and makes a sonorous noise, which is more musical when several are stuck to the same bank and act in concert."

Kämpfer (one of the oldest and most authoritative of Oriental travellers) puts forth the theory that were it not for the vast pains it would require to trace out its several channels through the forests and deserts, and to open a navigation, it might be possible for vessels to go hence (from Siam) to Bengal. Of the Meinam he remarks that the inundations are the results of the dissolving of the snow in the mountainous regions, aided by the heavy rains; that the land water is nitrous, the river sweet and wholesome; that though the flow of water is naturally towards the sea, the inundations principally benefit the upper and middle regions; that the fertility of the soil is such that the rice grows as fast as the water rises, and that the ripe ears are gathered by the reapers, and the straw, often of incredible length, left in the water, and that if the absence of the north wind prevent the return of the waters to their ordinary channel, there is a great creation of *malaria*, whose effects are most pernicious to the public health, and are

sought to be warded off by imposing and costly religious ceremonies through the whole country.

[Of the ancient capital of Siam, now greatly reduced in importance, Bowring says:]

The ancient city of Ayuthia, whose pagodas and palaces were the object of so much laudation from ancient travellers, and which was called the Oriental Venice, from the abundance of its canals and the beauty of its public buildings, is now almost wholly in ruins, its towers and temples whelmed in the dust and covered with rank vegetation. The native name of Ayuthia was *Sijan Thijan*, meaning "Terrestrial Paradise." The Siamese are in the habit of giving very ostentatious names to their cities, which, as La Loubère says, "do signify great things." Pallegoix speaks of the ambitious titles given to Siamese towns, among which he mentions "the City of Angels," "the City of Archangels," and the "Celestial Spectacle." . . .

Ayuthia was formerly one of the most distinguished cities of the East. The spires of the pagodas and pyramids, blackened by time, still tower above the magnificent trees which grow amidst the masses of ruins they overshadow. The ancient city was several leagues in circumference. Amidst the broken walls of palaces and temples are colossal statues from fifty to sixty feet high. These are mostly of brick, covered with brass of the thickness of two fingers. The annals of Siam report that, in founding one of these statues, twenty thousand pounds of copper, two thousand pounds of silver, and four hundred pounds of gold were employed. The walls of the city are overturned,—thick and impenetrable masses of weeds, brushwood, and tall trees, tenanted by bats and vultures, cover the vast desolation. In the midst of the heaps of rubbish treasures are often discovered.

The new city of Ayuthia surrounds the ancient site. It has two lines of floating bazaars. Its population is about forty thousand. At a league's distance from the city, on the northern side, is a majestic edifice called the "Golden Mountain," built A.D. 1387. It is a pyramid four hundred feet high, each side having a staircase by which large galleries surrounding the building are mounted. From the third stage there is a splendid prospect; and there are four corridors by which the dome is entered, in whose centre is a gilded image of Buddha, rendered fetid by the depositions of millions of bats, which day and night are flitting in dire confusion around the altar. The dome is elevated one hundred and fifty feet above the galleries, and terminates in a gilded spire.

[Bowring copies the following statement from a visitor to the ruins of Ayuthia.]

The only visible remains of the old city are a large number of wats, in different stages of decay. They extend over an area of several miles of country, and lie hidden in the trees and jungle, which have sprung up around them. As the beauty of a Siamese temple consists not in its architecture, but in the quantity of arabesque work with which the brick and stucco walls are covered, it soon yields to the power of time and weather, and becomes, if neglected, an unsightly heap of bricks and wood-work, overgrown with parasitical plants. It is thus at Ayuthia. A vast pile of bricks and earth, with here and there a spire still rearing itself to the skies, marks the spot where once stood a shrine before which thousands were wont to prostrate themselves in superstitious adoration.

There stand also the formerly revered images of Guadama, once resplendent with gold and jewels, but now broken, mutilated, and without a shadow of their previous

splendor. There is one sacred spire of immense height and size, which is still kept in some kind of repair, and which is sometimes visited by the king. It is situated about four miles from the town, in the centre of a plain of paddy-fields. Boats and elephants are the only means of reaching it, as there is no road whatever, except such as the creeks and swampy paddy-fields afford. It bears much celebrity among the Siamese, on account of its height, but can boast of nothing attractive to foreigners but the fine view which is obtained from the summit.

[Of Bangkok, the present capital of Siam, Mouhot, another traveller, says :]

It is impossible to state the exact population of Bangkok, the census of all Eastern countries being extremely imperfect. It is estimated, however, at from three to four hundred thousand inhabitants. Owing to its semi-aquatic site, we had reached the centre of the city while I believed myself still in the country ; I was only undeceived by the sight of various European buildings, and the steamers which plough this majestic river, whose margins are studded with floating houses and shops.

Bangkok is the Venice of the East, and whether bent on business or pleasure, you must go by water. In place of the noise of carriages and horses, nothing is heard but the dip of oars, the songs of sailors, or the cries of the Cipayes (Siamese rowers). The river is the high street and the boulevard, while the canals are the cross streets, along which you glide, lying luxuriously at the bottom of your canoe. . . .

On a little island in the middle of the river rises a famous and rather remarkable pagoda, containing, I was told, the bodies of their last kings. The effect of this pyramidal structure reflected in the deep and limpid water, with its

background of tropical verdure, was most striking. As for the town, all that I saw of it was disgustingly dirty.

The Meinam deserves its beautiful name,—“Mother of Waters,”—for its depth permits the largest vessels to coast along its banks without danger: so closely, indeed, that the birds may be heard singing gayly in the overhanging branches, and the hum of numberless insects enlivens the deck by night and by day. The whole effect is picturesque and beautiful. Here and there houses are dotted about on either bank, and numerous villages give variety to the distant landscape.

We met a great number of canoes managed with incredible dexterity by men and women, and often even by children, who are here early familiarized with the water. I saw the governor's children, almost infants, throw themselves into the river, and swim and dive like water-fowl. It was a curious and interesting sight, particularly from the strong contrast between the little ones and the adults. Here, as in the whole plain of Siam, which I afterwards visited, I met most attractive children, tempting one to stop and caress them; but as they grow older they rapidly lose all beauty, the habit of chewing the betel-nut producing an unsightly blackening of the teeth and swelling of the lips.

[Bowring gives the following further information about the city.]

A great proportion of the houses float on large rafts, and are sometimes seen moving up and down the river, conveying all the belongings of a family to some newly-selected locality. It is a curious sight to witness these locomotive abodes, sometimes consisting of many apartments, loosened from the cables which have attached them to a particular spot, and going forth on their travels to fresh destinations. On the borders of the river there are

scarcely any but floating houses, which can at any time be detached and removed bodily, and without any inconvenience, at the will of the owner.

There are a few houses in Bangkok built of stone and brick; but those of the middle classes are of wood, while the habitations of the poor are constructed of light bamboos, and roofed with leaves of the atap palm. Fires are frequent; and from the combustible character of the erections, hundreds of habitations are often destroyed. But in a few days the mischief is generally repaired, for on such occasions friends and neighbors lend a willing hand.

A house generally consists of two divisions; one occupied by the males, the other by the females. The piles on which they are built are sunk three or four feet into the ground; and the floor is raised six or eight feet from its surface, and is reached by a rude ladder, which, if the front of the house be towards the river, is made accessible at low tide. Of the floating houses, some are of boards, others of bamboo, or either wicker-work or palm-leaves. These houses have generally a veranda in front, and a small wing at each end. When used for shops or warehouses the whole frontage is removed, and the contents exposed for inspection to the boats which pass by on the river.

The existence of the people of Bangkok may be called amphibious. The children pass much of their time in the water, paddling and diving and swimming as if it were their native element. Boats often run against one another, and those within them are submerged in the water; but it seldom happens that any life is lost, or mischief done to the persons whose boats are run down. I have again and again seen boats bottom upward, whose owners have floated them to the shore, or otherwise repaired the damage done as speedily as possible. The constant occurrence of petty disasters seems to reconcile everybody to their conse-



quences. Generally speaking, the boats are paddled about with consummate dexterity, the practice being acquired from the earliest trainings of childhood. . . .

An elevation of eighty or one hundred feet will not carry you up sufficiently high to see a hundredth part of the houses that thickly stud the river-banks and all the canals, because of the high and dense foliage of the cocoanuts, betel, palmyra, mangosteen, tamarind, and a great variety of other fruit and flowering trees which so hide most of the vast prospect as to make it appear to be little else than a dense primeval forest. But it is a forest of "living green," and we may almost say of "never withering flowers." A richer foliage, year in and year out, cannot, probably, be found anywhere on earth.

Should you ascend the great watch-tower near the palace of the first king, you would see at your feet, and to the north and the south a mile or two each way, a density of human dwellings, but with the exception of the fifteen acres included in *Wat Pra Chetoophon*, and the forty-three in the palace of the first king, and forty in the palace of the second king, and twenty or more in *Wat Maha-tat*, the buildings are not nearly as compact as in our great Western cities. And looking to the eastward, you would see, even within the city walls, that "there remaineth yet much land to be possessed." Thirty-five years ago the area comprised within the citadel had much more of ground than now, which might well have led foreign observers to think that that unoccupied ground was left for the purpose of having ample room for the people to flee to, and find refuge under cover of the city walls in times of invasion from the enemy.

Looking from this observatory westward, your vision crosses the river but a little way, and then is expanded on what seems to be an unbroken forest, although it is in

truth full of canals, houses, gardens, orchards, and paddy-fields. Looking upon the face of the broad Meinam, you will see her still and glistening like a dim mirror, lying in the form of a monstrous letter S, and yet animated with human beings, gliding on her bosom in all kinds of watercraft, and you will see a line of shipping extending from the upper fort down the river three miles, thickly moored in the middle of the stream. The only objects to break the even circle of the horizon as you look at it in the clearest day from this stand-point are the mountains of Bangplasoï and Petchaburee. But the air is very seldom clear enough for this sight with the naked eye, and not very often even with a glass.

[Funerals of important persons in Siam seem to be simply a merry-making on a large scale. The following description of the funeral of one of the high commissioners who negotiated the English treaty, and who died a few days after the signing of the treaty, was furnished to Sir John Bowring by an eye-witness.]

The building of the "*men*," or temple, in which the burning was to take place, occupied four months; during the whole of which time between three and four hundred men were constantly engaged. The whole of it was executed under the personal superintendence of the "*Kalahome*."

It would be difficult to imagine a more beautiful object than this temple was, when seen from the opposite side of the river. The style of architecture was similar to that of the other temples in Siam; the roof rising in the centre, and thence running down in a series of gables, terminating in curved points. The roof was covered entirely with scarlet and gold, while the lower part of the building was blue, with stars of gold. Below, the temple had four entrances leading directly to the pyre; upon each side, as you entered, were placed magnificent mirrors, which re-

flected the whole interior of the building, which was decorated with blue and gold, in the same manner as the exterior. From the roof depended immense chandeliers, which at night increased the effect beyond description. Sixteen large columns, running from north to south, supported the roof. The entire height of the building must have been one hundred and twenty feet, its length about fifty feet, and breadth forty feet. In the centre was a raised platform, about seven feet high, which was the place upon which the urn containing the body was to be placed; upon each side of this were stairs covered with scarlet and gold cloth.

This building stood in the centre of a piece of ground of about two acres extent, the whole of which ground was covered over with close rattan-work, in order that visitors might not wet their feet, the ground being very muddy.

This ground was enclosed by a wall, along the inside of which myriads of lamps were disposed, rendering the night as light as the day. The whole of the grounds belonging to the adjoining temple contained nothing but tents, under which Siamese plays were performed by dancing-girls during the day; during the night, transparencies were in vogue. Along the bank of the river, Chinese and Siamese plays (performed by men) were in great force; and to judge by the frequent cheering of the populace, no small talent was shown by the performers, which talent in Siam consists entirely in obscenity and vulgarity.

All approaches were blocked up long before daylight each morning by hundreds—nay, thousands of boats of every description in Siam, *sampans*, *mapet*, *ma k'êng*, *ma guen*, etc.; these were filled with presents of white cloth, no other presents being accepted or offered during a funeral. How many ship-loads of fine shirting were presented during those few days it is impossible to say. Some

conception of the number of boats may be had from the fact that, in front of my floating house, I counted seventy-two large boats, all of which had brought cloth.

The concourse of people night and day was quite as large as at any large fair in England; and the whole scene, with the drums and shows, the illuminations and the fireworks, strongly reminded me of Greenwich Fair at night. The varieties in national costume were considerable, from the long flowing dresses of the Mussulman to the scanty *panhung* of the Siamese.

Upon the first day of the ceremonies, when I rose at daylight, I was quite surprised at the number and elegance of the large boats that were dashing about the river in every direction; some of them with elegantly-formed little spires (two in each boat) of a snowy-white, picked out with gold; others with magnificent scarlet canopies, with curtains of gold; others filled with soldiers dressed in red, blue, or green, according to their respective regiments; the whole making a most effective *tableau*, far superior to any we had during the time the embassy was here.

While I was admiring this scene, I heard the cry of "*Sedet*" (the name of the king when he goes out), and turning round, beheld the fleet of the king's boats sweeping down. His majesty stopped at the *men*, where an apartment had been provided for him. The moment the king left his boat, the most intense stillness prevailed,—a silence that was absolutely painful; this was, after the lapse of a few seconds, broken by a slight stroke of a tom-tom. At that sound, every one on shore and in the boats fell on their knees, and silently and imperceptibly the barge containing the high-priest parted from the shore at the Somdetch's palace, and floated with the tide towards the *men*. This barge was immediately followed by that containing the urn, which was placed upon a throne in the

centre of the boat. One priest knelt upon the lower part of the urn in front and one at the back. (It had been constantly watched since his death.) Nothing could exceed the silence and *immovability* of the spectators; the tales I used to read of nations being turned to statues were here realized, with the exception that all had the same attitude. It was splendid, but it was fearful. During the whole of the next day the urn stayed in the *men*, in order that the people might come and pay their last respects.

The urn, or rather, its exterior cover, was composed of the finest gold, elegantly carved and studded with innumerable diamonds. It was about five feet high, and two feet in diameter.

Upon the day of the burning, the two kings arrived about four P.M. The golden cover was taken off, and an interior urn of brass now contained the body, which rested upon cross-bars at the bottom of the urn. Beneath were all kind of odoriferous gums.

The first king, having distributed yellow cloths to an indefinite quantity of priests, ascended the steps which led to the pyre, holding in his hand a lighted candle, and set fire to the inflammable materials beneath the body. After him came the second king, who placed a bundle of candles in the flames; then followed the priests, then the princes, and lastly the relations and friends of the deceased. The flames rose constantly above the vase, but there was no unpleasant smell.

His majesty, after all had thrown in their candles, returned to his seat, where he distributed to the Europeans a certain number of limes, each containing a gold ring or a small piece of money; then he commenced *scrambling* the limes, and seemed to take particular pleasure in just throwing them between the princes and the missionaries, in order that they might meet together in the "tug of war."

The next day, the bones were taken out, and distributed among his relations; and this closed the ceremonies. During the whole time, the river each night was covered with fireworks; and in Siam the pyrotechnic art is far from being despicable.

---

## THE FOOTSTEP OF BUDDHA.

BISHOP PALLEGOIX.

[Bishop Pallegoix, a French ecclesiastic who long resided in Siam, wrote a valuable work on that country, entitled "Description du Royaume Thai ou Siam." To this work Sir John Bowring is largely indebted, and we append his translation of the venerable bishop's account of one of the leading show-places of the country. The celebrated footstep was discovered early in the seventeenth century. Its locality has since been a favorite place of resort for pilgrims. Bowring thus introduces the subject:]

BISHOP PALLEGOIX speaks of a large assemblage of gayly-ornamented barges filled with multitudes of people in holiday dresses, whom he met above Ayuthia, going on a pilgrimage to the "foot of Buddha." The women and girls wore scarfs of silk and bracelets of gold and silver, and filled the air with their songs, to which troops of priests and young men responded in noisy music. The place of debarkation is Tha Rua, which is on the road to Phrabat, where the footprint of the god is found. More than five hundred barges were there, all illuminated: a drama was performed on the shore; there was a great display of vocal and instrumental music, tea-drinking, playing at cards and dice, and the merry festivities lasted through the whole night.

Early the following day the *cortège* departed by the

river. It consisted of princes, nobles, rich men, ladies, girls, priests, all handsomely clad. They landed, and many proceeded on foot, while the more distinguished mounted on elephants to move towards the sacred mountain. In such localities the spirit of fanaticism is usually intemperate and persecuting; and the bishop says the governor received him angrily, and accused him of "intending to debauch his people by making them Christians." But he was softened by presents and explanations, and ultimately gave the bishop a passport, recommending him to "all the authorities and chiefs of villages under his command as a Christian priest (*farang*), and as his friend, and ordering that he should be kindly treated, protected, and furnished with all the provisions he might require."

Of his visit to the sacred mountain, so much the resort of Buddhist pilgrims, Pallegoix gives this account:

I engaged a guide, mounted an elephant, and took the route of Phrabat, followed by my people. I was surprised to find a wide and excellent road, paved with bricks, and opened in a straight line across the forests. On both sides of the road, at a league's distance, were halls or stations, with wells dug for the use of the pilgrims. Soon the road became crooked, and we stopped to bathe in a large pond. At four o'clock we reached the magnificent monastery of Phrabat, built on the declivity, but nearly at the foot of a tall mountain formed by fantastic rocks of a bluish color. The monastery has several walls surrounding it; and having entered the second enclosure, we found the *abbé-prince*, seated on a raised floor, and directing the labors of a body of workmen. His attendants called on us to prostrate ourselves, but we did not obey them. "Silence!" he said; "you know not that the *farang* honor their grandees by standing erect." I approached, and presented him with a bottle of sal-volatile, which he smelt with delight.



I requested he would appoint some one to conduct us to see the vestige of Buddha ; and he called his principal assistant (the *balat*), and directed him to accompany us. The *balat* took us round a great court surrounded with handsome edifices, showed us two large temples, and we reached a broad marble staircase with balustrades of gilded copper, and made the round of the terrace which is the base of the monument. All the exterior of this splendid edifice is gilt ; its pavement is square, but it takes the form of a dome, and is terminated in a pyramid a hundred and twenty feet high. The gates and windows, which are double, are exquisitely wrought. The outer gates are inlaid with handsome devices in mother-of-pearl, and the inner gates are adorned with gilt pictures representing the events in the history of Buddha.

The interior is yet more brilliant ; the pavement is covered with silver mats. At the end, on a throne ornamented with precious stones, is a statue of Buddha in massive silver, of the height of a man ; in the middle is a silver grating, which surrounds the vestige, whose length is about eighteen inches. It is not distinctly visible, being covered with rings, ear ornaments, bracelets, and gold necklaces, the offerings of devotees when they come to worship. The history of the relic is this : In the year 1602, notice was sent to the king, at Ayuthia, that a discovery had been made at the foot of a mountain of what appeared to be a foot-mark of Buddha. The king sent his learned men and the most intelligent priests to report if the lineaments of the imprint resembled the description of the foot of Buddha as given in the sacred Pali writings. The examination having taken place, and the report being in the affirmative, the king caused the monastery of Phrabat to be built, which has been enlarged and enriched by his successors.

After visiting the monument, the *balat* escorted us to a deep well, cut out of the solid stone; the water is good, and sufficient to provide for crowds of pilgrims. The abbé-prince is the sovereign lord of the mountain and its environs within a circuit of eight leagues; he has from four to five thousand men under his orders, to be employed as he directs in the service of the monastery. On the day of my visit a magnificent palanquin, such as is used by great princes, was brought to him as a present from the king. He had the civility to entertain us as well as he could. I remarked that the kitchen was under the care of a score of young girls, and they gave the name of pages to the youths who attended us. In no other monastery is this usage to be found.

His highness caused us to be lodged in a handsome wooden house, and gave me two guards of honor to serve and watch over me, forbidding my going out at night on account of tigers. The following morning I took leave of the good abbé-prince, mounted my elephant, and, taking another road, we skirted the foot of the mountain till we reached a spring of spouting waters. We found there a curious plant, whose leaves were altogether like the shape and the colors of butterflies. We took a simple breakfast in the first house we met with; and at four o'clock in the afternoon we reached our boat, and after a comfortable night's rest we left Tha Rua to return to our church at Ayuthia.

[M. Mouhot thus describes his journey to the same locality:]

At seven o'clock in the morning my host was waiting for me at the door, with elephants mounted by their drivers, and other attendants necessary for our expedition. At the same hour in the evening we reached our destination, and before many minutes had elapsed all the inhabi-

tants were informed of our arrival; priests and mountaineers were all full of curiosity to look at the stranger. Among the principal people of the place I distributed some little presents, with which they were delighted; but my fire-arms and other weapons were especially the subjects of admiration. I paid a visit to the prince of the mountain, who was detained at home by illness. He ordered breakfast for me, and, expressing his regret at not being able to accompany me, sent four men to serve as guides and assistants. As a return for his kindness and urbanity, I presented him with a small pistol, which he received with extreme gratification.

We proceeded afterwards to the western side of the mountain, where is the famous temple containing the footprint of Samona-Kodom, the Buddha of Indo-China. I was filled with astonishment and admiration on arriving at this point, and feel utterly incapable of describing the spectacle which met my view. What convulsion of Nature, what force, could have upheaved those immense rocks, piled one upon another in such fantastic forms? Beholding such a chaos, I could well understand how the imagination of this simple people, who are ignorant of the true God, should have here discovered signs of the marvellous and traces of their false divinities. It was as if a second and recent deluge had just abated; this sight alone was enough to recompense me for all my fatigues.

On the mountain summit, in the crevices of the rocks, in the valleys, in the caverns, all around, could be seen the footprints of animals, those of elephants and tigers being most strongly marked; but I am convinced that many of them were formed by antediluvian and unknown animals. All these creatures, according to the Siamese, formed the *cortège* of Buddha in his passage over the mountain.

As for the temple itself, there is nothing remarkable

about it; it is like most of the pagodas in Siam,—on the one hand unfinished, and on the other in a state of dilapidation; and it is built of brick, although both stone and marble abound at Phrabat. The approach to it is by a flight of large steps, and the walls are covered with little pieces of colored glass, forming arabesques in great variety, which glitter in the sun with striking effect. The panels and cornices are gilt; but what chiefly attracts attention by the exquisite workmanship are the massive ebony doors, inlaid with mother-of-pearl of different colors, and arranged in beautiful designs. The interior of the temple does not correspond with the outside; the floor is covered with silver matting, and the walls bear traces of gilding, but they are blackened by time and smoke. A catafalque rises in the centre, surrounded with strips of gilded serge, and there is to be seen the famous footprint of Buddha. To this sacred spot the pilgrims bring their offerings,—cut paper, cups, dolls, and an immense number of toys, many of them being wrought in gold and silver.

---

## A VISIT TO CHANTABOUN.

HENRY MOUHOT.

[Henry Mouhot, an adventurous traveller, who lost his life in the jungles of Laos, has told us more concerning the interior of Siam, Laos, and Cambodia than any other traveller. His narrative is given in lively and attractive language, and we select from it a description of an excursion to Chantaboun, on the southeastward coast of Siam.]

ON the night of the 31st December, our boat was making rapid way under the influence of a violent wind. I was seated on the little roof of leaves and interlaced bamboo,

which formed a sort of protection to me against the rain and cold night air, bidding adieu to the departing year, and welcoming in the new; praying that it might be a fortunate one for me, and, above all, that it might be full of blessings for all those dear to me. The night was dark; we were but two miles from land, and the mountains loomed black in the distance. The sea alone was brilliant with that phosphoric light so familiar to all voyagers on the deep. For a couple of hours we had been followed by two sharks, who left behind them a luminous and waving track. All was silent in our boat; nothing was to be heard but the wind whistling among the rigging and the rushing of the waves: and I felt at that midnight hour—alone, and far from all I loved—a sadness which I vainly tried to shake off, and a disquietude which I could not account for.

Suddenly we felt a violent shock, immediately followed by a second, and then the vessel remained stationary. Every one cried out in alarm; the sailors rushed forward; in a moment the sail was furled and torches lighted, but, sad to say, one of our number did not answer to his name. One of the young boys, who had been asleep on deck, had been thrown into the sea by the shock. Uselessly we looked for the poor lad, whose body doubtless became the prey of the sharks. Fortunately for us, only one side of the boat had touched the rock, and it had then run aground on the sand: so that after getting it off we were able to anchor not far from the shore.

On the 3d January, 1859, after having crossed the little gulf of Chantaboun, the sea being at the time very rough, we came in sight of the famous Lion Rock, which stands out like the extremity of a cape at the entrance of this port. From a distance it resembles a lion couchant, and it is difficult to believe that Nature unassisted has formed this singular colossus. The Siamese—a superstitious race

—hold this stone in great veneration, as they do everything that appears to them extraordinary or marvellous. It is said that the captain of an English ship, once anchored in the port, seeing the lion, proposed to buy it, and that, on the governor of the place refusing the offer, he pitilessly fired all his guns at *the poor animal*. This has been recorded in Siamese verse, with a touching complaint against the cruelty of the Western barbarians.

[Purchasing a boat, M. Mouhot made excursions to the various islands in the gulf.]

I passed several days at Cape Liaut, part of the time being occupied in exploring the many adjacent islands. It is the most exquisite part of the gulf, and will bear comparison, for its beauty, with the Strait of Sunda, near the coast of Java. Two years ago, when the king visited Chantaboun, they built for him on the shore, at the extremity of the cape, a house and kiosk, and, in memory of that event, they also erected on the top of the mountain a small tower, from which a very extensive view may be enjoyed.

I also made acquaintance with Ko-Kram, the most beautiful and the largest of all the islands north of the gulf between Bangkok and Chantaboun. The whole island consists of a wooded mountain-range, easy of access, and containing much oligist iron. On the morning of the 29th, at sunrise, the breeze lessened, and when we were about three miles from the strait which separates the Isle of Arce from that of the "Cerfs," it ceased altogether. For the last half-hour we were indebted solely to our oars for the little progress made, being exposed to all the glare of a burning sun; and the atmosphere was heavy and suffocating. All of a sudden, to my great astonishment, the water began to be agitated, and our light boat was tossed

about by the waves. I knew not what to think, and was seriously alarmed, when our pilot called out, "Look how the sea boils!" Turning in the direction indicated, I beheld the sea really in a state of ebullition, and very shortly afterwards an immense jet of water and steam, which lasted for several minutes, was thrown into the air. I had never before witnessed such a phenomenon, and was now no longer astonished at the powerful smell of sulphur which had nearly overpowered me in Ko-Man. It was really a submarine volcano, which burst out, more than a mile from the place where we had anchored three days before.

On March 1 we reached Ven-Ven, at Paknam-Ven, the name of the place where the branches of the river unite. This river, whose width at the mouth is above three miles, is formed by the union of several streams flowing from the mountains, as well as by an auxiliary of the Chantaboun River, which, serving as a canal, unites these two places. Ascending the stream for fourteen or fifteen miles, a large village is reached, called Bandiana, but Paknam-Ven is only inhabited by five families of Chinese fishermen.

Crocodiles are more numerous in the river at Paknam-Ven than in that at Chantaboun. I continually saw them throw themselves from the banks into the water: and it has frequently happened that careless fishers, or persons who have imprudently fallen asleep on the shore, have become their prey, or have afterwards died of the wounds inflicted by them. This latter has happened twice during my stay here.

It is amusing, however,—for one is interested in observing the habits of animals all over the world,—to see the manner in which these creatures catch the apes, which sometimes take a fancy to play with them. Close to the bank lies the crocodile, his body in the water, and only his capacious mouth above the surface, ready to seize anything that may



come within reach. A troop of apes catch sight of him, seem to consult together, approach little by little, and commence their frolics, by turns actors and spectators. One of the most active or most impudent jumps from branch to branch, till within a respectful distance of the crocodile, when, hanging by one claw, and with the dexterity peculiar to these animals, he advances and retires, now giving his enemy a blow with his paw, at another time only pretending to do so. The other apes, enjoying the fun, evidently wish to take a part in it; but the other branches being too high, they form a sort of chain by laying hold of each other's paws, and thus swing backwards and forwards, while any one of them who comes within reach of the crocodile torments him to the best of his ability. Sometimes the terrible jaws suddenly close, but not upon the audacious ape, who just escapes; then there are cries of exultation from the tormentors, who gambol about joyfully. Occasionally, however, the claw is entrapped, and the victim dragged with the rapidity of lightning beneath the water, when the whole troop disperse, groaning and shrieking. This misadventure does not, however, prevent their recommencing the game a few days afterwards.

[From the coast, Mouhot extended his journey to the hill-country of Chantaboun, of whose features he gives us some interesting details.]

The heat becomes greater and greater, the thermometer having risen to 102° Fahr. in the shade: thus hunting is now a painful, and sometimes impossible, exertion, anywhere except in the woods. A few days ago I took advantage of a short spell of cloudy, and consequently cooler weather, to visit a waterfall I had heard of in the almost desert district of Prion, twelve miles from Kombau. After reaching the last-named place, our course lay for

about an hour and a half along a charming valley, nearly as smooth as a lawn, and as ornamental as a park. By and by, entering a forest, we kept by the banks of a stream, which, shut in between two mountains, and studded with blocks of granite, increases in size as you approach its source.

Before long we arrived at the fall, which must be a fine spectacle in the rainy season. It then pours down from immense perpendicular rocks, forming, as it were, a circular peaked wall, nearly thirty metres in diameter, and twenty metres in height. The force of the torrent having been broken by the rocky bed into which it descends, there is another fall of ten feet; and lower down, after a third fall of fifteen feet, it passes into an ample basin, which, like a mirror, reflects the trees and cliffs around. Even during the dry season, the spring, then running from beneath enormous blocks of granite, flows in such abundance as to feed several streams.

I was astonished to see my two servants, heated by their long walk, bathe in the cold water, and on my advising them to wait for a little, they replied that the natives were always accustomed to bathe when hot.

We all turned stone-cutters, that is to say, we set to work to detach the impression of an unknown animal from the surface of an immense mass of granite rising up out of one of the mountain torrents. A Chinese had in January demanded so exorbitant a sum for this that I had abandoned the idea, intending to content myself with an impression in wax, but Phrai proposed to me to undertake the work, and by our joint labor it was soon accomplished. The Siamese do not much like my meddling with their rocks, and their superstition is also somewhat startled when I happen to kill a white ape, although when the animal is dead and skinned they are glad to obtain a cutlet

or steak from it, for they attribute to the flesh of this creature great medicinal virtues.

The rainy season is drawing near; storms become more and more frequent, and the growling of the thunder is frightful. Insects are in greater numbers, and the ants, which are now looking out for a shelter, invade the dwellings, and are a perfect pest to my collections, not to speak of myself and my clothes. Several of my books and maps have been almost devoured in one night. Fortunately there are no mosquitoes, but to make up for this, there is a small species of leech, which, when it rains, quits the streams and infests the woods, rendering an excursion there, if not impracticable, at all events very disagreeable. You have constantly to be pulling them off you by dozens, but, as some always escape observation, you are sure to return home covered with blood; often my white trousers are dyed as red as those of a French soldier.

The animals have now become scarcer, which in different ways is a great disappointment to all, for Phrai and Niou feasted sumptuously on the flesh of the apes, and made a profit by selling their gall to the Chinese doctors in Chantaboun. Hornbills have also turned wild, so we can find nothing to replenish our larder but an occasional kid. Large stags feed on the mountain, but one requires to watch all night to get within range of them. There are not many birds to be seen, neither quails, partridges, nor pheasants; and the few wild-fowl which occasionally make their appearance are so difficult to shoot that it is waste both of time and ammunition to make the attempt.

In this part of the country the Siamese declare they cannot cultivate bananas on account of the elephants, which at certain times come down from the mountains and devour the leaves, of which they are very fond. The royal and other tigers abound here; every night they

prowl about in the vicinity of the houses, and in the mornings we can see the print of their large claws in the sand and in the clay near streams. By day they retire to the mountain, where they lurk in close and inaccessible thickets. Now and then you may get near enough to one to have a shot at him, but generally, unless suffering from hunger, they fly at the approach of man.

A few days ago I saw a young Chinese who had nineteen wounds on his body, made by one of these animals. He was looking out from a tree about nine feet high, when the cries of a young kid, tied to another tree at a short distance, attracted a large tiger. The young man fired at it, but, though mortally wounded, the creature, collecting all his strength for a final spring, leaped on his enemy, seized him and pulled him down, tearing his flesh frightfully with teeth and claws as they rolled on the ground. Luckily for the unfortunate Chinese, it was a dying effort, and in a few moments more the tiger relaxed its hold and breathed its last.

In the mountains of Chantaboun, and not far from my present abode, precious stones of fine water occur. There is even at the east of the town an eminence, which they call "the mountain of precious stones;" and it would appear from the account of Mgr. Pallegoix that at one time they were abundant in that locality, since in about half an hour he picked up a handful, which is as much as now can be found in a twelvemonth, nor can they be purchased at any price.

It seems that I have seriously offended the poor Thai\* of Kambau by carrying away the footprints. I have met several natives who tell me they have broken arms, that they can no longer work, and will always henceforth be in poverty; and I find that I am considered to be answerable

---

\* The Siamese were formerly called Thai.

for this because I irritated the genius of the mountain. Henceforth they will have a good excuse for idleness.

The Chinese have equally amused me. They imagine that some treasure ought to be found beneath the foot-prints, and that the block which I have carried away must possess great medicinal virtues; so Apait and his friends have been rubbing the under part of the stone every morning against another piece of granite, and, collecting carefully the dust that fell from it, have mixed it with water and drunk it fasting, fully persuaded that it is a remedy against all ills. Here they say that it is faith which cures; and it is certain that pills are often enough administered in the civilized West which have no more virtue than the granite powder swallowed by old Apait. . . .

The fruit here is exquisite, particularly the mango, the mangosteen, the pineapple, so fragrant and melting in the mouth, and, what is superior to anything I ever imagined or tasted, the famous *durian* or *dourion*, which justly merits the title of king of fruits. But to enjoy it thoroughly one must have time to overcome the disgust at first inspired by its smell, which is so strong that I could not stay in the same place with it. On first tasting it I thought it like the flesh of some animal in a state of putrefaction, but after four or five trials I found the aroma exquisite. The *durian* is about two-thirds the size of a jacca, and like it is encased in a thick and prickly rind, which protects it from the teeth of squirrels and other nibblers; on opening it there are to be found ten cells, each containing a kernel larger than a date, and surrounded by a sort of white, or sometimes yellow cream, which is most delicious. By an odd freak of nature, not only is there the first repugnance to it to overcome, but if you eat it often, though with ever so great moderation, you find yourself next day covered with blotches, as if attacked with measles, so heating is its

nature. A durian picked is never good, for when fully ripe it falls of itself; when cut open it must be eaten at once, as it quickly spoils, but otherwise it will keep for three days. At Bangkok one of them costs one *selling*; at Chantaboun nine may be obtained for the same sum.

I had come to the conclusion that there was little danger in traversing the woods here, and in our search for butterflies and other insects we often took no other arms than a hatchet and hunting-knife, while Niou had become so confident as to go by night with Phrai to lie in wait for stags. Our sense of security was, however, rudely shaken when one evening a panther rushed upon one of the dogs close to my door. The poor animal uttered a heart-rending cry, which brought us all out, as well as our neighbors, each torch in hand. Finding themselves face to face with a panther, they in their turn raised their voices in loud screams; but it was too late for me to get my gun, for in a moment the beast was out of reach.

A few days ago I made up my mind to penetrate into a grotto on Mount Sabab, half-way between Chantaboun and Kombau, so deep, I am told, that it extends to the top of the mountain. I set out, accompanied by Phrai and Niou, furnished with all that was necessary for our excursion. On reaching the grotto we lighted our torches, and after scaling a number of blocks of granite, began our march. Thousands of bats, roused by the lights, commenced flying round and round us, flapping our faces with their wings, and extinguishing our torches every minute. Phrai walked first, trying the ground with a lance which he held; but we had scarcely proceeded a hundred paces when he threw himself back upon me with every mark of terror, crying out, "A serpent! go back!" As he spoke I perceived an enormous boa about fifteen feet off, with erect head and open mouth, ready to dart upon him. My gun



being loaded, one barrel with two bullets, the other with shot, I took aim and fired off both at once.

We were immediately enveloped in a thick cloud of smoke, and could see nothing, but prudently beat an instant retreat. We waited anxiously for some time at the entrance of the grotto, prepared to do battle with our enemy should he present himself; but he did not appear. My guide now boldly lighted a torch, and, furnished with my gun reloaded and a long rope, went in again alone. We held one end of the rope, that at the least signal we might fly to his assistance. For some minutes, which appeared terribly long, our anxiety was extreme; but equally great was our relief and gratification when we saw him approach, drawing after him the rope, to which was attached an immense boa. The head of the reptile had been shattered by my fire, and his death had been instantaneous, but we sought to penetrate no farther into the grotto.

I had been told that the Siamese were about to celebrate a grand *fête* at a pagoda about three miles off, in honor of a superior priest who died last year, and whose remains were now to be burned according to the custom of the country. I went to see this singular ceremony, hoping to gain some information respecting the amusements of this people, and arrived at the place about eight in the morning, the time for breakfast, or *kinkao* (rice-eating). Nearly two thousand Siamese of both sexes from Chantaboun and the surrounding villages, some in carriages and some on foot, were scattered over the ground in the neighborhood of the pagoda. All wore new sashes and dresses of brilliant colors, and the effect of the various motley groups was most striking.

Under a vast roof of planks supported by columns, forming a kind of shed, bordered by pieces of stuff covered with grotesque paintings representing men and animals in



the most extraordinary attitudes, was constructed an imitation rock of colored pasteboard, on which was placed a catafalque lavishly decorated with gilding and carved work, and containing an urn in which were the precious remains of the priest. Here and there were arranged pieces of paper and stuff in the form of flags. Outside the building was prepared the funeral pile, and at some distance off a platform was erected for the accommodation of a band of musicians, who played upon different instruments of the country. Farther away some women had established a market for the sale of fruit, bonbons, and arrack, while in another quarter some Chinamen and Siamese were performing, in a little theatre run up for the occasion, scenes something in the style of those exhibited by our strolling actors at fairs. This *fête*, which lasted for three days, had nothing at all in it of a funereal character.

I had gone there hoping to witness something new and remarkable, for these peculiar rites are only celebrated in honor of sovereigns, nobles, and other persons of high standing; but I had omitted to take into consideration the likelihood of my being myself an object of curiosity to the crowd. Scarcely, however, had I appeared in the pagoda, followed by Phrai and Niou, when on all sides I heard the exclamation, "Farang! come and see the farang!" and immediately both Siamese and Chinamen left their bowls of rice and pressed about me. I hoped that, once their curiosity was gratified, they would leave me in peace; but instead of that the crowd grew thicker and thicker, and followed me wherever I went, so that at last it became almost unbearable, and all the more so as most of them were already drunk either with opium or arrack,—many, indeed, with both.

I quitted the pagoda and was glad to get into the fresh

air again, but the respite was of short duration. Passing the entrance of a large hut temporarily built of planks, I saw some chiefs of provinces sitting at breakfast. The senior of the party advanced straight towards me, shook me by the hand, and begged me in a cordial and polite manner to enter; and I was glad to avail myself of his kind offer, and take refuge from the troublesome people. My hosts overwhelmed me with attentions, and forced upon me pastry, fruit, and bonbons; but the crowd who had followed me forced their way into the building and hemmed us in on all sides; even the roof was covered with gazers. All of a sudden we heard the walls crack, and the whole of the back of the hut, yielding under the pressure, fell in, and people, priests, and chiefs tumbling one upon another, the scene of confusion was irresistibly comic. I profited by the opportunity to escape, swearing—though rather late in the day—that they should not catch me again.

I quitted with regret these beautiful mountains, where I had passed so many happy hours with the poor but hospitable inhabitants. On the evening before and the morning of my departure all the people of the neighborhood, Chinese and Siamese, came to say adieu, and offer me presents of fruits, dried fish, fowls, tobacco, and rice, cooked in various ways with brown sugar, all in greater quantities than I could possibly carry away. The farewells of these good mountaineers were touching; they kissed my hands and feet, and I confess that my eyes were not dry. They accompanied me to a great distance, begging me not to forget them, and to pay them another visit.

## THE ELEPHANT IN SIAM.

SIR JOHN BOWRING.

[The varieties of animal and vegetable life in Siam are almost innumerable. From the elephant and rhinoceros to the smallest insect; from the great Indian fig-tree to the smallest shrub, the diversity of life is extraordinary. Of the animals of this country the largest is at the same time the most interesting, and we select from Bowring's work some descriptive sketches of the habits and utility of the Siamese elephant, and of the kingly pomp with which the white elephant is entertained.]

ELEPHANTS are abundant in the forests of Siam, and grow sometimes to the height of twelve or thirteen feet. The habits of the elephant are gregarious; but though he does not willingly attack a man, he is avoided as dangerous; and a troop of elephants will, when going down to a river to drink, submerge a boat and its passengers. The destruction even of the wild elephant is prohibited by royal orders, yet many are surreptitiously destroyed for the sake of their tusks. At a certain time of the year tame female elephants are let loose in the forests. They are recalled by the sound of a horn, and return accompanied by wild males, whom they compel, by blows of the proboscis, to enter the walled prisons which have been prepared for their capture. The process of taming commences by keeping them for several days without food; then a cord is passed round their feet, and they are attached to a strong column. The delicacies of which they are most fond are then supplied them, such as sugar-canes, plantains, and fresh herbs; and at the end of a few days the animal is domesticated and resigned to his fate.

Without the aid of the elephant it would scarcely be possible to traverse the woods and jungles of Siam. He makes his way as he goes, crushing with his trunk all that resists his progress; over deep morasses or sloughs he drags himself on his knees and belly. When he has to cross a stream, he ascertains the depth by his proboscis, advances slowly, and when he is out of his depth he swims, breathing through his trunk, which is visible when the whole of his body is submerged. He descends into ravines impassable by man, and by the aid of his trunk ascends steep mountains. His ordinary pace is about four to five miles an hour, and he will journey day and night if properly fed. When weary he strikes the ground with his trunk, making a sound resembling a horn, which announces to his driver that he desires repose. In Siam the howdah is a great roofed basket, in which the traveller, with the aid of his cushions, comfortably ensconces himself. The motion is disagreeable at first, but ceases to be so after a little practice.

Elephants in Siam are much used in warlike expeditions, both as carriers and combatants. All the nobles are mounted on them, and as many as a thousand are sometimes collected. They are marched against palisades and intrenchments. In the late war with Cochin-China the Siamese general surprised the enemy with some hundreds of elephants, to whose tails burning torches were attached. They broke into the camp, and destroyed more than a thousand Cochin-Chinese, the remainder of the army escaping by flight.

Of elephants in Siam, M. de Bruguières gives some curious anecdotes. He says that there was one in Bangkok which was habitually sent by his keeper to collect a supply of food, which he never failed to do, and that it was divided regularly between his master and himself on his

return home; and that there was another elephant, which stood at the door of the king's palace, before whom a large vessel filled with rice was placed, which he helped out with a spoon to every talapoin (bonze) who passed.

His account of the Siamese mode of capturing wild elephants is not dissimilar to that which has been already given. But he adds that, in taming the captured animals, every species of torture is used: he is lifted by a machine in the air,—fire is placed under his belly,—he is compelled to fast,—he is goaded with sharp irons, till reduced to absolute submission. The tame elephants co-operate with their masters, and, when thoroughly subdued, the victim is marched away with the rest.

Some curious stories are told by La Loubère of the sagacity of elephants, as reported by the Siamese. In one case, an elephant upon whose head his keeper had cracked a cocoa-nut, kept the fragments of the nut-shell for several days between his fore legs, and having found an opportunity of trampling on and killing the keeper, the elephant deposited the fragments upon the dead body.

I heard many instances of sagacity which might furnish interesting anecdotes for the zoologist. The elephants are undoubtedly proud of their gorgeous trappings and of the attentions they receive. I was assured that the removal of the gold and silver rings from their tusks was resented by the elephants as an indignity, and that they exhibited great satisfaction at their restoration. The transfer of an elephant from a better to a worse stabling is said to be accompanied with marks of displeasure.

[The white elephant—which is rarely white, except in spots, but of a faded pink or light mahogany hue—is very highly regarded. In 1870 one was brought to Bangkok which was really white. Bowring thus describes the treatment of this animal.]

She occupied a large apartment within the grounds of

the first king's palace, and not far off, in an elevated position, was placed a golden chair for the king to occupy when he should come to visit her.

She had a number of attendants, who were feeding her with fresh grass (which I thought she treated somewhat disdainfully), sugar-cane, and plantains. She was richly caparisoned in cloth of gold and ornaments, some of which she tore away, and was chastised for the offence by a blow on the proboscis by one of the keepers. She was fastened to an upright pole by ropes covered with scarlet cloth, but at night was released, had the liberty of the room, and slept against a matted and ornamented partition, sloping from the floor at about an angle of forty-five degrees. In a corner of the room was a caged monkey of pure white, but seemingly very active and mischievous. The prince fed the elephant with sugar-cane, which appeared her favorite food; the grass she seemed to toss about rather than to eat. She had been trained to make a salaam by lifting her proboscis over the neck, and did so more than once at the prince's bidding. The king sent me the bristles of the tail of the last white elephant to look at; they were fixed in a gold handle, such as ladies use for their nosegays at balls.

[The presence of one of these animals is believed to be a pledge of prosperity to the king and country.]

Hence the white elephant is sought with intense ardor, the fortunate finder rewarded with honors, and he is treated with attention almost reverential. This prejudice is traditional, and dates from the earliest times. When a tributary king, or governor of a province, has captured a white elephant, he is directed to open a road through the forest for the comfortable transit of the sacred animal; and when he reaches the Meinam, he is received on a magnifi-

cent raft, with a chintz canopy, and garlanded with flowers. He occupies the centre of the raft, and is pampered with cakes and sugar. A noble of high rank, sometimes a prince of royal blood (and on the last occasion both the first and second kings), accompanied by a great concourse of barges, with music and bands of musicians, go forth to welcome his arrival. Every barge has a rope attached to the raft, and perpetual shouts of joy attend the progress of the white elephant to the capital, where, on his arrival, he is met by the great dignitaries of the State, and by the monarch himself, who gives the honored visitor some sonorous name, and confers on him the rank of nobility. He is conducted to a palace which is prepared for him, where a numerous court awaits him, and a number of officers and slaves are appointed to administer to his wants in vessels of gold and silver.

A superabundance of delicacies is provided for his repast; if his tusks are grown, they are enriched with rings; a sort of diadem is placed on his head; and his attendants prostrate themselves, as in the presence of the great nobles. When conducted to the bath, a huge red parasol is held over him; music and a *cortège* of slaves accompany him on his march. In case of illness, he is attended by a court physician; the priests wait upon him, offer up prayers for his recovery, and sprinkle him with consecrated water; and on his death there is a universal mourning, and distinguished funeral honors are paid to his remains.

[It is believed that these albinos are found only in Siam and its dependencies, and the white elephant (on a red ground) has been made the flag of the kingdom.]

The white monkeys enjoy almost the same privileges as the white elephant; they are called *pája*, have household



and other officers, but must yield precedence to the elephant. The Siamese say that "the monkey is a man,—not very handsome, to be sure; but no matter, he is not less our brother." If he does not speak, it is from prudence, dreading lest the king should compel him to labor for him without pay; nevertheless, it seems he has spoken, for he was once sent in the quality of generalissimo to fight, if I mistake not, an army of giants. With one kick he split a mountain in two; and report goes that he finished the war with honor.

The Siamese have more respect for white animals than for those of any other color. They say that when a talapoin meets a white cock, he salutes him,—an honor he will not pay a prince.

[Bowring gives the following further information about the elephant, quoting from another writer:]

After visiting the ruins, we inspected the kraal or stockade, in which the elephants are captured. This was a large quadrangular piece of ground, enclosed by a wall about six feet in thickness, having an entrance on one side, through which the elephants are made to enter the enclosure. Inside the wall is a fence of strong teak stakes driven into the ground a few inches apart. In the centre is a small house erected on poles, and strongly surrounded with stakes, wherein some men are stationed for the purpose of securing the animals. These abound in the neighborhood of the city, but cannot exactly be called wild, as the majority of them have, at some time or other, been subjected to servitude. They are all the property of the king, and it is criminal to hurt or kill one of them. Once a year a large number is collected together in the enclosure, and as many as are wanted of those possessing the points which the Siamese consider beautiful are captured.

The fine points in an elephant are: a color approaching to white or red, black nails on the toes (the common color of these nails is black and white), and intact tails (for, owing to their pugnacious disposition, it is rarely that an elephant is caught which has not had its tail bitten off).

On this occasion, the kings and a large concourse of nobles assemble together to witness the proceedings; they occupy a large platform on one side of the enclosure. The wild elephants are then driven in by the aid of tame males of a very large size and great strength, and the selection takes place. If an animal which is wanted escapes from the kraal, chase is immediately made after it by a tame elephant, the driver of which throws a lasso to catch the feet of the fugitive. Having effected this, the animal on which he rides leans itself with all its power the opposite way, and thus brings the other violently to the ground. It is then strongly bound, and conducted to the stables.

Naturally enough, accidents are of common occurrence, men being frequently killed by the infuriated animals, which are sometimes confined two or three days in the enclosure without food. When elephants are to be sent to Bangkok, a floating house has to be constructed for the purpose.

As elephants were placed at our disposal, we enjoyed the opportunity of judging of their capabilities in a long ride through places inaccessible to a lesser quadruped. Their step is slow and cautious, and the rider is subjected to a measured roll from side to side, which at first is somewhat disagreeable. In traversing marshes and soft ground, they feel their way with their trunks. They are excessively timid; horses are a great terror to them, and, unless they are well trained, the report of a fowling-piece scares them terribly.

[To Dr. Collins, an American missionary, we owe the following narrative of experience in elephant riding.]

Our first half-hour of elephant riding was of such a trying character that all after-experiences failed to awaken fear or wonder. The Siamese huts, like those of the Karens, from which we first mounted the elephants, were elevated some ten feet from the ground, and reached by a ladder. When ready to start, all we had to do was to step from the floor of the hut on to the elephant's head, and then into the howdah. This chair or saddle rested on the elephant's back, and was held in position by a crupper under the tail, and a rattan girth around the neck of the animal.

From our hut to the river's brink was a distance of fifty feet, down a rugged and steep bank, at an incline of at least forty-five degrees. Down this, through the tall grass and bamboos, our elephants made their way, sometimes sliding on their haunches, and then bracing, or feeling their way by their trunks. Into the soft ooze of the river they plunged, and waded through water so deep that nothing but the howdahs and the elephants' heads and trunks appeared above the surface. Then, up the opposite bank, equally steep, they climbed with slow but certain steps, until we reached the level land and the jungle path. . . .

As our elephant drivers and guides were always anxious to lodge in the Karen villages, and as we were frequently delayed by obstructions in our pathway, we did not average over five hours of travel per day. With the exception of two nights, we were not compelled to sleep in the jungle, but lodged in Siamese or Karen villages. We were always treated with great kindness, and not in a single instance, for boats, elephants, food, or lodging, was the question of remuneration so much as stated. Most of the way we were able to purchase rice and fish, and sometimes eggs and fowls; but most of the Karens seemed

quite destitute of *variety* in food. We usually paid fifty cents per day for each elephant, and the same amount for each night's lodging, while the entire expense of our journey from Bangkok to Maulmain did not exceed seventy-five dollars.

I cannot close this part of my article without a few remarks about elephants and their drivers. On arriving at our resting-place for the night, it was usual to turn the elephants (partially fettered) loose among the bamboos; thus, nearly all night long, we could hear the snapping of the tall reeds in order that the leaves might be stripped for food. When this noise was not heard, we could usually hear the tinkle of the elephants' bamboo bells, and thus know their locality. Some of the drivers, however, were always on the watch, and some one of the elephants was sure to be a favorite.

When the elephants were grazing in the jungle, bright fires were always kindled, that blazed the long night through. The drivers, on these occasions, always boiled their rice in hollow green bamboos, and frequently the elephants would come forward for bits of rice or salt, and then retire. I remember awaking one night out of a sound sleep, and, looking towards the blaze and outstretched sleepers, espied one of the huge brutes seated on his haunches, like an immense dog, warming himself before the fire. So grave, comical, and strange the scene appeared, in the solemn midnight of the tropical forest, that I had to awaken my wife to behold the sight.

The elephant driver sits on the head of the animal, and by the aid of a heavy knife assists in clearing the forest pathway. Some years ago one of our elephants, in passing through the forest, had his trunk wound around a large bamboo, in the act of snapping it, when his driver, in attempting to assist with his knife, struck at the bamboo

and cut the animal's proboscis half off, and thus exposed the air-passages a foot from its extremity. The cut, owing to the restlessness of the animal, never united, though it healed; and thus, when the poor animal attempted to grasp a bamboo, the frightful opening was revealed. In our journey we rode fourteen different elephants, and all of them, without exception, behaved in the most gentle, intelligent, and patient manner, mutual affection seeming to subsist between master and beast.

---

## THE VALE OF CASHMERE.

G. T. VIGNE.

[This celebrated mountain valley, sacred to poetry, and especially made famous by Moore's poem of *Lalla Rookh*, had for one of its earliest and most thorough modern explorers Mr. G. T. Vigne, who left England in 1832, travelled to India by way of Turkey, Armenia, and Persia, visited Afghanistan, and in 1835 set out for Cashmere, whence he explored the difficult mountain regions of the Upper Indus, on the borders of Central Asia. He returned to England in 1839, having attained very valuable geographical results. Of the general aspect of Cashmere he gives the following description:]

THE hill of Shupeyon rises from the plain about one mile from the town: it is composed of trap-rock, and its height is about three hundred and fifty feet. I thence enjoyed a first and excellent view of the valley, which was hardly broken throughout its whole length of ninety miles, and entirely surrounded by snowy mountains. Far to the left, over the extreme northwestern end of the valley, rose the snow-peaks of Durawar; the two or three small hills, breaking the level surface of the valley, were distinguished with difficulty; and the whole of the intervening slopes of

the Pir Panjal, from the snow downward into the valley, are covered with a magnificent forest of pines, thirty miles in length, and from three to seven miles in width.

The Valley of Cashmere is generally a verdant plain, ninety miles in length and twenty-five miles in its greatest width, at the southern end, between the cataract of Arabul and the ruins of the great temple of Martund; surrounded on every side by snowy mountains, into which there are numerous inlets, forming glens on a level with the plain, but each with a lofty pass at its upper extremity. There are many elevated points of view from which this extraordinary hollow gave me, at first sight, an idea of its having been originally formed by the falling in of an exhausted volcanic region.

The interest taken in a view of the Valley of Cashmere would certainly be rather that of the agriculturist than of the prospect-hunter; but nothing can be more truly sylvan than the greater part of the mountain scenery. It has not, however, the verdure of the tropics. The trees, it is true, in many instances, may differ from those of Europe; but with the exception of occasional beautiful masses of deodars, the aspect of the forest, at a little distance, is wholly European. Looking from the hill of Shupeyon, innumerable villages were scattered over the plains in every direction, distinguishable in the extreme distance by the trees that surrounded them: all was soft and verdant, even up to the snow on the mountain-top; and I gazed in surprise, excited by the vast extent and admirably defined limits of the valley, and the almost perfect proportions of height to distance by which its scenery appeared to be universally characterized.

[The situation of the town of Islamabad ("residence of the faithful"), on the banks of the Jhelum, is thus described:]

Islamabad is situated on the westward of, and under a hill which rises to the height of about three hundred and fifty feet above it, commanding an exquisite view of the plain and the mountains at the southern end of the valley. From its foot flows the holy fountain of Anat Nag, the first waters of which are received into tanks whose sides are built up with stone, embellished with a wooden pavilion, and overshadowed with large chunar-trees. Around them are numerous idlers, Cashmerians, Sikh soldiers, Hindoo fakeers, and dogs, reposing in the enjoyment of a cool air and delicious shade. In the evening two or three aged Pundits were to be seen making their way to the place near which the spring issues from the rock, and afterwards kneeling over the water, and mumbling their prayers as their fathers had done before them, by the glare of lighted pieces of split pine.

At the village of Mar-tund, or "the sun," half an hour's ride from Islamabad, is the most holy spring in all Cashmere. It is said that, after the valley was dried, small hills and caves appeared, and that Kashef Rishi, a holy sage, walked about in the greatest delight; that he accidentally found an egg shining most brilliantly, which he picked up. It broke in his hand, and from it flowed the springs of Maha-Martund, "The great God of the Sun," sacred to Vishnu. Houses and Hindoos surround the small tank which is formed near it, and which swarms with Himalaya trout; but the superstitious Pundits objected to my catching one with my hand,—which would not have been difficult, on account of the number, and the eagerness with which they are fed.

On the highest part of the plain, where it commences a rise to its junction with the mountains, are situated the ruins of the Hindoo temple of Martund, or Surya (the Sun), or, as it is commonly called, the "Pandoo-Koroo," or



the house of the Pandoos and Koroos,—of whom it is not necessary to say more than that they are the Cyclopes of the East. Every old building, of whose origin the poorer classes of Hindoos, in general, have no information, is believed to have been the work of the Pandoos. As an isolated ruin, this deserves, on account of its solitary and massive grandeur, to be ranked, not only as the first ruin of the kind in Cashmere, but as one of the noblest among the architectural relics of antiquity which are to be seen in any country. Its noble and exposed situation at the foot of the hills reminded me of that of the Escorial: it has no forest of cork-trees and evergreen oaks before it, nor is it to be compared in point of size to that stupendous building; but it is visible from as great a distance, and the Spanish Sierras cannot for a moment be placed in competition with the verdant magnificence of the mountain scenery of Cashmere.

[The city of Shahbad, the largest place in the southern part of the valley, was a ruin, and there was scarcely anything to be seen of the ancient palace of the Moguls. The orchards of Shahbad, however, still produced the best apples, and the wheat grown there is considered the finest in Cashmere. A few miles from the city is the celebrated fountain of Vernag, a favorite place of the Mogul Emperors.]

The palace is now a ruin with scarcely any of the beauties of a ruin, and the country is overgrown with weeds and jungle. But neither time nor tyranny can make any change in the magnificent spring of Vernag. Its waters are received into a basin partly made by the Emperor Jehangir: the circumference is about one hundred and twenty-five yards, and the whole is surrounded by a low octagonal wall, in which are twenty-four niches, each of eight feet in height. The water is beautifully clear, twenty-five feet deep, and swarming with Himalaya trout.

In the interior, on the wall, there is the following inscription: "This place of unequalled beauty was raised to the skies by Jehangir Shah; consider well. Its date is found in the sentence,—Palace of the Fountain of Vernag." In the Persian language letters are also used for the expression of numbers, and the letters in the foregoing sentence are equivalent to the number 1029 (of the Hegira), which answers to A.D. 1619. Over the entrance is written, "This fountain has come from the springs of Paradise!"

[The following account indicates that the Cashmerians are not without their sense of humor:]

They have a custom throughout these countries which answers in some respects to what we call making an April fool. When the new snow falls, one person will try to deceive another into holding a little in his hand; and accordingly he will present it to him (making some remark by way of a blind at the same time), concealed in a piece of cloth, or a stick, or an apple, folded in the leaves of a book, or wrapped up in a letter. If the person inadvertently takes what is thus presented to him, the other has a right to show him the snow he has thus received, and to rub it in his face, or to pelt him with it, accompanied by the remark, "New snow is innocent," and to demand, also, a forfeit of an entertainment, or a dance, or some other boon, of the person he has deceived. The most extreme caution is, of course, used by every one upon that day. Ahmed Shah, of Little Thibet, told me that some one once attempted to deceive him by presenting him with a new gun-barrel, and pretending that he wished for his opinion about it; but that he instantly detected the snow in the barrel, and had the man paraded through the neighborhood on a donkey, with his face turned towards the tail.

[Twelve hours by boat from Islamabad, on the Jhelum, lies the famous city of Srinagur, the capital and largest city of Cashmere. It occupies the loveliest section of the celebrated vale, and is famed as the abode of Nourmahal, the heroine of Moore's well-known poem.]

Before entering the city it will be best to notice the centre of the valley. Its general features are ricefields, irrigated in plateaux, open meadows, cornfields, and villages embosomed in trees; elevated alluvial plains, that, either from position, or from being protected by a rocky base, have escaped being washed away by the large and numerous streams that descend from the slopes of the Panjal to a junction with the Jelum, and have furrowed and divided them, more or less, throughout the whole length of the course of the river. The height of the cliff, or terrace, which they form varies from sixty to a hundred and twenty feet. Here and there a remarkable hill rises from the plain, crowned with a shrine or mosque, or a tuft of fir-trees, giving a pleasing variety to the landscape, which is comparatively bare of forest.

As I approached the city I was struck by the Tukt-i-Suliman (Throne of Solomon), an isolated hill, about three-quarters of a mile in length, and four hundred and fifty feet in height, bare of trees, but covered with long grass where the rock permitted it to grow. It is divided from the mountains by a wide ravine, from which opens a view of the city lake, and through which is constantly blowing a breeze that must tend to prevent stagnation of its waters. This singular hill is called by the Hindoos Sir-i-Shur, or Siva's Head, in contradistinction to Huri-Purbut, the Hill of Huri, or Vishnu, on the opposite side of the city.

There are the remains of an ancient Hindoo temple on the summit. The interior has been plastered over and whitewashed by the Sikhs, and it is said that beneath it

there is an ancient inscription; there is also one in Persian, which informs us that a fakeer resided there, who called himself the water-carrier of King Solomon, and was in the habit of descending every day to the lake, for the purpose of drawing water. A foot-path leads up the ascent from the city side, while from the other a good hill-pony can carry its rider to the summit. I knew the foot-path well, as for almost every day during a month I used to go up in order to complete a panoramic drawing of the valley.

Softness, mantling over the sublime, is the prevailing characteristic of the scenery of Cashmere; verdure and forest appear to have deserted the countries on the northward, in order to embellish the slopes from its snowy mountains, give additional richness to its plains, and combine with its delightful climate to render it not unworthy of the rhyming epithets applied to it in the East,—

*“Kashmir, bi-nuzir,—without an equal;  
Kashmir, junat puzi,—equal to paradise.”*

Beautiful, indeed, is the panoramic view that meets the eye of the spectator from the Throne of Solomon, and which, taken far and near, is one

“sweet interchange  
Of hill and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,  
Now land, now lake, and shores with forest crowned,  
Rocks, dens, and caves.”

The city, which lies to the northwest, may be said to commence at the foot of this hill; and on the other side of it, two miles to the northward, is the fort of Cashmere, built upon Huri-Purbut, whose top is about two hundred and fifty feet above the level of the lake, which occupies

the space that intervenes between these two "portals of light" and the mountains surrounding the valley.

The aspect of the city itself is curious, but not particularly striking. It presents an innumerable assemblage of house-gables, interspersed with the pointed and metallic tops of mosques, melon-grounds, sedgy inlets from the lake, and narrow canals, fringed with rows of willows and poplars. The surface of the lake itself is perfectly tranquil, and the very vivid reflections which cover its surface are only disturbed by the dabbling of wild-fowl or the ripple that follows the track of the distant boat. At one glance we have before us the whole of the local pictures described in *Lalla Rookh*.

The margin of the lake, which from its northern to its southern extremity is nearly five miles in length by about two and a half in width, is flat, verdant, and open, usually edged with willows, poplars, and other trees, numerous only at intervals, so that the eye is immediately attracted by the thicker masses of foliage which form the gardens of *Nasim* and *Nishat*, and the far-famed *Shalimar*. Among them sparkles the white pavilion on the isle of *Chunars*, or *Silver Island*, and another green spot is the *Golden Island*. The large platform of a ruined building is seen on the southern shore, and on the northern are the terraces of two other gardens, neglected and in ruins. Numerous villages on the edge of the water, surrounded with walnuts and *chunars*, are taken into the view; a green causeway which extends across it is an object of attraction; but we look on the famed floating gardens of *Cashmere* without being able to distinguish them from the green and richly cultivated grounds upon that edge of the water which borders the city.

A precipitous but verdant range of about two thousand feet in height circles around the lake to the northward,

commencing its rise at about a mile from the shores, until it has surrounded that portion of the circumference which extends between the Throne of Solomon and the Shalimar. There it ceases, and a part of the great range which surrounds the Vale of Cashmere lifts its snowy peaks near at hand.

It must be remembered that we are upon an elevation in the centre of one of the sides of the valley; that it is ninety miles in length, with a varying breadth; and that it is surrounded on every side by a towering wall of mountains, the summits of a great proportion of which are usually covered with snow. Terraces, cornfields, rice-grounds, meadows, and morasses occupy the centre of the valley; they are all brightly tinted in the foreground, but in the distance recede into one uniform blue. Several isolated hills and innumerable villages are scattered over the landscape. The line of beauty was never more faithfully drawn in landscape than by the broad and beautiful Jelum, the *fabulosus Hydaspes* of the Augustan age.

The river passes within half a mile of the foot of Solomon's Throne, and is nearly two hundred and fifty yards in breadth before it enters the city. Its banks are fringed with willows, among which is a summer-house, with a white cupola, built by the Sikh governor. An avenue of poplars, nearly a mile in length, runs through the cornfields parallel to it, from the foot of the Throne to the Amir's bridge, close to which is the city fort, or residence of the governor, at the entrance of the city, where the stream narrows to about eighty yards. Beyond the bridge we trace it to the northwest, by occasional glimpses, nearly as far as the Great Lake, which is twenty miles distant. The hoary range of the Panjal, in front, is joined with the mountains of Kishtawar on the south, and on the northwest is continued into the still loftier snow-peaks of Dura-

war, on the left bank of the Indus, so as to form but one vast mural cordillera, and a fitting boundary for the noblest valley in the world.

Descending from the Throne of Solomon, we immediately pass over the bridge of the Drogjun, under which runs the canal that connects the lake with the Jelum River; it is called by the people the "Apple-tree Canal." When the surface of the lake, as is usually the case, is higher than that of the river, the flood-gates remain open, and when the river becomes full they close of themselves, so as to prevent the lake from being overflowed and its waters from spreading themselves over the adjacent country. The canal is exceedingly pretty; the water is very clear, and numerous fish play among the long reeds that wave upon its edges. One of the governors had it in contemplation to unite the trees on either bank by a kind of suspended trellis-work, and then to have planted vines, whose fruit and branches would have been thus supported over the midst of the stream.

The Hindoo ruins in the city are composed chiefly, if not entirely, of large rectangular blocks of limestone, similar to those at Martund and other places. The largest consists of two platforms raised one above another, one of twenty yards square, resting on another of forty-four by sixty-eight yards. The height of this enormous mass of stone-work, which no doubt once supported a temple of proportionate size, is now about twenty-four feet. The Hindoo temples must have been exceedingly numerous; the foundation of the houses in the city, closing the side of the river, are often formed of large blocks which have been drawn from them. A capital turned upside-down, a broken shaft, or an injured pedestal may frequently be observed embedded in the wall, performing the office of ordinary building-stone. The river, in passing through the



city, has thus been narrowed to a width of about eighty yards; an immovable barrier is opposed to its expansion, and its stream is consequently more rapid and deeper than in any other part of the valley.

Noor Jehan (The Light of the World), the "Nourmahal" (light of the palace) of Lalla Rookh, is the most renowned name in the valley, that of her august consort, Jehangir, not excepted. In spite of the more authentic story of her birth, the Cashmerians would have us believe that she was a native of the valley. The new mosque in the city was built by her, and is, in fact, the only edifice of the kind that can vie in general aspect and finish with the splendor of the Pearl Mosque at Agra. The interior of the building is about sixty-four yards in length, and of proportionate breadth, the roof being supported by two rows of massive square piers running through the entire length of the building, the circular compartments between them being handsomely ribbed and vaulted. When I was in Cashmere, it was used as a granary or storehouse for rice.

The mosque of Shah Hamadan occupies a conspicuous situation on the bank of the river, in the midst of the city. His story, as believed by the Mussulmans, is as follows: Tamerlane was one night wandering in disguise about the streets of his capital (Samarkand), and overheard an old man and his wife talking over their prospects of starvation; upon which he took off an armlet, threw it to them, and departed unseen. A pretended Syud, or descendant of the prophet, asked them how they came by the armlet, and accused them of having stolen it. The matter was made known to Tamerlane, who very sagaciously decreed that the owner must be the person who could produce the fellow armlet. He then displayed it in his own possession, and ordered the accuser to undergo the ordeal of hot iron, which he refused, and was put to death in consequence.

Tamerlane, moreover, put to death all the other pretended Syuds in the country.

One named Shah Hamadan, who really was a descendant of the Prophet, accused Tamerlane of impiety, told him that he would not remain in his country, and by virtue of his sanctity was able to transport himself through the air to Cashmere. He descended where the mosque now stands, and told the Hindoo fakeer, who had possession of the spot, to depart. The latter refused, whereupon Shah Hamadan said that if he would bring him news from heaven he would then believe in him. The fakeer, who had the care of numerous idols, immediately despatched one of them towards heaven, upon which Shah Hamadan kicked his slipper after it with such force that the idol fell to the ground. He then asked the fakeer how he became so great a man. The latter replied, by doing charitable actions, and thereupon Shah Hamadan thought him worthy of being made a convert to Islam.

The Mar Canal is, perhaps, the most curious place in the city: it leaves the small lake at the northeast corner, and boats pass along, as at Venice. Its narrowness, for it does not exceed thirty feet in width, its walls of massive stone, its heavy single-arch bridges and landing-places of the same material, the gloomy passages leading down upon it, betoken the greatest antiquity; while the lofty and many-storied houses that rise directly from the water, supported only by thin trunks of deodar, seem ready to fall down upon the boat with every gust of wind. It could not but remind me of the old canals in Venice, and although far inferior in architectural beauty, is, perhaps, of equal singularity.

In a division of the lake called Kutawal, the far-famed floating gardens of Cashmere are anchored, or rather pinned to the ground by means of a stake. These, how-

ever, are very *un-Lala* Rookhish in appearance, not being distinguishable from beds of reeds and rushes. Their construction is extremely simple, and they are made long and narrow that they may be the more easily taken in tow. A floating garden ten yards long by two or three in width may be purchased for a rupee (fifty cents). Mr. Moorcroft has well described the manner in which these gardens are made. The weeds at the bottom, cut by means of a scythe, rise and float on the surface; these are matted together, secured, and strewed with soil and manure; a protecting fence of rushes is allowed to spring up around them,—and upon this platform a number of conical mounds or heaps of weeds are constructed, about two feet in height. On the tops of these is placed some soil from the bottom of the lake; the melon and cucumber plants are set upon it, and no further care is necessary.

What has been poetically termed the feast of roses has of late years been rather the feast of *singaras*, or water-nuts. It is held, I believe, about the 1st of May, when plum-trees and roses are in full bloom, and is called the *Shakufeh*, from the Persian *shakufan*, to blow or blossom. The richer classes come in boats to the foot of Solomon's Throne, ascend it, and have a feast upon the summit, eating more particularly of the water-nuts.

The average depth of the lake is not more than seven to ten feet, and, the water being very clear, the bottom, covered with weeds, is almost constantly visible. At the northern corner are the ruins of a once splendid pleasure-ground, whose walled terraces, rising one above the other, might easily be converted into a botanical garden, for which its extent and aspect seems admirably calculated.

The Shalimar stands on the eastern margin of the lake. It is a building placed at the upper end of a walled garden seven or eight hundred yards in length by two hundred

and eighty in width. It is of polished black marble, consisting of a central passage and two rooms on either side. The building is twenty-four yards square, and the north and south sides are ornamented with Saracenic reliefs. It stands in the centre of a square reservoir, which is also lined with black marble: the sides thereof are fifty-four yards long, and the whole enclosure contains one hundred and forty-seven fountains, which are made to play on holidays, the reservoir being filled by the stream which enters it in the shape of a cascade.

The stream then descends from the reservoir by a shallow canal, cut through the centre of the gardens and lined with marble, and falls over an artificial cascade at each of the three lodges through which it passes on its way to the lake. A broad causeway or walk runs on each side of it, overshadowed by large plane-trees, while here and there a few turfed walks branch off at right angles into the shrubberies, in which are little else than wild plum-trees, planted for the sake of their white blossoms. The principal lodges are elegantly-fronted Saracenic houses, which were evidently intended for the accommodation of the officers and servants of the Emperor Jehangir. Many plane-trees are planted around, and with their shade, combined with the freshness produced by the fountains, the air is as cool as could be wished, even in the hottest day.

The lotus, with its noble pink and white flower, is very common, and, in fact, the leaves are so numerous that in some places they form a verdant carpet, over which the water-hens and others of the same genus run securely without risk of being immersed. In the hot weather, the children in the boats pick a large leaf and place it on their heads, as a shelter from the rays of the sun, or, by breaking off the stalk close to the leaf, obtain a tube through which they drink of the water poured in from above.

The stalks are very commonly eaten by the poorer classes: when dry, the seeds are strung together like beads. . . .

Srinagur has a population of about eighty thousand souls. The Cashmerian peasants differ but little from the inhabitants of the city, but the latter are more civilized and perhaps better looking. There are Mussulmans and Hindoos, the former predominating in the proportion of three to one in the city, and nine to one in the villages. The complexion of the Mussulman Cashmerian is generally not so dark, certainly not darker, than that of the natives of the south of Europe, the Neapolitans, for instance, to whom they may also be compared on account of the liveliness and humor of their disposition; but their features are large and aquiline, like those of the Afghans, and I do not know that I can better describe them than by calling them subdued Jewish; while a Hindoo may often be distinguished by the fairness of his complexion. I was also told that this was attributable to their eating a less quantity of animal food than the Mussulmans. I have heard that the natives of the valley ascribe their own beauty to the great softness of the water. I have remarked that the water softens a shawl better than any other; and there is undoubtedly a peculiar softness in the air of the valley. It is remarked that the horns of cattle, sheep, and goats never attain there to any great size, and, in fact, are rather small than otherwise. Neither has the tobacco of Cashmere the pungency of that grown elsewhere.

Many of the women are handsome enough to induce a man to exclaim, as did the Assyrian soldiers when they beheld the beauty of Judith, "Who would despise this people, that have among them such women?" Their dress is a red gown, with large loose sleeves, and red fillet on the forehead, over which is thrown a white mantilla. The hair is braided in separate plaits, then gathered together, and a

long tassel of black cotton is suspended from it almost to the ankles.

In Cashmere there is no concealment of the features, except among the higher classes. I do not think that the beauty of the women has been overrated. They have not that slim and graceful shape which is so common in Hindostan, but are more usually gifted with a style of figure which would entitle them to the appellation of fine or handsome women in European society. They have the complexion of brunettes, with more pink on the cheeks, while that of the Hindoo women has often too much of the pink and white in it. Whatever the other features may be, they have usually a pair of large, almond-shaped hazel eyes, and a white and regular set of teeth. The inhabitants of the boats, male and female, are perhaps the handsomest people in the valley.

---

## CENTRAL ASIA IN THE THIRTEENTH CENTURY.

MARCO POLO.

[The celebrated traveller to whom we owe the present selection, and whose name stands side by side with that of Columbus in the annals of early exploration, was a native of Venice, born about 1252, son of Niccolò Polo, a merchant of noble rank. His travels were preceded by those of his father, who, about 1255, set out with his brother on a journey through Asia, with the purpose of selling precious stones. They reached the court of Kublai Khan, ruler over China and Tartary, and were very favorably received. Returning in 1269, they set out again a few years afterwards, and reached the court of Kublai in 1275. They were now accompanied by young Marco, who learned several Asiatic languages, rose high into favor with the Khan, and was employed on several important missions. The three Venetians left his service in 1292, and reached Venice in 1295, bringing with them great wealth in precious stones. Marco afterwards took part in a naval expedition against Genoa, was taken prisoner, and was long held



captive in a Genoese prison. During this captivity he composed an account of his adventures, which produced a great sensation, and was long regarded as a tissue of fiction or exaggeration. Its truth and value are now fully recognized. He died about 1324. The account of the return of the travellers to Venice, as given in Ramusio's edition of Marco Polo's travels (1553), equals a story of the "Arabian Nights" in romantic interest, and is well worth repeating.]

AND when they got thither the same fate befell them as befell Ulysses, who, when he returned, after his twenty years' wanderings, to his native Ithaca, was recognized by nobody. Thus also these three gentlemen, who had been so many years absent from their native city, were recognized by none of their kinsfolk, who were under the firm belief that they had all been dead for many a year past, as indeed had been reported. Through the long duration and the hardships of their journeys, and through the many worries and anxieties that they had undergone, they were quite changed in aspect, and had got a certain indescribable smack of the Tartar both in air and accent, having indeed all but forgotten their Venetian tongue. Their clothes too were coarse and shabby, and of a Tartar cut.

They proceeded on their arrival to their house in this city, in the confine of St. John Chrysostom, where you may see it to this day. The house, which was in those days a very lofty and handsome *palazzo*, is now known by the name of the *Corte del Millioni* for a reason that I will tell you presently. Going thither, they found it occupied by some of their relatives, and they had the greatest difficulty in making the latter understand who they should be. For these good people, seeing them to be in countenance so unlike what they used to be, and in dress so shabby, flatly refused to believe that they were those very gentlemen of the Ca' Polo whom they had been looking upon for ever so many years as among the dead.



So these three gentlemen,—this is a story I have often heard, when I was a youngster, from the illustrious Messer Gasparo Malpiero, a gentleman of very great age, and a Senator of eminent virtue and integrity, whose house was on the canal of Santa Marina, exactly at the corner over the mouth of the Rio de San Giovanni Chrisostomo, and just midway among the buildings of the aforesaid Corte del Millioni, and he said he had heard the story from his own father and grandfather, and from other old men among the neighbors,—the three gentlemen, I say, devised a scheme by which they should at once bring about their recognition by their relatives and secure the honorable notice of the whole city; and this was it:

They invited a number of their kindred to an entertainment, which they took care to have prepared with great state and splendor, in that house of theirs; and when the hour arrived for sitting down to table they came forth of their chamber all three clothed in crimson satin, fashioned in long robes reaching to the ground, such as people in those days wore within doors. And when water for the hands had been served, and the guests were set, they took off those robes and put on others of crimson damask, while the first suits were by their orders cut up and divided among the servants. Then after partaking of some of the dishes they went out again and came back in robes of crimson velvet; and when they had again taken their seats, the second suits were divided as before. When dinner was over they did the like with the robes of velvet, after they had put on dresses of the ordinary fashion worn by the rest of the company.

These proceedings caused much wonder and amazement among the guests. But when the cloth had been drawn, and all the servants had been ordered to retire from the dining-hall, Messer Marco, as the youngest of the three,

rose from table, and, going into another chamber, brought forth the three shabby dresses of coarse stuff which they had worn when they first arrived. Straightway they took sharp knives and began to rip up some of the seams and welts, and to take out of them jewels of the greatest value in vast quantities, such as rubies, sapphires, carbuncles, diamonds, and emeralds, which had all been stitched up in those dresses in so artful a fashion that nobody could have suspected the fact.

For when they took leave of the Great Khan they had changed all the wealth that he had bestowed upon them into this mass of rubies, emeralds, and other jewels, being well aware of the impossibility of carrying with them so great an amount in gold over a journey of such extreme length and difficulty. Now, this exhibition of such a huge treasure of jewels and precious stones, all tumbled out upon the table, threw the guests into fresh amazement, insomuch that they seemed quite bewildered and dumfounded. And now they recognized that in spite of all former doubts these were in truth those honored and worthy gentlemen of the Ca' Polo that they claimed to be; and so all paid them the greatest honor and reverence.

And when the story got wind in Venice, straightway the whole city, gentle and simple, flocked to the house to embrace them, and to make much of them, with every conceivable demonstration of affection and respect. On Messer Maffeo, who was the eldest, they conferred the honor of an office that was of great dignity in those days; while the young men came daily to visit and converse with the ever polite and gracious Messer Marco, and to ask him questions about Cathay and the Great Khan, all which he answered with such kindly courtesy that every man felt himself in a manner in his debt. And as it happened that in the story, which he was constantly called on to repeat, of the

magnificence of the Great Khan, he would speak of his revenues as amounting to ten or fifteen *millions* of gold; and, in like manner, when recounting other instances of great wealth in those parts, would always make use of the term *millions*, so they gave him the nickname of "Messer Marco Millionì:" a thing which I have noted also in the public books of this republic, where mention is made of him.

[It was only by a happy chance that the travellers had been able to leave the court of the Great Khan, who had refused all their previous requests. Argun Khan, of Persia, Kublai's great-nephew, had lost his favorite wife, and by her dying request sought to replace her with a lady of her own Mongol tribe of Bayant. Ambassadors were sent to Kublai's court for such a bride, and the lady Kukáchin, a seventeen-year-old maiden, was selected. As the journey by land was long and perilous, the lady was sent by sea, and at the request of the envoys the Great Khan reluctantly permitted the three Venetians to accompany them. The voyage was a long one, two years passing before they reached Persia. Argun Khan was found to be dead; his brother reigned in his stead, and the latter's son, Ghazan, succeeded to the lady's hand. The lady wept as she parted with her three good friends, who continued their journey homeward. We select here Marco Polo's account of the countries of Central Asia.]

Badashan [now Badakhshan] is a province inhabited by people who worship Mahomet, and have a peculiar language. It forms a very great kingdom, and the royalty is hereditary. All those of the royal blood are descended from King Alexander and the daughter of King Darius, who was Lord of the vast Empire of Persia. And all these kings call themselves in the Saracen tongue *Zulcar-niain*,\* which is as much as to say "Alexander;" and this out of respect for Alexander the Great.

---

\* Arabic, signifying "two-horned," from the horned head of Alexander on many of his coins.

It is in this province that those fine and valuable gems, the Balas rubies, are found. They are got in certain rocks among the mountains, and in the search for them the people dig great caves underground, just as is done by miners for silver. There is but one special mountain that produces them, and it is called Syghinan. The stones are dug on the king's account, and no one else dares dig in that mountain, on pain of forfeiture of life as well as goods; nor may any one carry the stones out of the kingdom. But the king amasses them all, and sends them to other kings when he has a tribute to render, or when he desires to offer a friendly present, and such only as he pleases he causes to be sold. Thus he acts in order to keep the Balas at a high value; for if he would allow everybody to dig, they would extract so many that the world would be glutted with them, and they would cease to bear any value. Hence it is that he allows so few to be taken out, and that he is so strict in the matter.

There is also in the same country another mountain, in which azure [*lapis lazuli*] is found; it is the finest in the world, and is got in a vein like silver. There are also other mountains which contain a great amount of silver ore, so that the country is a very rich one; but it is also (it must be said) a very cold one! It produces numbers of excellent horses, remarkable for their speed. They are not shod at all, although constantly used in mountainous country and on very bad roads. (They go at a great pace, even down steep descents, where other horses neither would nor could do the like. And Messer Marco was told that not long ago they possessed in that province a breed of horses from the strain of Alexander's horse Bucephalus, all of which had from their birth a particular mark on the forehead. This breed was entirely in the hands of an uncle of the king's; and in consequence of his refusing to

let the king have any of them, the latter put him to death. The widow then, in despite, destroyed the whole breed, and it is now extinct.)

The mountains of this country also supply Saker falcons of excellent flight, and plenty of lanners likewise. Beasts and birds for the chase are there in great abundance. Good wheat is grown, and also barley without husk. They have no olive oil, but make oil from sesamé, and also from walnuts.

In the mountains there are vast numbers of sheep,—four hundred, five hundred, or six hundred in a single flock, and all of them wild; and though many of them are taken, they never seem to get aught the scarcer.

Those mountains are so lofty that 'tis a hard day's work, from morning till evening, to get to the top of them. On getting up, you find an extensive plain, with great abundance of grass and trees, and copious springs of pure water running down through rocks and ravines. In those brooks are found trout and many other fish of dainty kinds; and the air in those regions is so pure, and residence there so healthful, that when the men who dwell below in the towns, and in the valleys and plains, find themselves attacked by any kind of fever or other ailment that may hap, they lose no time in going to the hills; and after abiding there two or three days, they quite recover their health through the excellence of that air. (And Messer Marco Polo said he had proved this by experience; for when in those parts he had been ill for about a year, but as soon as he was advised to visit that mountain, he did so and got well at once.)

In this kingdom there are many strait and perilous passes, so difficult to force that the people have no fear of invasion. Their towns and villages are also on lofty hills, and in very strong positions. They are excellent archers,

and much given to the chase; indeed, most of them are dependent for clothing on the skins of beasts, for stuffs are very dear among them. The great ladies, however, are arrayed in stuffs, and I will tell you the style of their dress! They all wear drawers made of cotton cloth, and into the making of these some will put sixty, eighty, or even one hundred ells of stuff. This they do to make themselves look large in the hips, for the men of those parts think that to be a great beauty in a woman.

You must know that ten days' journey to the south of Badashan there is a province called Pashai, the people of which have a peculiar language, and are idolaters, of a brown complexion. They are great adepts in sorceries and the diabolic arts. The men wear ear-rings and brooches of gold and silver, set with stones and pearls. They are a pestilent people and a crafty, and they live upon flesh and rice. Their country is very hot.

Now let us proceed and speak of another country which is seven days' journey from this one towards the southeast, and the name of which is Keshimur [Cashmere].

Keshimur also is a province inhabited by a people who are idolaters and have a language of their own. They have an astonishing acquaintance with the devilries of enchantment, insomuch that they can make their idols to speak. They can also by their sorceries bring on changes of weather, and produce darkness, and do a number of things so extraordinary that no one without seeing them would believe them. Indeed, this country is the very original source from which idolatry has spread abroad. In this direction you can proceed farther until you come to the Sea of India.

The men are brown and lean, but the women, taking them as brunettes, are very beautiful. The food of the people is flesh, and milk, and rice. The climate is finely



tempered, being neither very hot nor very cold. There are numbers of towns and villages in the country, but also forests and desert tracts, and strong passes, so that the people have no fear of anybody, and keep their independence, with a king of their own to rule and do justice.

There are in this country Eremites (after the fashion of those parts), who dwell in seclusion and practise great abstinence in eating and drinking. They observe strict chastity, and keep from all sins forbidden in their law, so that they are regarded by their own folk as very holy persons. They live to a very great age.

There are also a number of idolatrous abbeys and monasteries. (The people of the province do not kill animals nor spill blood; so if they want to eat meat they get the Saracens who dwell among them to play the butcher.) The coral which is carried from our parts of the world has a better sale there than in other parts of the country.

Now we will quit this country, and not go any farther in the same direction; for if we did so we should enter India; and that I do not wish to do at present. For on our return journey I mean to tell you about India, all in regular order. Let us go back, therefore, to Badashan, for we cannot otherwise proceed on our journey.

In leaving Badashan you ride twelve days between east and northeast, ascending a river [the Oxus] that runs through land belonging to a brother of the Prince of Badashan, and containing a good many towns and villages and scattered habitations. The people are Mahometans, and valiant in war. At the end of these twelve days you come to a province of no great size, extending indeed no more than three days' journey in any direction, and this is called Vokhan. The people worship Mahomet, and they have a peculiar language. They are gallant soldiers, and they have a chief whom they call None, which is as much



as to say *Count*, and they are liegemen of the Prince of Badashan.

There are numbers of wild beasts of all sorts in this region. And when you leave this little country, and ride three days northeast, always among mountains, you get to such a height that 'tis said to be the highest place in the world! And when you have got to this height you find a great lake between two mountains, and out of it a fine river running through a plain clothed with the finest pasture in the world, insomuch that a lean beast will fatten there to your heart's content in ten days. There are great numbers of all kinds of wild beasts; among others, wild sheep of great size, whose horns are good six palms in length. From these horns the shepherds make great bowls to eat from, and they use the horns also to enclose folds for their cattle at night. (Messer Marco was told also that the wolves were numerous, and kill many of these wild sheep. Hence quantities of their horns and bones were found, and these were made into great heaps by the way-side, in order to guide travellers when snow was on the ground.)

The plain is called Pamier [Pamir, or Pamere], and you ride across it for twelve days together, finding nothing but a desert without habitations or any green thing, so that travellers are obliged to carry with them whatever they have need of. The region is so lofty and cold that you do not even see any birds flying. And I must notice also that because of this great cold, fire does not burn so brightly, nor give out so much heat as usual, nor does it cook food so effectually.

Now, if we go on with our journey towards the east-northeast, we travel a good forty days, continually passing over mountains and hills, or through valleys, and crossing many rivers and tracts of wilderness. And in all this way

you find neither habitation of man, nor any green thing, but you must carry with you whatever you require. The country is called Bolor [Belur, or Bielor Dagħ, the White Mountains]. The people dwell high up in the mountains, and are savage idolaters, living only by the chase, and clothing themselves in the skins of beasts. They are in truth an evil race.

Cascar [Kashgar] is a region lying between northeast and east, and constituted a kingdom in former days, but now it is subject to the Great Khan. The people worship Mahomet. There are a good number of towns and villages, but the greatest and finest is Cascar itself. The inhabitants live by trade and handicrafts; they have beautiful gardens and vineyards, and fine estates, and grow a great deal of cotton. From this country many merchants go forth, about the world, on trading journeys. The natives are a wretched niggardly set of people; they eat and drink in miserable fashion. There are in the country many Nestorian Christians, who have churches of their own. The people of the country have a peculiar language, and the territory extends for five days' journey.

Yarcan [Yarkand] is a province five days' journey in extent. The people follow the law of Mahomet, but there are also Nestorian and Jacobite Christians. They are subject to the same Prince I have mentioned, the Great Khan's nephew. They have plenty of everything, particularly of cotton. The inhabitants are also great craftsmen, but a large proportion of them have swollen legs, and great crops at the throat, which arises from some quality in their drinking-water. As there is nothing else worth telling, we may pass on.

Cotan [Khoten] is a province lying between northeast and east, and is eight days' journey in length. The people are subject to the Great Khan, and are all worshippers of

Mahomet. There are numerous towns and villages in the country, but Cotan, the capital, is the most noteworthy of all, and gives its name to the kingdom. Everything is to be had there in plenty, including abundance of cotton, with flax, hemp, wheat, wine, and the like. The people have vineyards and gardens and estates. They live by commerce and manufactures, and are no soldiers.

Pein [Pima?] is a province five days' in length, lying between east and northeast. The people are worshippers of Mahomet, and subjects of the Great Khan. There are a good number of towns and villages, but the most noble is Pein, the capital of the kingdom. There are rivers in this country, in which quantities of jasper and chalcedony are found. The people have plenty of all products, including cotton. They live by manufactures and trade. But they have a custom that I must relate. If the husband of any woman go away upon a journey and remain away for more than twenty days, as soon as that term is past the woman may marry another man, and the husband also may then marry whom he pleases.

I should tell you that all the provinces that I have been speaking of, from Cascar forwards, and those I am going to mention, as far as the city of Lop, belong to Great Turkey.

Charchan [Chachan] is a province of Great Turkey, lying between northeast and east. The people worship Mahomet. There are numerous towns and villages, and the chief city of the kingdom bears its name, Charchan. The province contains rivers which bring down jasper and chalcedony, and these are carried for sale into Cathay, where they bring great prices. The whole of the province is sandy, and so is the road all the way from Pein, and much of the water that you find is bitter and bad. However, at some places you do find fresh and sweet water.

When an army passes through the land, the people escape with their wives, children, and cattle, a distance of two or three days' journey into the sandy waste; and knowing the spots where water is to be had, they are able to live there, and to keep their cattle alive, while it is impossible to discover them, for the wind immediately blows the sand over their track.

Quitting Charchan, you ride some five days through the sands, finding none but bad and bitter water, and then you come to a place where the water is sweet. And now I will tell you of a province called Lop, in which there is a city also called Lop, which you come to at the end of those five days. It is at the entrance of the Great Desert, and it is here that travellers repose before entering in the Desert.

Lop [Lob] is a large town at the edge of the Desert which is called the Desert of Lop [Gobi, or Shamo, on modern maps], and is situated between east and northeast. It belongs to the Great Khan, and the people worship Mahomet. Now, such persons as propose to cross the Desert take a week's rest in this town to refresh themselves and their cattle; and then they make ready for the journey, taking with them a month's supply for man and beast. On quitting this city they enter the Desert.

The length of this Desert is so great that 'tis said that it would take a year and more to ride from one end of it to the other. And here, where its breadth is least, it takes a month to cross it. 'Tis all composed of hills and valleys of sand, and not a thing to eat is to be found on it. But after riding for a day and a night you find fresh water enough, mayhap, for some fifty or a hundred persons with their beasts, but not for more. And all across the Desert you will find water in like manner, that is to say, in some twenty-eight places altogether you will find good water,

but in no great quantity; and in four places you find also brackish water.

Beasts there are none; for there is naught for them to eat. But there is a marvellous thing related of this Desert, which is that when travellers are on the move by night, and one of them chances to lag behind or to fall asleep or the like, when he tries to gain his company again he will hear spirits talking, and will suppose them to be his comrades. Sometimes the spirits will call him by name; and thus shall a traveller oftentimes be led astray so that he never finds his party. And in this way many have perished. Sometimes the stray travellers will hear, as it were, the tramp and hum of a great cavalcade of people away from the real line of road, and taking this to be their own company they will follow the sound; and when day breaks they find that a cheat has been put on them and that they are in an ill-plight. Even in the daytime one hears those spirits talking. And sometimes you shall hear the sound of a variety of musical instruments, and still more commonly the sound of drums. Hence in making this journey 'tis customary for travellers to keep close together. All the animals, too, have bells at their necks, so that they cannot easily get astray. And at sleeping time a signal is put up to show the direction of the next march.

So thus it is that the Desert is crossed.

[The account here given of these countries is remarkably accurate, as tested by the experience of modern travellers. Every custom or superstition which Polo mentions has been found in recent existence. After his journey nearly six hundred years elapsed before any European again set foot in the country thus traversed.]

## A COUNTERFEIT DERVISH IN KHIVA.

ARMINIUS VÁMBÉRY.

[Central Asia, now a portion of the great Russian Empire, and open to European travel, with railroad conveniences to facilitate the task, was, not many years ago, almost impossible of penetration, no European venturing there except at imminent risk of his life. The most eminent of travellers in that region during this period was Arminius Vámbéry, a Jew, born in Hungary in 1832, and who, under the disguise of a Turkish Mohammedan, traversed that country widely. His "Travels and Adventures in Central Asia" (1864) was followed by a number of other works of travel, all interesting and readable. Vámbéry's greatest danger lay in the city of Khiva, whose Khan was a blood-thirsty tyrant, and bitterly opposed to Europeans. He entered that city as a Hadji, or pilgrim, and was not only thoroughly familiar with Mussulman customs, but had taken pains to make himself the most ragged, dirty, and generally disreputable of the caravan he had joined. He had, however, an Afghan enemy in the caravan, who suspected and waited the opportunity to denounce him.]

At the very entrance of the gate we were met by several pious Khivites, who handed up to us bread and dried fruits as we sat on our camels. For years so numerous a troop of Hadjis had not arrived in Khiva. All stared at us in astonishment, and the exclamations, "*Aman eszen geldin ghiz!*" (Welcome!) "*Ha Shaz bazim! Ha Arszlanim!*" (Ah, my falcon, my lion!) resounded on all sides in our ears. On entering the bazaar, Hadji Bilal intoned a telkin. My voice was heard above them all, and I felt real emotion when the people impressed their kisses upon my hands and feet,—yes, upon the very rags which hung from me. In accordance with the custom of the country we dismounted at the karavanserai. This served also as a custom-house, where the new arrivals of men and merchandise are sub-

jected to severe examination. The testimony of the chiefs of the Karavans have, as is natural, the greatest weight in the balance. The functions of chief of the customs are filled in Khiva by the principal Mehrem (a sort of chamberlain and confidant of the Khan).

Scarcely had this official addressed the ordinary questions to our Kervanbashi, when the Afghan pressed forward and called out aloud, "We have brought to Khiva three interesting quadrupeds and a no less interesting biped." The first part of this pleasantry was, of course, applied to the buffaloes, animals not before seen in Khiva; but as the second part was pointed at me, it was no wonder that many eyes were immediately turned upon me, and amidst the whispering it was not difficult to distinguish the words "*Djansiz*" (spy), "*Frengi*," and "*Urus*" (Russian). I made an effort to prevent the blood rising to my cheeks, and was upon the point of withdrawing when the Mehrem ordered me to remain. He applied himself to my case, using exceedingly uncivil expressions. I was about to reply, when Hadji Salih, whose exterior inspired respect, came in, and, entirely ignorant of what had passed, represented me in the most flattering colors to my inquisitor, who, surprised, told me, smiling as he did so, to take a seat by his side. Hadji Salih made a sign to me to accept the invitation, but, assuming the air of one highly offended, and throwing an angry look upon the Mehrem, I retired.

My first step was to go to Sükrullah Bay, who, without filling any functions, occupied a cell at that time in the Medresse of Mehemmed Emin-Khan, the finest edifice in Khiva. [This person Vámbéry had seen in Constantinople, and proposed to claim acquaintanceship with him.] I announced myself to him as an Efendi arrived from Stamboul, with the observation that I had made his acquaintance there, and had wished, in passing, to wait



upon him. The arrival of an Efendi in Khiva, an occurrence so unprecedented, occasioned the old man some surprise. He came forward himself to meet me, and his wonder increased when he saw a mendicant, terribly disfigured and in rags, standing before him; not that this prevented him from admitting me. I had only interchanged a few words with him, in the dialect of Stamboul, when, with ever-increasing eagerness, he put question upon question concerning his numerous friends in the Turkish capital, and the recent doings and position of the Ottoman empire since the accession of the present Sultan.

As I before said, I was fully confident in the part I was playing. On his side, Sükrullah Bay could not contain himself for joy when I gave him news of his acquaintances there in detail. Still, he felt not the least astonishment. "In God's name, Efendi, what induced you to come to this fearful country, and to come to us, too, from that paradise on earth, from Stamboul?" Sighing, I exclaimed, "Ah, Pir!" (spiritual chief), laid one hand on my eyes, a sign of obedience, and the excellent old man, a Mussulman of tolerably good education, could not misapprehend my meaning,—*i.e.*, that I belonged to some order of Dervishes, and had been sent by my Pir (chief of my order) upon a journey, which is a duty that every Murid (disciple of an order of Dervishes) must fulfil at the hazard of his life.

My explanation rejoiced him; he but asked the name of the order. On my mentioning the Nakishbendi, he at once understood that Bokhara was the aim of my journey. He wished immediately to obtain for me quarters in the Medresse before named, but I mentioned at the same time my situation with respect to my companions. I then almost immediately withdrew, with the promise soon to repeat my visit.

On returning to the karavanserai, I was told that my

fellow-travellers had already found lodging in a tekkie, a sort of convent where travelling Dervishes put up, called Töshebaz. I proceeded thither, and found that they had also reserved and got ready a cell for me. Scarcely was I again in their midst when they questioned me as to the cause of my delaying to rejoin them; all expressed their regret at my not having been present when the wretched Afghan, who had wished so to compromise me, had been obliged to beat a retreat, loaded with curses and reproaches, not only by them, but by the Khivites. "Very good," thought I, "the popular suspicion removed, it will be easy enough to deal with the Khan, for he will be immediately informed of my arrival by Sükrullah Bay; and as the rulers of Khiva have ever evinced the greatest respect for the Sultan, the present sovereign will certainly venture a step towards an Efendi; nay, it is not impossible that the first man from Constantinople who has come to Kharezmi (the political name of Khiva) may even be treated with particular distinction."

My anticipations did not deceive me. The next day there came a Yasaul (officer of the court), bringing to me a small present from the Khan, with the order that I should in the evening go to the Ark (palace), "as the Hazret" (a title of sovereignty in Central Asia, corresponding with our expression, Majesty) "attached great importance to receiving the blessing from a Dervish born in the Holy Land." I promised compliance, betook myself an hour previously to Sükrullah Bay; and as he was desirous of being himself present at the interview, he accompanied me to the palace of the king, which was in the immediate vicinity, giving me, on the way, counsel as to the ceremonies to be observed in my interview.

[The preliminaries to this ceremonious event may be omitted, and the audience described.]

After the lapse of a few moments my arms were held up with every demonstration of respect by two Yasaul. The curtain was rolled up, and I saw before me Seid Memhemmed Khan, Padishahi Kharezsm, or, as he would be styled in ordinary prose, the Khan of Khiva, on a sort of elevation, or daïs, with his left arm supported on a round silk-velvet pillow, and his right holding a short golden sceptre.

According to the ceremonial prescribed, I raised my hands, being imitated in this act by the Khan and the others present, recited a short Sura from the Koran, then two Allahuma Sella, and a usual prayer beginning with the words "Allahuma Rabbena," and concluding with a loud Amen and stroking of the beard. While the Khan was still stroking his beard, each of the rest exclaimed, "*Kabul Volgay!*" ("May thy prayer be heard!") I approached the sovereign, who extended his hand to me, and after we had duly executed our Musofeha [the greeting prescribed by the Koran], I retired a few paces and the ceremonial was at an end.

The Khan now began to question me respecting the object of my journey, and the impression made upon me by the desert, the Turkomans, and Khiva. I replied that I had suffered much, but that my sufferings were now richly rewarded by the sight of the Hazrets Djemel (beauty of his majesty). "I thank Allah," I said, "that I have been allowed to partake this high happiness, and discern in this special favor of Kismet (fate) a good prognostic for my journey to come."

Although I labored to make use of the Ozbeg dialect instead of that of Stamboul, which was not understood here, the king was, nevertheless, obliged to have much translated for him. He asked me how long I proposed to stay, and if I was provided with the necessary journey

expenses. I replied that I wished first to visit the Sunnite saints who repose in the soil of the Khanat, and that I should then prepare for my journey farther on. With respect to my means, I said, "We Dervishes do not trouble ourselves with such trifles. The holy Nefes (breath) which my Pir (chief of my order) had imparted to me for my journey can support me four or five days without any nourishment," and that I had no other wish than that God would permit his majesty to live a hundred and twenty years.

My words seemed to have given satisfaction, for his royal highness was pleased to order that I should be presented with twenty ducats and a stout ass. I declined the ducats with the remark that for a Dervish it was a sin to keep money; thanked him, however, warmly for the second part of his most gracious favor, but begged permission to draw his attention to the holy commandment which prescribed a *white* ass for pilgrimages, and entreated him therefore to vouchsafe me such a one. I was on the point of withdrawing when the Khan desired that, at least during my short stay in the capital, I should be his guest, and consent to take for my daily board two Tenghe (about one franc and fifty centimes) from his Haznadar. I thanked him heartily, concluded by giving my blessing, and withdrew.

I hurried home through the waving crowds in the fore-court and the bazaar, whilst all encountered me with the respectful "Selam Aleïkum." When I found myself again alone within the four walls of my cell, I drew a long breath, not a little pleased to find that the Khan, who in appearance was so fearfully dissolute, and who presents in every feature of his countenance the real picture of an enervated, imbecile, and savage tyrant, had behaved to me in a manner so unexceptionable; and that, so long as my time permitted, I could now traverse the Khanat in all directions unmo-

lested. During the whole evening I had floating before me the picture of the Khan, with his deep-set eyes, with his chin thinly covered with hair, his white lips and trembling voice. "What a happy fatality," I repeated to myself, "that gloomy superstition often imposes limits to the might and blood-thirstiness of such tyrants!"

As I proposed making extensive excursions into the interior, I was desirous as far as possible to shorten my stay in the capital. What was most worth seeing might quickly be despatched, had not repeated invitations of the Khan, of the officials, and of the most distinguished of the mercantile community, robbed me of much time. After it was known that I shared the favor of royalty, everybody wanted to have me as guest, and with me all the other hadjis. What a torture this to me, to have daily to accept six, seven, or eight invitations, and to comply with the usage by taking something in every house. My hair stands on end at the recollection how often I was forced to seat myself, between three and four o'clock in the morning, before sunrise, opposite a colossal dish of rice swimming in the fat of the sheep-tail, which I was to assail as if my stomach was empty. How, upon such occasions, I again longed for the dry unleavened bread of the desert, and how willingly I would have exchanged this deadly luxury for wholesome poverty!

In Central Asia it is the practice, even upon the occasion of an ordinary visit, to set before you the Desturkhan (a napkin of coarse linen and of a variety of colors, for the most part dirty). In this enough bread is generally placed for two persons, and the guest is to eat some pieces of this. "To be able to eat no more," is an expression regarded by the Central Asiatics as incredible, or, at least, as indicating low breeding. My pilgrim friends always gave brilliant proofs of their *bon-ton*. My only wonder is that they

could support the heavy pilow, for upon one occasion I reckoned that each of them had devoured one pound of fat from the tail of the sheep, two pounds of rice, without taking any account of bread, carrots, turnips, and radishes; and all this washed down, without any exaggeration, by from fifteen to twenty large soup plates full of green tea. In such heroic feats I was naturally a coward; and it was the astonishment of every one that I, so well versed in books, should have acquired only a half acquaintance with the requisites of polite breeding.

Another source of torment to me not less considerable was that of the *beaux-esprits* of the Ulemas of the city of Khiva. These gentlemen, who give the preference to Turkey and Constantinople beyond all other places, were desirous of receiving from me, the standard of Turkish Islamite learning, an explanation of many Mesele (religious questions.) Oh! how warm those thick-headed Ozbegs made me, with their colossal turbans, when they opened a conversation concerning the prescriptions as to the mode of washing hands, feet, face, and occiput; and how a man should, in obedience to his holy religion, sit, walk, lie, and sleep, etc.

The Sultan (a recognized successor of Mohammed) and his grandees are accounted in Khiva the practical examples of all these important laws. His Majesty, the Emperor of Turkey, is here designated as a Mussulman whose turban is at least fifty ells in length, whose beard extends below his breast, and his robe to his toes. A man might place his life in jeopardy who should assert that the Sultan has head and beard shaved *à la Fiesko*, and clothes made for him at Paris by Dusetoye. I was often really sorry to be unable to give to these people, often persons very amiable, the satisfactory explanation they seemed to require, and how, indeed, could I have ventured upon such explanation,

standing, as we do, in such direct contrast and opposition!

The Töshebaz, or convent, that gave us shelter, from the great reservoir of water and mosque which it encloses, was looked upon in the light of a public place: the court consequently swarmed always with visitors of both sexes. The Ozbeg, in his high, round fur hat, great thick boots of leather, walks about merely in a long shirt, in summer a favorite undress. This I myself adopted afterwards, as I found it was not regarded as indecent, so long as the shirt retained its whiteness, even to appear with it in the bazaar. The women wear lofty globular turbans, consisting of from fifteen to twenty Russian kerchiefs. They are forced, striding along, in spite of all the overpowering heat, muffled in large gowns, and with their coarse boots, to drag to their houses heavy pitchers full of water.

Ah! I see them now. Many a time one remains standing at my door, entreating for a little Khaki Shifa (health dust) [which the pilgrims bring back from the reputed house of the Prophet in Medina], or a Nefes (holy breath) for the real or feigned ill of which she complains. I have it not in my heart to refuse those poor creatures, many of whom bear a striking resemblance to the daughters of Germany. She cowers before my door: I touch, moving my lips at the same time as if in prayer, the suffering part of the body; and after having thrice breathed hard upon her, a deep sigh is uttered, and my part is done. Many in these cases persist that they perceive an instantaneous alleviation of their malady.

What in Europe idlers seek in coffee-houses they find in Khiva in the courts of the mosques. These have in most cases a reservoir of water, and are shaded by the finest palms and elm-trees. Although at the beginning of June the heat was here unusually oppressive, I was nevertheless



forced to keep my cell, although it was without windows, for immediately I issued forth and betook myself to the inviting shade, I was surrounded by a crowd, and plagued to death by the most stupid inquiries. One wanted religious instruction; another asked if the world offered elsewhere places as beautiful as Khiva; a third wished, once for all, to receive authentic information whether the Great Sultan really had his each day's dinner and supper forwarded to him from Mecca, and whether they passed to his palace from the Kaaba in one minute. Ah! if the good Ozbegs only knew how much Château Lafite and Margot garnished the sovereign's table in the reign of Abdul Medjid!

Among the acquaintances made by me here, under the elm-trees, an interesting one resulted from my meeting with Hadji Ismael, represented to me as a Stambouli; and indeed so like one in speech, demeanor, and dress, that I was obliged to accept and tenderly embrace him as *my countryman*! Hadji Ismael had, it seems, passed twenty-five years in the Turkish capital, was intimate in many good houses, and asserted that he had seen me in such and such a house, and at such and such a time. He even insisted that it was no effort for him to remember my father, who was a Mollah, he said, in Topkhane [one of the quarters of Constantinople].

Far from charging him with impudent mendacity, I assured him, on the contrary, that he had himself left a good name behind him in Stamboul, and that every one awaited his return with impatience. According to his account, Hadji Ismael had carried on, on the shore of the Bosphorus, the business of tutor, proprietor of baths, leather-cutter, caligraphist, chemist, and, consequently, also of conjurer. In his native city they had a high opinion of him, particularly with reference to his last-named capacity; he had in

his house several little apparatuses for distillation, and as he was in the habit of pressing out the oil from leaves, fruits, and other similar substances, it is easy to conceive that his countrymen applied to him for a variety of elixirs. . . .

In Khiva, in the mean time, my hadji business throve, both with me and my colleagues. In this place alone I collected fifteen ducats. The Khivan Ozbeg, although but rough-hewn, is the finest character of Central Asia, and I may style my sojourn among his race here as most agreeable, were it not that the rivalry between the Mehter [a high official in the Khan's court] and Sükrullah made me incur some danger, the former being always disposed, from hostility to my introducer, to do me harm; and as he could no longer question the genuineness of my Turkish character, he began to insinuate to the Khan that I was only a sham dervish, probably sent on some secret mission by the Sultan to Bokhara.

Informed of the progress of this intrigue, I was not at all astonished, soon after my first audience with the Khan, to receive a second invitation. The weather was intensely hot. I did not like to be disturbed in my hour of repose, but what I liked least of all was to be obliged to cross the square of the castle, whither the prisoners taken in the campaign against the Tehaudors had been sent, and where they were to be executed. The Khan, who was numerously attended, told me that he had heard I was also versed in worldly sciences, and possessed a beautiful florid *Insba* (style); he added that I must write him a few lines in *Stambouli* fashion, which he would like much to see. Knowing that this had been suggested by the Mehter, who enjoyed himself the reputation of being a calligraphist, and had elicited the fact of my accomplishment from the hadjis, I took the proffered writing-material and wrote the following lines:

*Literally translated.*

"Most Majestic, Mighty, Dread King and Sovereign!

"Immersed in thy royal favor, the poorest and humblest of thy servants, keeping before his eyes [the Arabian proverb] that 'All beautiful penmen are fools,' has until this day very little devoted himself to the study of caligraphy, and only because he calls to mind [a Persian proverb] that 'Every failing which pleases the King is a virtue,' does he venture to hand to him most submissively these lines."

The extravagant sublimity of the titles, which are, however, still in use in Constantinople, delighted the Khan. The Mehter was too stupid to understand my sarcasm. I was ordered to take a seat, and after having been ordered bread and tea, the Khan invited me to converse with him. The subject to-day was exclusively political. To remain true to my dervish character, I forced them to press every word out of me. The Mehter watched each expression, wishing to see the confirmation of his suspicions. All his trouble was fruitless. The Khan, after graciously dismissing me, ordered me to take the money for my daily support from the treasurer.

[Vámbéry here gives a description of the execution of the prisoners, the horrible details of which the reader may be spared.]

I had almost forgotten to mention that the Yasaul led me to the treasurer to receive the sum for my daily board. My claim was soon settled; but this personage was engaged in so singular an occupation that I must not omit to particularize it. He was assorting the Khilat (robes of honor), which were to be sent to the camp, to reward those who had distinguished themselves. They consisted

of about four kinds of silken coats with staring colors, and large flowers worked on them in gold. I heard them styled four-headed, twelve-headed, twenty-headed, and forty-headed coats. As I could see upon them no heads at all in painting or embroidery, I demanded the reason of the appellation, and I was told that the most simple coats were a reward for having cut off four heads of enemies, and the most beautiful a recompense for forty heads, and that they were now being forwarded to the camp. Some one proceeded to tell me "that if it was not an usage in Roum, I ought to go next morning to the principal square, where I should be a witness of this distribution."

[What he saw was about a hundred horsemen, each bringing one or more prisoners, and having buckled behind him a large sack containing the heads of the enemies he had slain. These were emptied from the sacks like so many potatoes, and kicked together after counting until a large heap of these ghastly trophies was formed. It is pleasant to recall that Khiva is now a Russian possession, and its long epoch of savagery at an end. However one may deprecate the method in which civilized countries take possession of the uncivilized regions of the earth, the results of such occupancy can only be for the good of mankind.]

---

## A JOURNEY THROUGH YÂRKAND.

ROBERT SHAW.

[The penetration of Central Asia remained very difficult until the way was opened by the success of the Russian arms. Three German brothers, named Schlagintweit, explored the Himalayan region in 1856, and in 1857, Adolf Schlagintweit attempted to cross Central Asia to the Russian territory north of the Thian Shan range. At that time the Tartars were in rebellion against Chinese rule, and were besieging Kashgar. Here the traveller was murdered by Walló Khan, the



SOLDIERS OF THE HIMALAYAS.



insurgent chief. The insurrection was successful, Mohammed Yakoob, its final leader, firmly establishing his power by 1869. His success opened Central Asia to European explorers. The first to take advantage of this opportunity was Robert Shaw, an English sportsman, who had for several years been engaged in hunting excursions among the Himalayas. In 1868 he left Leh, the capital of Little Tibet, and proceeded by a difficult route to the frontier of Yárkand, which country he proposed to explore. He gives an animated account of his reception.]

I AM now writing in my tent, which is pitched on the flat roof of a little fort on the Karakash River. It consists of a lot of little rooms, surrounding a court-yard, into which they open. A little parapet of sun-dried bricks with loop-holes for muskets runs round the outer edge of this flat roof, while at the corners little round towers, also loop-holed, command the four sides. This primitive fort stands in the centre of a little shingly plain. The Karakash, a small trout-stream, runs past a few hundred yards off, fringed with low bushes, while all around rise the barren rocky mountains. Inside is a more cheerful scene. A group of Moghul\* soldiers are sitting round a fire at one end of the court-yard, which is not above fifteen yards long. Their long matchlock guns hang from the wall behind them, twelve in number; three or four high-peaked saddles are ranged above them.

The dress of the Moghuls consists of a long robe fastened round the waist, with very wide trousers below. The officers' robes are made of a stuff half silk, half cotton, with large patterns in very bright colors. Some of the men wear dull red Yárkandee cloth, some of them English printed calico, and some white felt; there is no uniformity. Some tuck the long robe into the wide trousers, some wear a second robe, open in front and loose at the waist, over

---

\* Moghul is the name given in India to natives of Central Asia. I learnt afterwards to call them, as they called themselves, "Toork."



all. The chiefs have on their heads a conical cap, with a turban tied round it. The men mostly have lambskin caps.

One of the two officers is now fitting a fresh match into his gun; the rest are looking on, or cooking their food in one of the rooms. Meanwhile, they talk a language harsh and guttural, in which the consonants are constantly clashing. My "Bhôts" from Ladâk sit reverentially in the distance, rubbing the skins of the sheep we have killed by the way. The Moghuls treat them kindly, but as if they were animals of some sort, monkeys, for instance. They call them *Tibetee*, a name which I have hitherto heard used only by the Europeans. My Indian servants keep out of the way; they don't know what to make of our hosts, and are more than half afraid of them.

As for me, they and I are the greatest of friends. In a short time, I shall be going down to entertain the officers at my four o'clock tea. We sit over my fire, and drink an endless succession of cups of tea together, eating my biscuits, and trying to converse. Now, as three days ago my knowledge of Toorkee was confined to the word *yok* no, which I had picked up in Atkinson's book, and as they know no Persian, and, of course, no Hindostanee, we have to make up by smiles and signs for our lack of common words. The rifles, the watch, the compass, the revolver, are, unfortunately, exhausted subjects now, so we come to actual conversation. I have picked up a lot of Toorkee (there is no master of languages like the absence of interpreters), and we talk about peace and war, geography and history, what could the most skilful linguists do more? I will tell you presently what news I have gathered from them.

At first their great delight was to get me to fire my breech-loader. They used to put a mark about thirty paces off, and were greatly astonished at my always hitting

it. They are just like public school-boys, of boisterous spirits, but perfectly well bred. They will clap me on the back, and call me a good fellow when I send for more sugar for their tea; but when I pass their fire, they will all rise and bow with their hand on their heart; this is their mode of salaaming. The man who clapped me on the back surprised me the next minute by stroking his beard with both hands, and exclaiming, "Ameen, Allaho-Akber" (Amen, God is great). All the assembly chimed in with Allaho-Akber, solemnly stroking their beards. This was "grace after meat."

As day dawns, I hear one of them intoning the "Arise and pray, arise and pray, prayer is better than sleep." Yesterday two of the soldiers had their hands tied in front of them, their clothes were stripped from their shoulders, and they were ferociously lashed by one of the officers with his whip, till they were covered with blood. My servants, who saw this, asked the reason; they were told it was because the men did not get up early to say their prayers. The same evening one of these two men was singing Toorkee songs, to which accompaniment two others were dancing before the fire. I joined the party, and was fed with Yârkand walnuts by one of the officers. The two dancers wound in and out, keeping time with a beat of the feet and a *chassé*, and slowly waving their arms. When tired, they bowed to the assembly and sat down.

Meanwhile, you don't know whether I have been taken prisoner in a foray by Yakoob Beg's soldiers, or how I came to find myself shut up in a fort with a dozen of them; so I must begin again from where I left off.

After a wearisome march of six days, altogether, down the same valley, without any incidents worth notice, on the morning of the sixth day, shortly after leaving our camp (which was in a fine meadow of really luxuriant

grass, produced by the numerous arms into which the stream branched), we came upon a spot where a large flock of sheep had evidently been penned. This sign of the former presence of men put us all on the *qui vive*, as we were utterly ignorant what reception we might meet with should we come across any of the wandering tribes of shepherds that frequent these mountains. All we knew was that certain nomads, calling themselves Kirghiz, had formerly rendered the more westerly road to Yârkand unsafe by their depredations (the name of Kirghiz Jungle is still retained by the spot which they haunted), and that tribes of the same name occasionally brought their sheep up the valley of the Karakash. However, the sheepfold was of last year, and did not denote any recent visit.

But later in the day, as I rode on before the caravan, the fresh print of a man's foot struck my eye. It was on a soft piece of earth, after which the path was hard and stony. I was thus unable at once to verify my impression, and thought I must have been deceived. A little farther on, however, the footmark was again visible by the side of a horse's track. I could not help laughing as I thought of Robinson Crusoe and *his* footprint. Mine, however, was not such a portentous sign, although it was sufficient to inspire caution; for there was every possibility that, if the Kirghiz were in force, they might attempt to plunder us, and on none of my servants could I depend in a scrimmage, even to load for me; at the least, our journey might be interrupted. Therefore, when we came to the end of the open plain in which we were travelling, and the valley narrowed at a projecting point, I halted the caravan, and went on myself on foot to spy. Scrambling over the hill, I soon came to a ridge which commanded a view down the valley. Carefully, as when stalking game, I raised my head, and a minute's inspection through my glass showed me a grassy

plain, sprinkled with bushes, and in the middle a Kirghiz *yourt*. There was no mistaking it after reading Atkinson's books. A circular structure, with a low dome-shaped roof, covered with a dirty-white material, evidently felt. Around it were tethered four or five horses and yaks, while the glass showed a man in a long tunic and high boots, busied in attendance on the cattle. From the centre of the roof a light cloud of smoke was escaping.

I can't describe to you my sensations at beholding this novel scene. I felt that I had now indeed begun my travels. Now, at length, my dreams of Toorks and Kirghiz were realized, and I was coming into contact with tribes and nations hitherto entirely cut off from intercourse with Europeans. I drew carefully back and rejoined my caravan. After a short consultation, we determined to go and encamp alongside of the *yourt*; as we must pass the Kirghiz, and our halting short of them, though so near, would be ascribed to fear if they discovered our camp. Loading all the rifles, four in number, we set out again. I was amused to see my Hindostanee table-servant Kabeer, who had hitherto caused endless trouble by lagging behind, now, with scared face, keep himself close to my horse's tail, as I rode on in advance of the caravan. The Kirghiz was so busy at his occupation that he did not see me till I was within twenty yards of his *yourt*. At the sound of my voice, he turned round, and, apparently without astonishment, came forward smilingly to meet me. A second man now came out of the *yourt*. We could only at first say "*salâm*," and smile at one another; but he told me that he was a Kirghiz, and we thought we understood from him that there were some soldiers of the King waiting for me at Shabidoolla. This would account for his non-surprise at what must have been our strange appearance to him.

Both the Kirghiz were quite young fellows, apparently brothers, with fine rosy complexions, about as dark as a bronzed Englishman. A woman presently appeared, but kept in the background. She was rather pretty, and wore a strip of white cotton-cloth wound round her head, quite evenly, to a considerable thickness, like a roll of white tape. A long streamer of the same cloth, ornamented with a colored pattern, hung down her back. Her dress was a long tunic, girt round the waist like the men's, and reaching nearly to the ankles, which displayed a pair of high red leather boots. The men's tunics or robes were shorter, and their head-dress a fur cap with ear-lappets.

Here I encamped; the Kirghiz good-humoredly assisting in the erection of the tent, lighting a fire for me, etc. Presently arrived a large flock of sheep, with another Kirghiz, in a long sheep and ibex skin robe. My Guddee servants, themselves shepherds by birth, estimated the flock at over a thousand. The sheep resemble those of parts of Afghanistan, having large flat tails. When the lambs had been brought out, and given to their mothers, the three Kirghiz retired into the yourt. Thence they emerged again, and came up to me bringing a present of a sheep and a huge skinful of butter. These were most thankfully accepted, and the sheep immediately killed; the butter was excellent. I gave them, in return, some English powder, with a looking-glass for the young lady, at which they were delighted.

[The traveller was detained at the fort of Shahidoolla until permission could be obtained to enter the country. It came at length, brought by the Yoozbashee (the Vizier's brother), who in the end proved to be a very pleasant companion.]

I had now the leisure to examine the appearance of the Yoozbashee. He was a young man of apparently little

more than thirty years, with a bright intelligent face and energetic manners. His head-dress was a green turban. A sober-colored outer robe covered the richer clothes beneath, and was fastened round the waist by two separate blue belts ornamented with numerous silver clasps and bars. To these belts were attached a silver-hilted sabre much curved, and a series of nondescript articles, including pouches of embroidered leather, a priming-flask of peculiar shape, etc. The ends of a pair of very wide trousers of soft yellow leather covered with embroidery were just visible below his robe, and his feet were enclosed in boots, or rather high moccasins, of the same, with a row of silver nail-heads round the soles. He rode a small but handsome gray with an almost Arab look about the head, but a heavier neck, and his seat on horseback was perfection.

We rode about a mile, and then reached a little flat covered with small trees. Here was an encampment of Kirghiz, together with the followers of the Yoozbashee and their horses. I was taken into a Kirghiz akooee that had been prepared for me, and led to the place of honor, viz., a carpet spread over the sheets of felt directly opposite the door; this carpet I was left to occupy alone in my glory, while the Yoozbashee seated himself on the side carpet to my right, with my former Mihmandâr below him; two of his principal attendants were seated near the door, outside which the remainder, armed with matchlocks, were drawn up as a guard of honor. Now I must explain to you the Toorkish manner of sitting on state occasions; it is a mode of torture unknown to Western nations. Natives of India, as a rule, squat down with their feet still on the ground, and their knees just below their chins. Others cross their legs in front of them, and sit like a tailor. But in Toorkistân the ceremonious man-

ner is to kneel down with your robes well tucked in, and then sit back on to your heels. When your toes are by these means nearly dislocated, you have the option of turning them inward, and sitting on the inside flat of the feet. By this means the dislocation is transferred from your toes to your ankles and knees.

The sword is a further source of difficulty. If, when first kneeling down, you forget to keep the point in front of you, so as to lay it across your knees, you can never bring it round afterwards, and it remains fixed behind you, hitching up the left side of your belt in the most uncomfortable manner, and forming a stumbling block to all the attendants who bring tea, etc. I must tell you that swords are here worn in a frog, like a French policeman's, and not loosely attached by straps, like those of English officers. After thus seating yourself, you spread out both arms, and then bring your hands to your face, solemnly stroking your beard (if you have one), and saying, "Allaho-akber,"—"God is great."

Thus seated, a conversation was carried on through Jooma as interpreter. The Yoozbashee asked whether I had suffered any discomfort by the way, and apologized for my detention at Shahidoolla, saying it was caused by the arrival of the other Englishman regarding whom they were obliged to get the King's orders. He asked me who he was, and what he wanted. In reply I repeated the old story of our meeting while on a shooting excursion, of his desiring to accompany me to Yârkand, and of my refusal without the King's orders. The Yoozbashee then took his leave, after giving me a short note from his Majesty, giving me a military salute which I fancy they must have taken from the Russians, as it is in continental style.

Immediately afterwards the procession appeared, headed by my former Mihmandâr, whom I now learned to call the



Panjâbashee (which is his real title, meaning "captain of fifty"). They laid before me a cloth, and covered it with trays of fruits of all sorts, eggs, sugar, bread, etc. This I found was a regular institution; it is called a *dastar-khân*, and during the remainder of my journey the ceremony took place every morning and evening on the part of the Yoozbashee; beside which, *dastar-khâns* were presented by other officials. I generally ate one or two of the fruit, and offered some to the person who was in charge; for the giver did not himself accompany it as a rule, but sent his highest subordinate. Presently a sheep was brought to the door, and a cold fowl on a dish. From that day to this a fresh sheep has appeared daily at my door, and though all my servants are feasted on mutton, and I constantly give away whole sheep, yet my flock keeps on increasing. . . .

Later in the afternoon I paid a visit of ceremony to the Yoozbashee in his own akooee, attended by my two Guddee servants (arrayed in the gorgeous cotton silk *khilats* sent by the Moonshee from Yârkand), and preceded by the Panjâbashee. I went to his door. He put me on the carpet of honor, and ordered in a *dastar-khân* and tea. He had now taken off his outer robe, and was dressed in a Yârkand silk *khilat*, loose and shining; beneath it a *kamsole*, or inner robe of English printed muslin fastened by a scarf round the waist. On his head, instead of a turban, was a tall cap of dark-green velvet turned up with a fur lining. I am always looking out for something Scythian in Toorkistân; for it is pretty well agreed, I believe, that the Asiatic Scythians at any rate were the progenitors of the modern Tartars, under which very vague title the Toorkees are certainly included. Sir H. Rawlinson indeed thinks that the ancient Sakae or "Amyrgian Scythians" of Herodotus inhabited Yârkand and Kâshghar. Now

their characteristic dress was a tall pointed cap and trousers. Here I saw them before me on the first Toork of rank that I had met! The head-dress is probably peculiar to Central Asia. . . .

Towards afternoon of the second day the valley began to widen, and the hilly sides to become lower. Numberless red-legged partridges were calling all around. I was made to load my gun, but told to come along on horseback. Instead of allowing me to walk up to the birds, no sooner was a covey seen than our whole cavalcade scattered wildly in chase. Some of the party even crossed the stream after them, yelling with excitement. I and my Guddee servants roared with laughter at seeing these people galloping after the partridges, as if they wished to put salt on their tails instead of shooting them, or letting me do so. I watched my opportunity, and, when they were out of the way, I dismounted and went after a covey which I heard in another direction. Returning with a bird I had shot, I was met by the Yoozbashee holding five live ones in his hand, and shouting for Shaw Sahib to come and look. I was astounded, but soon discovered that this apparently childish amusement of galloping after partridges was really a most effectual way of catching them. Several were afterwards caught in my sight. The birds fly from one side of the valley to the other. If put up again immediately, they soon get tired, and after two or three flights begin running on the ground. Then the men gallop up, and strike at them with their whips. It is a most exciting amusement over rough country. I had heard of quails being caught in this way when tired by a long flight during their annual migrations, but did not imagine a partridge could be taken so.

When the partridges ceased my companions began sky-larking among themselves, displaying the most perfect

horsemanship in so doing. . . . While amusing ourselves thus, we reached the first cultivation. The valley was no different from before, but we crossed several fields of fallow ground, and several dry irrigation channels; while on the other side of the stream there was a clump of leafless trees, and two or three mud-built houses with flat roofs. Presently a flock of sheep appeared, and then a lot of donkeys grazing. I hailed all these signs of inhabited lands with delight, to the great amusement of the Yoozbashée, who, however, seemed quite to understand what the pleasure must be of leaving behind us the deserts where we had been so long. He called my attention to each fresh object that presented itself, saying with a smile, "Here, Shaw Sahib, here is a tree, and there is a heap of straw earthed over to keep for the cattle, and look, there are cocks and hens, and a peasant's house!"

[Mr. Shaw's narrative of his journey to the cities of Yârkand and Kâshgar, his observation of the country, and dealings with the ruler, are full of interest, but too extended to permit of further extracts. His residence in Kâshgar was almost an imprisonment, as he was given no liberty to traverse the city, though otherwise well treated. Finally, after a long delay, he was given permission to depart. The Yoozbashée accompanied him to the frontier, and bade him adieu, almost with tears, at the Karakash River, and near the beginning of the dreaded Karakoram Pass, Shaw's description of which we give in another selection. In 1870, after his return to England, he was appointed on a commission sent to visit the ruler of Yârkand. He was subsequently appointed British commissioner in Little Tibet.]

## LITTLE TIBET.

G. T. VIGNE.

[Vigne's visit to Cashmere was followed by a journey over the mountains to Iskardo, on the Upper Indus, in the district of Ladakh, or Little Tibet. At the foot of the mountain pass which it was necessary to traverse, the traveller was visited by a messenger from Ahmed Shah, of Iskardo, a singular-looking person, dressed in a black velvet frock, with silver buttons, and wearing a leather belt profusely ornamented with little knobs of silver. He had been sent to welcome and attend upon the traveller, and brought him a good pony for his journey to Iskardo. He looked with doubt and suspicion on the Sikh guards of Mr. Vigne.]

WHEN we had commenced the ascent, and his fears and suspicions were over, his tongue was rarely at rest, and I listened with avidity and delight to the recital of his own adventures, his stories of Great and Little Tibet, and the countries on the north of us, including Yârkand and its Chinese masters: how they were always at war with the people of Khokand; how they had labored for months to cut through a glacier, in order to form a passage for their army; how the general of the Kokokandees had loaded several wagons with the pig-tails of the Chinese soldiers slain in action; and how, in return, his celestial majesty had sent back the same number of wagons laden with millet-seed, by way of intimating the countless numbers of his troops; how a Chinese general, to prove his powers of ubiquity, would start off his whole army in carriages overnight to a distant post, the vehicles being sometimes drawn across the country by paper kites; how the walls of one of their strongholds were of loadstone, and the advancing forces were aghast, when their side-arms flew

from their scabbards, and their matchlocks struggled in their hands!

It took half a day to reach the halting-station, a small open lawn surrounded by a pine forest. Here we slept on the ground without pitching tents, in order to be ready to ascend to the summit, and cross the snow before sunrise, while it was yet hard with the night's frost. The table-land in summer-time is covered with a fine greensward, and at the distance of a mile and a half rises a small eminence on the left, towards which, on our approach, Nasim Khan suddenly started off in a gallop, calling on me to follow, and loudly exclaiming that he would show me a view worth a *lac* of rupees. I quickly followed him, and the stupendous peak of Diarmul, more than forty miles distant in a straight line, but appearing to be much nearer, burst upon my sight, rising far above every other around it, and entirely cased in snow, excepting where its scarps were too precipitous for snow to remain upon them. It was partially encircled by a broad belt of cloud, and its finely-pointed summit, glistening in the full blaze of the morning sun, relieved by the clear blue sky beyond it, presented, on account of its isolated situation, an appearance of extreme altitude, equalled by few of the Himalaya range, though their actual height be greater.

This peak is called Diarmul by the Tibetans, and Nunga Purbut, or the naked mountain, by the Cashmerians. I should estimate its elevation at nearly nineteen thousand feet above the sea.\* The pass on which we stood has a height of twelve thousand feet; on the south we saw two-thirds of the Vale of Cashmere, with the snowy range of the Panjal behind it.

“On the north side, the valley of Gurys is suddenly

---

\* It is now known to be much higher than this.

exposed to view, at a depth of about three thousand feet below the pass. The entrance into this valley is exceedingly picturesque, as the river comes dashing along through a rich meadow, partly covered with linden-, walnut-, and willow-trees, while the mountains on either side present nothing but a succession of abrupt precipices, and Alpine ledges, covered with fir-trees. . . .

The Kishengunga River contains a great many fish, and some of my coolies, as we approached a particular spot where there was a little smooth water and quiet lying for them in a nook, apart from the violence of the torrent, took off their sashes, fastened them together, and then let them drop like a net into the water, while another so placed himself as to drive the fish gently towards and over them: they then lifted the cloth and caught at one haul at least one hundred fish, of about half or quarter of a pound each. Some of them were cooked for dinner, but I abstained from eating the roes, as I was cautioned not to do so, as they are considered poisonous. One of my servants, a Hindoo, who disregarded the warning, became so alarmingly ill that for a time I thought he would have died.

The way now led aloft upon a table-land called Burzil, or the Birches, where the limestone of the valleys gives way to a granite formation. These regions present as wild and gray a scene as any painter could wish for, made up of a confusion of snowy summits and hoary precipices, broadly relieved in one place by the deep rust color of the ironstone rock; the chaotic masses with which the whole valley was thickly covered; the streams of the infant Kishengunga dashing over and among them, with the milk-white and delicate stems of the birch-trees, in full leaf, trembling amidst their descending violence.

As we were approaching Burzil we met a Little-Tibetan

who had been sent on some errand by Ahmed Shah, and from whom my servants learned that there were robbers in the vicinity, and that Ahmed Shah himself was near at hand, with a large force, for the purpose of destroying them on the following day. Towards nightfall, while sitting by a fire near my tent-door, another Balti native showed himself for an instant on the crest of the rocky eminence below which we were encamped, and then hastened away with the intelligence of my arrival. In about an hour afterwards the loud, distant, and discordant blasts of the Tibetan music were heard echoing along the glen: the sound grew louder and louder, and we were all on the tiptoe of expectation. At length the band, which was the foremost of the procession, made its appearance above us, consisting of fifes, clarionets, and five or six huge brazen trumpets, about six feet in length, shaped like the classic instruments which are usually put to the mouth of Fame. After these came a group of thirty or forty soldiers, the wildest-looking figures imaginable, wearing large, loosely-tied turbans, and armed with matchlocks, swords, and shields. After them came one of Ahmed Shah's sons, preceded by a few small red horses, and surrounded by more soldiers.

Ahmed Ali Khan, for so the young prince was named, had been sent by his father to welcome me and give me honorable escort. He was a young man, of short and slender make, walking with a lame and somewhat awkward gait, in consequence of his having broken both his legs by a fall, when he was a child. They were cured, by the bye, by his swallowing pills of rock asphaltum, and living upon milk at the same time. His handsome features and fine expanse of forehead derived a somewhat effeminate expression from his back hair (the front of the head was shaved) being gathered into two large massive curls, hang-



ing down, one behind each ear. All the young men of Little Tibet follow this fashion, and leave the moustaches, but shave the beard until it begins to grow strongly. The long curls are then doffed or neglected, and the beard is allowed to luxuriate.

[The young prince stated that a large band of robbers had been raiding his father's territory, who had placed his soldiers in ambush to cut them off on their retreat.]

Accordingly, at an early hour the next morning we all moved forward towards the place of the ambuscade. The whole country was, on account of its elevation, quite free from trees, but the ground was blind, rocky, and covered with coarse herbage nearly up to the summit of the mountains among which our path lay. After a few miles we came in sight of the Rajah's tent, on the opposite side of the mouth of the defile through which the marauders were expected to arrive, and near it were several hundred men, visible to us, but concealed from their approaching victims by a small eminence. The young Khan ordered a halt within one mile and a half of his father's tent, and we sat down for half an hour, quietly awaiting the preconcerted signal. He said that he had particular orders from his father to give me escort and protection; and when I expressed a wish to proceed to the side of a hill opposite to the end of the defile, where I could without any danger to myself have seen the whole *cortége* of the robbers moving unconsciously along into the very jaws of the ambuscade, he said that I must not go, as they would probably see me, and all his father's plans would be spoiled.

From the spot where we remained I could distinguish several parties lying in ambush in different parts of the mountains, but all was as silent as the place was desolate, although so many human beings were in sight. Suddenly,

and I shall never forget the excitement of a scene so new and so savage, the band advanced rapidly into the open part of the defile, striking up one of its most wildest and loudest strains, and the mountains echoed again with the clangor of their huge trumpets, and the laugh-like cheers of the Baltis, as every man left his place of concealment and sprang forward upon the astonished marauders. Our party were instantly mounted, and we pushed forward to the top of the hill in advance of us; but the work had been speedily finished, and was nearly over when we arrived. The bodies of five or six men who had attempted to escape towards us were lying on our right. They had been intercepted and killed, and stripped in an instant. At a short distance lay a wounded wretch, who had raised himself on his hand, and by his side was an old Tibetan soldier, coolly loading his matchlock, from which he gave him the *coup-de-grace*. Around another was a circle of the victors, from which one more ferocious than the rest would now and then step forward, to inflict a fresh wound with his sword. Others were busied in stripping the slain and securing part of the spoil to themselves. Among the latter were my brave Cashmerian coolies, who, watching their opportunity, abandoned their loads in the *mêlée*, and contrived to seize upon several sheep, which they killed and buried, on the same principle that a dog buries a bone, to be dug up on their return.

While I was surveying the extraordinary scene around me, my attention was attracted by a large crowd, and I was told that the Rajah was approaching. He and all around him dismounted as he drew near to me, and I, of course, followed the example. Of two who were taller than the rest I did not immediately know which was Ahmed Shah, but I afterwards found that the second was his brother, Gholám Shah. Ahmed Shah approached me

bareheaded, and when near he frequently stopped and salaamed by bowing low and touching the ground with the back of his hand, and then carrying it to his forehead. I advanced quickly, took his hand, and shook it *à l'Anglais*, bidding my interpreter inform him that it was the English custom to do so, with which piece of information he seemed much pleased. We then all sat down upon some tent rugs which had been brought for the occasion, and after mutual inquiries after each other's health, I congratulated him on the success of the expedition. He replied that these very marauders had pillaged part of his country two or three times before, and that he had determined to come in person and destroy them; that he had all his life prayed that he might set eyes upon a Frank before he died, and that now his wish was granted.

I must have appeared an odd figure to him, being dressed in a white duck shooting-jacket and a broad-brimmed white cotton hat. I had come, he remarked, from a long distance to visit him, and had arrived at a very fortunate hour: he said that he would do all he could to make me welcome; and added, that what with my arrival and his having killed the thieves, he was really so happy that he knew not what to do. During this conversation the soldiers came in from different quarters, showing their wounds, some of them being very severe ones, and displaying the spoils, consisting of swords which the robbers had scarcely time to draw, and old matchlocks for which they had not been allowed the opportunity of striking a light.

My friend, Nasim Khan, who had joined the ambuscades, came up without his cap, which he said he had lost in the conflict. Out of the whole number of the marauders, three or four only had contrived to make their escape; the rest were killed, or so severely wounded as to be supposed dead. About one hundred men, women, and children, and a very

large flock of sheep, were rescued from their hands, and some of them came up to thank the Rajah for what he had done for them.

[They soon began their journey to Iskardo, ascending to the table-land of Deotsuh, about twelve thousand feet above sea-level.]

We wound in long array across the elevated plain. I was eager to arrive at Iskardo, and was always for moving forward; but the Rajah, whose yesterday's victory was a great feat, seemed determined to take it more coolly, and was perpetually calling for a fresh pipe, and stopping to enjoy it, I, of course, being obliged, out of respect, to dismount and sit down with him. At length, after a march of sixteen miles, we arrived at our camp-ground, near a large but fordable stream. As night drew near, the air became extremely cold, and my Hindoo servants were in a state of despair. A quantity of dead dwarf juniper roots was collected by the Tibetans, and a large and cheery fire was soon kindled, which added much to their comfort. I contented myself with partaking of their supper, and, while my bed was preparing, was keeping myself warm by walking to and fro with my hands in my pockets, having previously, as I thought, taken leave of the Rajah for the night, when he suddenly joined me and exclaimed, "I'll walk with you." Then, sticking his hands into his sash, he forthwith began stalking up and down by my side, at a pace that his dignity had not often permitted before.

[Towards sunset they reached the foot of a steep ridge, and prepared for a farther ascent of about four hundred feet.]

The *cortége* commenced the ascent of the zigzag; the coolies toiled up the path, and were obliged to halt and take breath at every twenty paces; then they advanced again, encouraging each other by loudly cheering, in a

tone that might have been taken for the wild and discordant laughter of maniacs. I pressed forward with eagerness in advance of Ahmed Shah, riding as far as I could; but finding I should attain the summit faster on foot, I left my horse with a groom, and soon stood at the upper edge of a glacis of snow, and thence—through a long, sloping vista, formed of barren peaks, of savage shapes and various colors, in which the milky whiteness of the gypsum rock was contrasted with the deeply-red tint of those that contained iron—I, the first European who had ever beheld them, gazed downward from a height of six or seven thousand feet upon the sandy plains and green orchards of the valley of the Indus at Iskardo, with a sensation of mingled pride and pleasure, of which no one but a traveller can form a just conception. The rock of the same name, with the Rajah's stronghold at the east end of it, was a very conspicuous object. The stream from the valley of Shighur, which joins the Indus at its foot, was visible from the spot where I stood, while to the north, and wherever the eye could rove, arose, with surpassing grandeur, a vast assemblage of the enormous summits that compose the Tibetan Himalaya. . . .

We did not reach the rock of Iskardo until the afternoon of the next day, and upon my arrival I found that a good house at its foot, in which some of the Rajah's family usually resided, had been emptied for my reception. I followed the Rajah up the steps to the upper room, where one of his attendants immediately presented me with a plate of small, thin, fancifully stamped pieces of gold, made from the gold-dust collected on the banks of the Indus, and another plateful of similar silver pieces, which I showered down from the balcony upon the crowd below. After these were exhausted we threw down several bits of cloth for turbans, etc., and all laughed heartily at

the furious scrambling and vociferations which took place even before the articles fell.

The Indus was visible from my window, and I then turned to enjoy the view of it for the first time. It approached through a sandy plain, from the eastern end of the valley, and here, nine miles from the entrance, it washed the end of the rock within musket-shot of me, in a noble stream of more than one hundred and fifty yards in width. The Rock is about two miles in length, and the peak over the east end rises some eight hundred feet above the river. The whole of this superb natural fortress, situated in the middle of the valley of Iskardo, which is nineteen miles long and seven wide, rises with mural sides from a buttress of sand, except at the western end, where it slopes steeply to the plain.

The valley of the Indus at Iskardo is about seven thousand three hundred feet above the level of the sea. Enormous mountains, rising eight thousand feet or more above it, surround it on every side, bare, rugged, and apparently inaccessible, with long, ascending defiles between them. The surface of the valley, but for the verdure supplied by partial irrigation, would be almost a sandy plain; but water may be found anywhere, I was informed, at the depth of ten yards.

[Mr. Vigne next made a journey up the valley of Shighur, lying at right angles to that of Iskardo, and visited the glacier at its head.]

The glory of the valley up which we travelled is the magnificent glacier at the end of it. Its lower extremity is a short distance from the village of Arindo, and the natives say that it is slowly but perceptibly advancing. It occupies the entire valley as far as the eye can reach; and a place that looks more like the extremity of the world does not exist. Vast mountains, alike bare, precipitous,

and rugged, appear to form a channel for it, and in the extreme distance their sides are colored with the red and white tints of iron and gypsum. The width of the lofty wall of ice, in which it terminates towards Arindo, is about a quarter of a mile; its height is nearly one hundred feet. I have never seen any spectacle of the same nature so truly grand as the debouchure of the waters from beneath this glacier. The ice is clear and green as an emerald, the archway lofty, gloomy, and Avernus-like. The stream that emerges from it is no incipient brook, but a large and ready-formed river, whose color is that of the soil which it has collected in its course, whose violence and velocity betoken a very long descent, and whose force is best explained by saying that it rolls along with it enormous masses of ice, which are whirled against the rocks in its bed with a concussion producing a sound resembling that of a distant cannon.

[Mr. Vigne afterwards visited Leh, the capital of Ladakh, and attempted to make explorations still deeper into the mountain regions, but without success.]

---

## THROUGH TIBET TO LHASSA.

EVARISTE R. HUC.

[Abbé Huc, a French missionary and traveller, was born at Toulouse in 1813, and made his celebrated journey to Tibet in 1845. He published "Travels in Tartary, Thibet, and China," "The Chinese Empire," and "Christianity in China, Tartary, and Thibet." In his attempt to penetrate Tibet he and his companions joined the Tibetan embassy from China, which swelled by the addition of caravans till it became an immense troop, of oxen, horses, camels, and pilgrims. From the more fertile region they came to a land of desert and diffi-



cult mountains. After describing the crossing of an arid district, whose soil was impregnated with salt and borax, the author continues as follows :]

WE rested two days in this country in order to collect all the strength possible for the ascent of the dreaded Bourhan-Bota,—our long-haired oxen and camels enjoying themselves on the nitre and salt, and we feasting on Tsamba and some goats which we got from the herdsmen in exchange for brick tea; and then, setting out about three o'clock in the morning, we arrived at nine at the foot of the mountain. The caravan stopped for a moment, and we gazed with anxiety upward at the steep and rough paths, on which we perceived with anxiety a light vapor resting, which was said to be the noxious gas before mentioned [poisonous exhalations which affect this mountain]. We adopted the precautionary measure, recommended by tradition, of chewing some cloves of garlic, and then commenced the ascent.

In a short time the horses appeared to be incapable of bearing their riders; every one slackened his pace, all faces turned pale, the heart beat faintly, the limbs refused their office; many lay down, then got up again, made a few steps, then lay down again, and in this deplorable manner toiled up the side of the famous Bourhan-Bota. A part of our troop stopped in a deep hollow of the mountain, where it was said the pestilential vapor was less thick; the rest exerted their utmost energies to reach the top, where, at least, the lungs could play freely, relieved from the murderous carbonic acid gas that had so long oppressed them.

To descend on the other side was mere play, for there the air was pure and easily respirable. The people told us that when there was a strong wind the pernicious effect was less felt; but that it was very dangerous in calm

weather, for then, being heavier than the atmospheric air, it remains near the surface of the ground, instead of being in some measure dispersed.

[They found much higher and more rugged mountains before them, and the cold so great that in a lake which they passed they saw a number of dead wild oxen which had been frozen in while attempting to swim across.]

By the time we were approaching the most elevated point of Central Asia a terrible wind had set in from the north, which lasted fifteen days, and increased the rigor of the cold to a degree that threatened us with great misfortunes. The sky was still clear, but the cold was so terrible that even at mid-day the influence of the sun was barely perceptible. Even during the day, and of course still more during the night, we were under the continued apprehension of being frozen to death.

I may mention one circumstance that will give an idea of the extremity of the cold. Every morning before setting off the caravan used to take a meal, and then not again until they encamped; but as the Tsamba was a kind of food so little agreeable that it was difficult to take enough of it at once to support us during the day, we used to soak in tea two or three balls of it to keep in reserve for the day's journey. We wrapped up this boiling paste in very warm linen, and placed it on our breasts; and over this we had our clothing, namely, a garment of sheep-skin, then a waistcoat of lamb's-skin, then a short garment of fox's-skin, and over all a great woollen coat. Now during this fortnight we constantly found the balls of Tsamba frozen, and when we drew them from our bosoms, they were so hard that we almost broke our teeth in attempting to eat them. The cattle suffered terribly, especially the mules and horses, which are not so strong as the

oxen. We had to dress them in felt carpets, and tie camels' skin round their heads; and in any other circumstances their appearance would certainly have excited our hilarity, but now we were in no humor for laughing, for, notwithstanding all precautions, the cattle of the caravan were decimated by death.

[As they advanced more deeply into Tibet the country became more inhabitable, and they found themselves, after fifteen days, in a beautiful plain known as Pampou, in the vicinity of Lhassa, the capital of Tibet, and the goal of their journey. This country was watered by a large river, was fertile, and appeared to the wearied travellers, after three months of desert travel, the most beautiful country in the world.]

This long and painful journey had brought us so near the savage state that we were in ecstasy with everything that belonged to civilization. The houses, the agricultural implements, even a simple furrow, attracted our attention. But what struck us most was the prodigious elevation of temperature which we noticed in the cultivated country. Although we were still in the month of January, the river and the canals were merely bordered by a light covering of ice, and we met no one clothed in furs.

We were now only separated from Lha-Ssa by a mountain; but it was one extremely steep and difficult of ascent. The Thibetans and Mongols, however, climb it with great devotion; as they believe that those who have the happiness to arrive at its summit receive a complete remission of their sins; and certainly, if the mountain have not the power to remit sins, it has that of imposing a pretty severe penance. We had set off an hour after midnight, and we did not arrive until ten o'clock in the morning; having been compelled, on account of the steep and rocky character of the paths, which makes it nearly impossible for a horse to keep his footing, to walk almost the whole way.

The sun was just about to set when, issuing from a defile in the mountain, we saw lying before us the renowned Lha-Ssa, the metropolis of the Buddhist world, encircled by a multitude of grand old trees, which form with their foliage a girdle of verdure around it; its white houses, with their terraces and turrets; its numerous temples with their gilded roofs; and high above all, the majestic palace of the Talé Lama. At the entrance of the towns some Mongols with whom we had made acquaintance on the road had come to meet us, and invite us to a lodging which they had prepared for us. It was the 13th of January, 1846; just eighteen months after we had quitted the valley of the Black Waters.

The day following that of our arrival in Lha-Ssa, we took a guide and traversed the different quarters of the town, in quest of a lodging. The houses of Lha-Ssa are generally large, several stories high, and terminated by a terrace, slightly inclined, to facilitate the running off of the water; they are whitewashed all over, with the exception of some borders, and the door and window-frames, which are painted red or yellow. The reformed Buddhists are particularly fond of these two colors; they are in some sort sacred in their eyes, and are called lamanesque colors. The houses of Lha-Ssa are painted every year, and have, consequently, an admirable appearance of freshness; but the inside is far from being in harmony with the out. The rooms are smoky, dirty, and foul-smelling, and generally encumbered with all sorts of utensils, in most disgusting disorder. Thibetan houses are so many whited sepulchres, true images of all false religions, which veil corruption and falsehood by a certain number of dogmatic truths, and some principles of morality.

After a long search we found a small lodging in a large house already containing fifty lodgers. Our humble abode

was in the upper story, ascended by twenty-six stairs, unfurnished with any kind of balustrade, and so steep and narrow that, to avoid the risk of breaking our necks every time we mounted them, it was necessary to make use of both hands and feet. Our apartment was composed of one large square room and a small corridor; the latter lighted by a narrow window, garnished by three thick wooden bars, and a round skylight. The latter hole served a variety of purposes: it admitted the light, the rain, the wind, and the snow; and also afforded egress to the smoke from our hearth. In order to protect themselves in some measure from the winter's cold, the Thibetans place in the middle of their chambers a basin of baked clay, in which argol may be burned. As this kind of fuel gives more smoke than heat, the advantage of a hole in the roof is obvious; and this inestimable aperture in our chamber enabled us to make a little fire without being quite stifled. It is true this good had its attendant evil in admitting, at times, the rain and snow upon our backs, but when we have had led a nomadic life for some time we cease to be disturbed by trifles.

As soon as we had organized our household, we began to make acquaintance with Lha-Ssa and its inhabitants. Lha-Ssa is not more than two leagues in circumference, and is not shut within ramparts like the Chinese towns. In the suburbs the number of gardens planted with large trees afford a magnificent girdle of verdure to the town. The principal streets are very wide, straight, and tolerably clean; the suburbs most disgustingly filthy. In the latter there is a quarter where the houses are built entirely of ox- and ram's horns; these bizarre edifices have not an unpleasant aspect, and are of great solidity. The ox-horns being smooth and white, and those of the sheep black and rough, form a multitude of singular combinations; the in-

terstices are filled with mortar; these houses are never whitened,—the Thibetans have the good taste to leave them in their savage and fantastic beauty, without attempting to improve them.

The palace of the Talé Lama well deserves the celebrity it enjoys. Towards the northern part of the town, at a small distance from it, there rises a rocky mountain of no great elevation, and conical in form, bearing the name of Buddha-La, that is, the Divine Mountain, and on this grand site the adorers of the Talé Buddha have reared a palace to their living and incarnate divinity. This palace consists of a cluster of temples, varying in size and beauty; the centre temple has an elevation of four stories; the dome is entirely covered with plates of gold, and is surrounded by a peristyle, of which the columns are likewise gilded. Here the Talé Lama has fixed his residence, and from the height of his sanctuary can contemplate, on days of high solemnities, his countless worshippers, thronging the plain and prostrating themselves at the base of the Sacred Mountain. The secondary palaces grouped around accommodate a crowd of lamas, whose continued occupation is to serve and wait on the living Buddha. Two fine avenues, bordered with magnificent trees, lead from Lha-Ssa to this temple, and there may be seen a multitude of pilgrims unrolling between their fingers the long Buddhist rosaries, and the lamas of the court splendidly dressed, and mounted on horses richly caparisoned. There is continual motion in the vicinity of Buddha-La, but the multitude is generally silent and serious.

The Thibetan women adopt a custom, or rather submit to a regulation, certainly unique in the world. Before going out of their houses, they rub their faces with a sort of black sticky varnish, a good deal like conserve of grapes. As the object is to render themselves hideous,

they daub their faces with this disgusting cosmetic till they scarcely resemble human creatures. The following was, we are told, the origin of this monstrous practice :

About two hundred years ago, the Nomekhan, or Lama King of anterior Thibet, was a man of the austere character. At that period, the Thibetan women were not more in the habit of trying to make themselves look ugly than the women of other countries ; on the contrary, they were extravagantly addicted to dress and luxury. By degrees the contagion spread even to the holy families of the lamas ; and the Buddhist convents relaxed their discipline in a manner that threatened a complete dissolution.

In order to arrest the progress of this alarming libertinism, the Nomekhan published an edict forbidding women to appear in public unless disfigured in the fashion above mentioned ; the severest punishments and the heaviest displeasure of Buddha were threatened to the refractory. It must have required no ordinary courage to publish such an edict ; but that the women obeyed it was still more extraordinary. Tradition makes no mention of the slightest revolt on their part. The fair Thibetans vie with each other in making themselves frightful, and she who is most offensively besmeared passes for the most pious ; the custom appears to be considered as a dogma to be accepted. In the country the law is most rigorously observed ; but at Lha-Ssa, women are to be met with who venture to appear with their faces as nature made them ; but those who permit themselves this license are considered as women of bad reputation, and they never fail to hide themselves when they catch sight of an agent of the police.

[It was only by virtue of their disguise, and their knowledge of the language and the customs of the people, that the travellers had succeeded in entering this jealously-guarded sacred city of the Buddhists, which but one other European had visited during the century. Sus-



picion was soon aroused regarding their character and errand, and they were finally summoned before the regent and the Chinese ambassador. On examination they stated frankly who they were. In consequence of this their baggage was sealed, and they held captive during the night. The next day their trunks were opened in the presence of these high officials.]

We took off the seal of the Talé Lama, and the two trunks that everybody had long been devouring with their eyes were at last laid open. We took out the contents, one after another, and displayed them on a large table. First appeared some volumes in French and Latin; then some Tartar and Chinese books, church linen and ornaments, sacred vases, rosaries, crosses, medals, and a magnificent collection of lithographs. Everybody was lost in admiration at sight of this little European museum. They stared, jogged each other with the elbow, and clucked with their tongues in sign of approbation. No one had ever seen anything so wonderful or so beautiful. Every shining white object was silver, everything that shone yellow was gold. Every countenance expanded, and it seemed to be quite forgotten what dangerous people we were. The Thibetans put out their tongues and scratched their ears; the Chinese made us the most sentimental reverences. The bag of medals made all eyes turn in their sockets. They hoped, probably, that we should make a public distribution of these brilliant pieces of gold on leaving the hall of judgment. . . .

The good-natured regent looked quite radiant and triumphant when, after all, there appeared nothing among our effects to compromise us. "You see," said he to the ambassador, "these men are ministers of the Lord of heaven, and honest men; what would you have of them? Let them go in peace!" These flattering words were received in the hall with a murmur of approbation; and we responded from the bottom of our hearts, *Deo gratias*. Our

baggage was again shouldered by the people pressed into the service, and we returned to our home with much greater briskness than when we had quitted it; the people flocked from all sides to salute us, and the French name was in every mouth.

[The regent extended his favor so far as to give the missionaries a splendid house, and to permit them to enter upon the work of proselytism,—a remarkable permission to be given in the central city of Buddhism. They erected a chapel in their dwelling, and received many visitors, to whom they explained the tenets of Christianity. Their popularity, however, aroused the jealousy of the ambassador, who endeavored to persuade the regent to expel them as enemies of the Talé Lama. He refused.]

The quarrel grew more bitter every day, and matters came to such a pass that prudence compelled us to resolve on yielding to circumstances, and no longer maintain a resistance that might compromise the regent our protector, and even become, perhaps, the cause of serious dissensions between China and Thibet. We decided, then, that it would be better to bow the head, and accept our persecution with resignation. Our conduct would at least prove to the Thibetans that we had come among them with pacific intentions, and had no intention of establishing ourselves in the country by violence. Having adopted this resolution, we went to the palace of the regent, who, hearing that we had decided upon quitting Lha-Ssa, looked sorry and embarrassed. He told us that it was his warmest wish to assure us a free and tranquil abode in Thibet, but that alone, and deprived of the support of his sovereign, he was too feeble to repress the tyranny of the Chinese, who, profiting by the infancy of the Talé Lama, arrogated to themselves rights before unheard of in the country.

[They proposed to proceed from Lhassa to Calcutta, but the ambassador would not consent to this, but required that they should trav-

erse the whole breadth of the Chinese Empire to Canton, sending them off with an escort of two mandarins and fifteen soldiers. The regent and other Tibetan officials bade them adieu with much friendship.]

Outside of the town, a number of the inhabitants with whom we had been on terms of friendship, and many of whom appeared sincerely disposed to embrace our holy religion, had assembled to salute us once more. Among them was a young physician, still wearing on his breast the cross that we had given him. We alighted from our horses to give them some parting words of consolation, to exhort them to abandon courageously the superstitious worship of Buddha, and adore the God of the Christians, confiding always in his infinite goodness and mercy. When we had remounted our horses, we cast a long last look on the city of Lha-Ssa, still visible in the distance, and said in the depths of our hearts, "God's will be done." It was the 15th of March, 1846.

[Thus ended this bold attempt to teach Christianity in the metropolis of Buddhism. The courage of the missionaries is to be commended, though their purpose was hopeless from the start.]

---

## CROSSING THE KARAKORAM PASS.

ROBERT SHAW.

[After his journey to Yârkand, Mr. Shaw made his way back to India *via* the Karakoram Pass of the Himalayas. His account of this dreaded pass is here appended.]

I HAVE mentioned the parallel ridges of mountains about the Karakoram Pass, which are like an army in column. As you progress through them by the broad valleys which separate them, you find that they diminish in height, and

gradually sink below the lines of perpetual snow, with the exception of isolated peaks which rise above it. The valleys keep on rising, but never at a steeper gradient than you could drive a carriage up. At last you come to a ridge barring the way, and looking no higher than a railway embankment, though it may perhaps be a couple of hundred feet high. This ridge constitutes the Karakoram Pass, which seems rather like a *lip* by which some ancient lake may have discharged itself, than what we understand by a mountain-pass.

The so-called *Karakoram Range* might better be described as the raised edge of a basin, or the culminating part of an irregular plateau, than as a chain of mountains. The descent on the south side is greater, but you can hardly believe yourself to be on the water-shed between the great river-system which flows into the Indian Ocean and that which runs eastward towards China. The heights on either side nowhere rise beyond the dignity of hills, and there is no perpetual snow at hand, though the Karakoram is eighteen thousand feet above the sea. The road is marked with skeletons of horses; the rarity of the atmosphere and the absence of grass for many days' journey causing a mortality among the beasts of burden which hardly seems to be justified by the amount of inconvenience which the traveller himself experiences.

At the distance of a day's march south of the pass you come in sight of a range of real glacier mountains. The Shayoh River, one of the sources of the Indus, rises in a perfect ocean of ice, far more worthy of that name than the *Mer de Glace* of Chamounix, which is rather an ice *river* than a *sea*. Two glaciers, coming down from stupendous peaks, unite and overflow a large plain with their blue waves. It is worth a journey from England merely to see this place. The plain, barren as it seems, is frequented

by Tibetan antelopes, with their slender lyre-shaped horns, the most elegant of their species. Terraces and other marks of the former existence of a lake extend to a height of two hundred feet up the sides of this plain and of the gorge by which the stream escapes. There are the marks of a lake which has repeatedly been formed here by the glaciers blocking up the ravine below, and which caused such devastation by the cataclysm of 1841. But I think the marks are too considerable to have been formed during the short existence of recent lakes, and rather point to repeated phenomena of the same sort in earlier times. This, if true, is very interesting.

But directly after this you leave the high plateaux and rounded downs which are the characteristics of the country, and follow the river down into the narrow gorges of the mountains. You have reached the broken edge of the table-land. So narrow was the ravine we entered that the river had to be forded and reforded at every turn, the way being constantly closed by its windings.

The most difficult of these fords was caused by a huge glacier called Koomdan, whose nose protruded from a side valley, with pinnacles and seracs, some of which were quite two hundred feet high, glistening like sugar. I had ridden half across the stream when my horse seemed to fall, as if he had broken through a sheet of ice. I was soon on my legs in the bitterly cold water, and on looking round saw all the horses floundering for their lives, like a shoal of fish in shallow water. We had got into a quicksand! Most of us reached the shore with a little difficulty, but two of the horses had got more involved; their loads were washed loose by the torrent, and they themselves lay exhausted and panting on their sides (for the actual water was here not more than two feet deep), with their heads gradually sinking below the stream. The sand which engulfed a horse

was firm enough to support a man, and we were able with some trouble to hold the horses' heads above water, while they were being released from their loads and dragged ashore. Even when on dry land, they still lay exhausted on their sides, with their teeth firmly closed, blood oozing from their noses, and trembling in every limb. I have frequently noticed the presence of quicksands in proximity to glaciers which reach a low-level, and of the ice-beds described above.

Some three miles below this, another glacier blocked the way. After careful examination we discovered that the passage was entirely closed for horses, as the ice had in the last three months advanced as far as the opposite cliffs, tremendous limestone precipices, while the river forced its way under it through a kind of tunnel. To make matters worse, it began to snow, and my servants, already wet through in fording the ice-cold water, sat down like natives to bemoan their fate and die. Moreover, night was coming on; so there was nothing for it but to halt. No grass could be discovered, and our supply of grain for the horses would only hold out another day, by which time we had hoped to reach a pasture ground. Now, however, this was impossible. The baggage had all to be left on this spot to be fetched hereafter, and the next day horses were sent round by a five days' *détour* over the mountains, dependent on a little of the men's rice for food. Being anxious to reach an inhabited place, so as to send off news of my safety after eight months' silence, I started with two men to cross the obstacle, leaving tents, bedding, cooking things, and everything else behind.

After passing the glacier, we had again to ford the river, but this time on foot. It was coming down full of huge blocks of ice, which fell from the roof of the glacier-tunnel, alternately blocking it up, and again being swept away

by its force. Choosing a moment when the tunnel was blocked, and the water shallow, we pushed into the water. Before we were half-way across a rushing sound made us look round, and we saw a mighty ice-laden flood sweeping down upon us. A rock in mid-water formed our only refuge. We scrambled on to it and were but just in time, for Tashee was knocked on to his knees by one of the foremost blocks as I was helping him out of the water.

The rock was but a low one, and as the waters raged around us, piling up blocks of ice on each side and gradually rising higher and higher, I foresaw the moment when it would be sweeping clear over our place of refuge! We spent a *mauvais quart-d'heure!* When the level of the stream was not more than a foot lower than the highest part of our rock its rise was stayed, and presently it began to abate, the ice-blocks ceasing. I roused my companions, and we hurried through the remaining stream. Before we had left the spot another flood came down, and this time we saw our friendly rock hidden under a surging tide of huge ice-blocks. Some of them must have been over a ton in weight!

Drenched in the icy waters, we had to spend the night lying on the least windy side of a large stone, under the shadow, as it were, of the huge glacier cliffs, whose pinnacles and "seracs" shot up two hundred feet against the sky. The next night, at an elevation of over sixteen thousand feet, I found a hole in the rock in which I could curl myself up, while a water-proof sheet spread across the entrance kept out the falling snow. The next day we crossed the Sasser Pass over vast fields of yielding snow, in which one sank up to the thigh at every fifth or sixth step. Here my guide gave in, being struck with snow blindness, and I had to lead the way by compass. We had eight hours of this work through snow, and the night was



falling as we left it behind us. Misled by the guide, and hoping to reach an inhabited place, we held on till midnight, when we had again to lie down on the leeward side of a stone not three feet high. But this time we had no food at all.

Starting again at dawn with our throats feeling like iron, and our feet like lead, we reached a Tibetan shepherd's hut after ten miles' walk, and thought the milk and barley-meal which he gave us the finest food in the world.

We had here arrived in the British dependencies, having crossed the Karakoram and Sasser Passes, first explored by Dr. Thomson. The country beyond this is known to our surveyors and our sportsmen, though the latter seldom penetrate to the Karakoram. I will now, therefore, close this account of my journey, for I considered that I had almost reached home when I crossed that imaginary *red line*, which, after at first modestly surrounding a few factories on the coast, has now reached its farthest extension among the snows and high plateaux of the Karakoram, the water-shed between India and Central Asia.

---

## THE SOURCE OF THE OXUS.

JOHN WOOD.

[After the survey of the Indus and adjoining countries in 1830, and the forming of treaties of navigation and commerce with several of those countries in 1832, the Indian Government despatched Sir Alexander Burnes, with Lieutenants Wood and Leech, in 1836, on a commercial mission to Afghanistan. Subsequently Captain Burnes sent Lieutenant Wood and Dr. Lord on a mission to Turkestan. This journey has been interestingly described by Lieutenant Wood, who made an independent excursion from Koondooz, where Dr. Lord

was detained. Learning, January 30, 1838, that the upper Oxus was frozen, he set out to visit the ruby mines in that region. Failing in this, he attempted to discover the source of the Oxus River.]

PROCEEDING up the valley of the Oxus, with the mountains of Shekh Durah on our left hand, and those of Chitral on our right, both rising to a vast height, and bearing, far below their summits, the snows of ages, we arrived early in the afternoon at the hamlet of Ishtrakh. We reached the village in the middle of a heavy snow-fall; and its houses, built among fractured pieces of the neighboring mountains, must have been passed unnoticed but for a yak, or kash-gaw, as the animal is here called, standing before a door with its bridle in the hand of a Kirghiz boy.

There was something so novel in its appearance, that I could not resist the impulse of mounting so strange a steed; but in doing so I met with stout resistance from the little fellow who had it in charge. In the midst of our dispute the boy's mother made her appearance, and very kindly permitted me to try the animal's paces. It stood about three feet and a half high, was very hairy and powerful. Its belly reached within six inches of the ground, which was swept by its bushy tail. The long hair streamed down from its dewlap and forelegs, giving it, but for the horns, the appearance of a huge Newfoundland dog. It bore a light saddle with horn stirrups; and a cord let through the cartilage of the nose served for a bridle.

The good Kirghiz matron was not a less interesting object than her steed. She was diminutive in stature, but active and strong, and wore some half-dozen petticoats under a showy blue-striped gown, the whole sitting close to her person, and held there, not by ribbons, but by a stout leather belt about the waist. Her rosy cheeks and Chinese countenance were seen from under a high white starched tiara, while broad bands of the same color pro-

tected the ears, mouth, and chin. Worsted gloves covered the hands, and the feet were equally well taken care of. She chid her son for not permitting me to mount the kash-gaw, and I quite won the good woman's heart by praising the lad's spirit, and hanging a string of beads around his neck. Strutting up to her steed with the air of an Amazon, she took the bridle out of her son's hand, and vaulted astride into the saddle. The sight appeared to be new not only to us, but to the inhabitants of Wakhan; for the villagers had thronged round to see her depart. They inquired if she would not take the boy up behind her. "Oh, no!" was her answer; "he can walk." As the mother and son left us, a droll-looking calf leisurely trod after its dam; and when the party disappeared amid the falling snow-flakes, the rugged half-clad Wakhanis exclaimed, as if taken by surprise, "None but a Kirghiz boy could thrive under such rough treatment."

The yak is to the inhabitants of Tibet and Pamir what the reindeer is to the Laplander in northern Europe. Where a man can walk a kash-gaw may be ridden. Like the elephant he possesses a wonderful knowledge of what will bear his weight. If travellers are at fault, one of these animals is driven before them, and it is said he avoids the hidden depths and chasms with admirable sagacity. His footing is sure. Should a fall of snow close a mountain-pass to a man and horse, a score of yaks driven ahead answer the purpose of pioneers, and make, as my informant expresses it, "*a King's highway*." In this case, however, the snow must have recently fallen; for when once its surface is frozen and its depth considerable, no animal can force its way through it.

Other cattle require the provident care of man to subsist them through the winter. The most hardy sheep would fare but badly without its human protection, but the kash-

gaw is left entirely to itself. He frequents the mountain slopes and their level summits. Wherever the mercury does not rise above zero is a climate for the yak. If the snow on the elevated flats lies too deep for him to crop the herbage, he rolls himself down the slopes and eats his way up again. When arrived at the top, he performs a second summerset, and completes his meal as he displaces another groove of snow in his second ascent. The heat of summer sends the animal to what is termed the old ice, that is, to the regions of eternal snow; the calf being retained below as a pledge for the mother's returning, in which she never fails.

The first yaks we saw were grazing among the snow on the very summit of the rugged pass of Ish Kashm, and at the village of this name I procured one for Dr. Lord, and despatched it to Koondooz in the charge of two trusty men. But so cold a climate do these singular animals require, that though winter still reigned in the Koondooz plain, the heat was too great, and the yak died within a march or two of the town. In fact, it begun to droop as soon as it had passed Jerm. Some years back, an Afghan noble succeeded in bringing two or three of these animals to Cabul, but even the temperature of that city, though situated six thousand feet above sea-level, is not sufficiently cold to suit their constitutions. They declined as the snow left the ground, and died early in the spring.

[Pursuing the course of the stream, a point was reached, ten thousand feet high, where it divided into two branches. They followed the northerly branch, up the narrow valley of Sir-i-kol, to a height of thirteen thousand five hundred feet. The cold here was intense. Leaving a portion of the party, Lieutenant Wood pushed forward with four men, and on the second day achieved the object of his journey.]

We had no occasion to remark the absence of the snow this day, for every step we advanced it lay deeper and

deeper ; and near as we had now approached to the source of the Oxus, we should not have succeeded in reaching it had not the river been frozen. We were fully two hours in forcing our way through a field of snow not five hundred yards in extent. Each individual of the party by turns took the lead, and forced his horse to struggle onward until exhaustion brought it down in the snow, where it was allowed to lie and recruit while the next was urged forward. It was so great a relief when we again got upon the river, that in the elasticity of my spirits I pushed my pony to a trot. This a Wakhanni perceiving, seized hold of the bridle, and cautioned me against the *wind of the mountain*. We had, indeed, felt the effects of a highly rarified atmosphere ever since leaving Wakhan ; but the ascent being gradual, they were less than would be experienced in climbing an abrupt mountain of much less altitude.

As we neared the head-waters of the Oxus the ice became weak and brittle. The sudden disappearance of a yabu gave us the first warning of this. Though the water was deep where the accident occurred, there fortunately was little current, and as the animal was secured by his halter to a companion, he was extricated, but his furniture and lading were lost. The kind-hearted Khirakush to whom the animal belonged wrapped him in felts, took off his own warm posteen, and bound it round the shivering brute. Had it been his son instead of his yabu he could not have passed a more anxious night as to the effects of this ducking. The next morning, however, the yabu was alive and well, and the good mule-driver was most eloquent in his thanks to Providence for its preservation.

Shortly after this accident we came in sight of a rough-looking building, decked out with horns of the wild sheep, and all but buried among the snow. It was a Khirgiz burial-ground. On coming abreast of it, the leading horse-

man, who chanced to be of that tribe, pulled up and dismounted. His companion followed his example, and wading through the deep drift they reached a tombstone, the top of which was uncovered. Before this they knelt, all cumbered as they were and with their huge forked matchlocks strapped to their backs, and offered up prayers to the ever-present Jehovah. The whole of the party involuntarily reined in their horses till the two men had concluded their devotions.

After quitting the surface of the river, we travelled about an hour along its right bank, and then ascended a low hill, which apparently bounded the valley to the eastward; on surmounting this, at five o'clock in the afternoon of the 19th of February, 1838, we stood, to use a native expression, upon the *Bam-i-Dúniyah*, or "Roof of the World," while beneath us lay a noble but frozen sheet of water, from whose western end issued the infant river of the Oxus. This fine lake lies in the form of a crescent, about fourteen miles long from east to west, by an average breadth of one mile. On three sides it is bordered by swelling hills, about five hundred feet high, while along its southern bank they rise into mountains three thousand five hundred feet above the lake, or nineteen thousand feet above the sea, and covered with perpetual snow, from which never-failing source the lake is supplied. From observations at the western end I found the latitude to be  $37^{\circ} 27'$  north, and longitude  $73^{\circ} 41'$  east; its elevation, measured by the temperature of boiling water, is fifteen thousand six hundred feet, as my thermometer marked  $184^{\circ}$  of Fahrenheit. The temperature of the water below the ice was  $32^{\circ}$ ,—the freezing-point.

This, then, is the position of the sources of this celebrated river, which, after a course of upward of a thousand miles in a direction generally northwest, falls into the

southern end of the Sea of Aral. As I had the good fortune to be the first European who in later times had succeeded in reaching the source of this river, and as, shortly before setting out on my journey, we had received the news of her gracious Majesty's accession to the throne, I was much tempted to apply the name of Victoria to this, if I may so term it, newly-discovered lake; but on considering that by thus introducing a new name, however honored, into our maps, great confusion in geography might arise, I deemed it better to retain the name of Sir-i-kol, the appellation given to it by our guides. The description of this spot given by that good old traveller Marco Polo, nearly six centuries ago, is correct in all its leading points.

The aspect of the landscape was wintry in the extreme. Wherever the eye fell one dazzling sheet of snow carpeted the ground, while the sky overhead was everywhere of a dark and angry hue. Clouds would have been a relief to the eye, but they were wanting. Not a breath moved along the surface of the lake; not a beast, nor even a bird, was visible. The sound of a human voice would have been music to the ear, but no one at this inhospitable season thinks of invading these gelid domains. Silence lay around,—silence so profound that it impressed the heart,—and as I contemplated the hoary summits of the everlasting mountains, where human foot had never trod, and where lay piled the snows of ages, my own dear country and all the social blessings it contains passed across my mind with a vividness of recollection that I had never felt before. . . .

How strange and how interesting a group would be formed if an individual from each nation whose rivers have their first source in Pamir were to meet upon its summit! What varieties there would be in person, language, and manners! what contrasts between the rough, untamed, and fierce mountaineer and the more civilized and effeminate



dweller on the plain! How much of virtue and of vice, under a thousand different aspects, would be met with among them all! and how strongly would the conviction press upon the mind that the amelioration of the whole could result only from the diffusion of early education and a purer religion!

Pamir is not only a radiating point in the hydrographical system of Central Asia, but it is the focus from which originate its principal mountain-chains. The Wakhannis name this plain *Bam-i-Dúniah*, or "Roof of the World," and it would indeed appear to be the highest table-land in Asia, and probably in any part of our globe. From Pamir the ground sinks in every direction except to the southeast, where similar plateaux extend along the northern face of the Himalayas into Tibet. An individual who had seen the region between Wakhan and Cashmere informed me that the Kuner River had its principal source in a lake resembling that in which the Oxus had its rise, and that the whole of this country, comprehending the districts of Gilgit, Gungit, and Chitral, is a series of mountain-defiles that act as watercourses to drain Pamir.

As early in the morning of Tuesday, the 20th of February, as the cold permitted, we walked out about six hundred yards upon the lake, and, having cleared the snow from a portion of its surface, commenced breaking the ice to ascertain its depth. This was a matter of greater difficulty than it at first sight appeared, for the water was frozen to the depth of two feet and a half, and, owing to the great rarity of the atmosphere, a few strokes of the pickaxe produced an exhaustion that stretched us upon the snow to recruit our breath. The sounding-lead struck bottom at nine feet. The water emitted a slightly fetid smell, and was of a reddish tinge. The bottom was oozy and tangled with grassy weeds.

I tried to measure the breadth of the lake by sound, but was baffled by the rarity of the air. A musket, loaded with blank cartridge, sounded as if the charge had been poured into the barrel and neither wads nor ramrod used. When ball was introduced the report was louder, but possessed none of the sharpness that marks a similar charge in denser atmospheres. The ball, however, could be distinctly heard whizzing through the air. The human voice was sensibly affected, and conversation, especially if in a loud tone, could not be kept up without exhaustion; the slightest muscular exertion was attended with a similar result. Half a dozen strokes with an axe brought the workman to the ground, and, though a few minutes' respite sufficed to restore the breath, anything like continued exertion was impossible. A run of fifty yards at full speed made the runner gasp for breath. Indeed, this exercise produced a pain in the lungs and a general prostration of strength that was not got rid of for many hours. Some of the party complained of dizziness and headache; but, except the effect thus described, I neither felt myself, nor perceived in others, any of those painful results of great elevation which travellers have suffered in ascending Mont Blanc. This might have been anticipated, for where the transition from a dense to a highly rarified atmosphere is so sudden, as in the case of ascending that mountain, the circulation cannot be expected to accommodate itself at once to the difference of pressure, and violence must accrue to some of the more sensitive organs of the body. The ascent to Pamir was, on the contrary, so gradual that some extrinsic circumstances were necessary to remind us of the altitude we had attained. The effect of great elevation upon the general system had, indeed, been proved to me some time before in a manner for which I was not prepared. One evening at Badakhshan, while sitting in a

brown-study over the fire, I chanced to touch my pulse, and the galloping rate at which it was throbbing roused my attention. I at once took it for granted that I was in a raging fever, and, after perusing some hints on the preservation of health which Dr. Lord, at parting, had kindly drawn out for me, I forthwith prescribed for myself most liberally. Next morning my pulse was as brisk as ever, but still my feelings denoted health. I now thought of examining the wrists of all our party, and, to my surprise, found the pulses of my companions beat yet faster than my own. The cause of this increased circulation immediately occurred to me; and when we afterwards commenced marching towards Wakhan I felt the pulses of the party whenever I registered the boiling-point of water. The motion of the blood is, in fact, a sort of living barometer by which a man acquainted with his own habit of body can, in great altitudes, roughly calculate his height above the sea.

After getting a clear and beautiful meridian altitude of the sun on the 20th, we saddled, and, casting a last look at Lake Sir-i-kol, entered the defile leading to Wakhan. On arriving at the station where we had left the hunters, we were agreeably surprised to find they had been successful in the chase, and had slaughtered a *Kutch-kar*, or wild sheep. It was a noble animal, standing as high as a two-year-old colt, with a venerable beard and two splendid curling horns, which, with the head, were so heavy as to require a considerable exertion to lift them. Though in poor condition, the carcass was a load for a baggage-pony. Its flesh was tough and ill-tasted; but we were told that in autumn, when the animal is in prime condition, no venison is better flavored

[Lieutenant Wood reached Koondooz on his return March 11, having been absent just three months. He and Dr. Lord soon after returned to Cabul, their starting-point.]

## THE TEA DISTRICTS OF CHINA.

ROBERT FORTUNE.

[Robert Fortune, an English botanist and horticulturist, was born at Berwick in 1813. In 1843 he went to China in the interest of the London Horticultural Society to collect new varieties of ornamental plants. He was very successful in this, procuring specimens of the tea and other plants. He made two other visits to China, and wrote several works on the subject. The extracts given are from "Three Years' Wandering in the Northern Provinces of China." He was particularly desirous to obtain examples of the seeds and shrubs of the tea plant, and for this purpose made his way to the celebrated hill of Sung-lo, in the Hwuy-chow district, where the very finest green teas are grown. No Europeans, except Jesuit missionaries, had ever before entered this district. To do so Mr. Fortune adopted the Chinese costume, had his head shaved, and a tail fastened on to his hair.]

ON the evening of the 22d of October I approached the suburbs of Hang-chow-foo, one of the largest and most flourishing cities in the richest district of the Chinese Empire. The Chinese authorities have always been most jealous of foreigners approaching or entering this town. As I drew nearer the city, everything which came under my observation marked it as a place of great importance. The Grand Canal was deep and wide, and bore on its waters many hundreds of boats of different sizes, all engaged in an active bustling trade. Many of these were sailing in the same direction as ourselves, while others were leaving the city and hurrying onward in the direction of Soo-chow, Hoo-chow, Kea-king, and other towns. Canals were seen branching off from the Grand Canal in all directions, and forming the high-roads of the country. . . .

The slow progress which we necessarily made [after

passing through the city and embarking on the Green River] suited my purposes exactly, and enabled me to explore the botanical riches of the country with convenience and ease. I used to rise at break of day, and spend the morning inspecting the hills and valleys near the sides of the river, and then return to the boat in time for breakfast. Breakfast over, I generally went on shore again, accompanied by my men, who carried the seeds, plants, or flowers we might discover during our rambles. The first things we did on these occasions was to ascend the nearest hill and take a survey of the windings of the river, with the number of rapids, in order that we might form some idea of the progress our boat would make during our absence.

[He discovered here a new variety of palm-tree, which furnishes a fibre of which ropes, hats, and cloaks are made.]

But the most beautiful tree found in this district is a species of weeping cypress, which I had never met with in any other part of China, and which was quite new to me. It was during one of my daily rambles that I saw the first specimen. About half a mile distant from where I was I observed a noble-looking fir-tree, about sixty feet in height, having a stem as straight as the Norfolk Island pine, and weeping branches like the willow of St. Helena. Its branches grew at first at right angles to the main stem, then described a graceful curve upward, and bent again at their points. From these main branches others long and slender hung down perpendicularly, and gave the whole tree a weeping and graceful form. It reminded me of some of those long and gorgeous chandeliers sometimes seen in theatres and public halls in Europe.

On the evening of the 31st of October we reached Wae-ping. It is a city of considerable size, walled and fortified,

and probably contains one hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants. This place is just on the borders of the district of Hwuy-chow. Soon after leaving Wae-ping, one of my guides informed me that we were now on the borders of another province, and that here I had better not go much out of the boat. I found that this advice was good and worth attending to. The river here is considered the highway or passage from the one district to the other, and this pass is well guarded by soldiers. Each province has its own guard-town. On the Che-kiang side we passed a long straggling town on the river's banks, chiefly inhabited by troops, who were the guards of the pass, and under the orders of the Hang-chow mandarins. As soon as the boundary-line was passed, we came to another place of like size and appearance, also filled with soldiers, who were under the orders of the authorities of Hwuy-chow-foo, in the province of Kiang-nan. These two parties formed a sort of border guard, and bore each other, I believe, little good-will. They reminded me of our own border clans in ancient feudal times. Boats passing up and down the river were generally boarded, and had their papers examined by one of the officers.

[This fact does not look well for the consolidation of the Chinese Empire. Several days more of travel brought Mr. Fortune to the famous Sung-lo-shan, the hill where green tea is said to have been first discovered. He says :]

Sung-lo-shan appears to be between two and three thousand feet above the level of the plains. It is very barren, and whatever may have formerly been the case, it certainly produces but little tea now ; indeed, from all I could learn, the tea that grows upon it is quite neglected, as far as any cultivation is concerned, and is only gathered to supply the wants of the priests of Fo, who have many temples

among these rugged wilds. Nevertheless, it is a place of great interest to every Chinaman, and has afforded a subject to many of their writers.

When we reached the Sung-lo country I took up my quarters in a house which belonged to the father of my servant Wang. . . . Sung-lo Mountain, which in ordinary circumstances I could have seen from the windows, was now enveloped in a cloak of mist, and every tree and bush was bent down with heavy drops of rain. At last, on the fourth day, the clouds cleared away, the sun shone out again with his usual brilliancy, and the whole face of nature wore a cheerful and smiling aspect. I was now out every day, from morning until evening, busily employed in collecting seeds, in examining the vegetation of the hills, and in obtaining information regarding the culture and manufacture of green tea. By this means I obtained a good collection of those tea-seeds and young plants from which the finest green teas of commerce are prepared, and much information of a useful kind.

[After returning to the coast with his collections, Mr. Fortune shipped them to India, and then penetrated the country again to Ning-po, where he took up his residence in the temple of Tien-tung, and resumed his botanical researches. He describes the fine bamboo woods in the vicinity, and speaks thus of the usefulness of the bamboo.]

The bamboo is one of the most valuable trees in China, and is used for almost every conceivable purpose. It is employed in making soldiers' hats and shields, umbrellas, soles of shoes, scaffolding-poles, measures, baskets, ropes, paper, pencil-holders, brooms, sedan-chairs, pipes, flower-stakes, and trellis-work in gardens; pillows are made of the shavings; a kind of rush cloak for wet weather is made from the leaves, and is called a *So-e*, or "garment of leaves." On the water it is used for making sails and



covers for boats, for fishing-rods and fish-baskets, fishing-stakes and buoys; catamarans are rude boats, or rather floats, formed of a few logs of bamboo lashed firmly together.

In agriculture the bamboo is used in making aqueducts for conveying water to the land; it forms part of the celebrated water-wheel, as well as of the plough, the harrow, and other implements of husbandry. Excellent water-pipes are made of it for conveying springs from the hills to supply houses and temples in the valleys with pure water. Its roots are often cut into the most grotesque figures, and its stems finely carved into ornaments for the curious, or into incense-burners for the temples. The Ning-po furniture, the most beautiful in China, is often inlaid with figures of people, houses, temples, and pagodas in bamboo, which form most correct and striking pictures of China and the Chinese. The young shoots are boiled and eaten, and sweetmeats are also made of them. A substance found in the joints, called tabasheer, is used in medicine. In the manufacture of tea it helps to form the rolling-tables, drying-baskets, and sieves; and last, though not least, the celebrated chop-sticks—the most important articles in domestic use—are made of it.

However incredulous the reader may be, I must still carry him a step farther, and tell him that I have not enumerated one-half of the uses to which bamboo is applied in China. Indeed, it would be nearly as difficult to say what it is *not* used for as what it is. It is in universal demand, in the houses and in the fields, on water and on land, in peace and in war. Through life the Chinaman is almost dependent upon it for his support, nor does it leave him until it carries him to his last resting-place on the hill-side, and even then, in company with the cypress, juniper, and pine, it waves over and marks his tomb.

I was not quite satisfied [he continues] with the result of my journey up the river Min. Although one of my men had brought me a fine collection of tea-plants and seeds from the celebrated black-tea country, and although the expedition was planned so that he scarcely could have procured them elsewhere, had he wished to deceive me, I confess I felt that it would be much more satisfactory if I could visit the district myself. I did not like the idea of returning to Europe without being perfectly certain that I had introduced the tea-plant from the best black-tea districts of China into the government plantations in the northwestern provinces of India. There may also have been a lingering desire to cross the Bohea Mountains, and to visit the far-famed Woo-e-shan. At all events, I made up my mind to make another attempt, and determined to start from Ning-po, where the people are not so greatly prejudiced against foreigners as they are farther to the south, about Foo-chow and Canton.

[He left Ning-po on May 15, 1849, completely disguised as a Chinaman, while his servant bore a green, triangular-shaped mandarin flag, which proved very serviceable on several occasions. He again boated up the Green River.]

There were several passengers on board our boat besides ourselves. They were all country people from the westward, knew little of foreigners, and seemed to have no idea that I was one. My servant, I believe, told them that I came from some distant province beyond the Great Wall, and with this information, indefinite as it was, they seemed to be perfectly satisfied. Besides, I was now well acquainted with their habits and manners. I could eat with the chop-sticks as well as any of them, and my dress was, I believe, scrupulously correct, even to the glossy black tail, which had been grafted on my own hair, and which hung gracefully down nearly to my knees.

[He continued his journey without hinderance until he reached the black-tea country.]

For some time past I had been, as it were, among a sea of mountains, but now the far-famed Bohea ranges lay before me in all their grandeur, with their tops piercing through the lower clouds, and showing themselves far above them. They seemed to be broken up into thousands of fragments, some of which had most remarkable and striking outlines. It is difficult to form an estimate of their height, but, comparing them with other mountains known to me, the highest here may be six or eight thousand feet above the level of the sea. There are some spots on the sides of the lower hills under cultivation, but all above these is rugged and wild.

We arrived at last at the celebrated gates or huge doors which divide the provinces of Fokien and Kiang-see. The pillars of these gates have been formed by nature, and are nothing less than the "everlasting hills" themselves. The arched door-ways of the place bore a great resemblance to the gates of a Chinese city. As we passed through the archway I observed a guard of soldiers lounging about, but they did not take any notice of us, or attempt to examine our baggage. We were soon through the pass, and in another province. The province of Kiang-see had been shut out and left behind us, and our view now opened on Fokien. Never in my life had I seen such a view as this, so grand, so sublime. High ranges of mountains were towering on my right and on my left, while before me, as far as the eye could reach, the whole country seemed broken up into mountains and hills of all heights, with peaks of every form. . . .

I was now on the outskirts of the great black-tea country of Fokien. I observed large quantities of tea-plants under cultivation. They were generally to be found on the

lower sides of the hills, and also in the gardens of the villagers. About ten o'clock in the forenoon we arrived at Tsong-gan-hien, a large town in the midst of the black-tea country, where nearly all the teas of this district are packed and prepared for exportation. As soon as I was fairly out of the suburbs of the town, I had my first glimpse of the far-famed Woo-e-shan. It stands in the midst of the plain, and is a collection of little hills, none of which appear to be more than a thousand feet high. They have a singular appearance. Their faces are nearly all perpendicular rock. It appears as if they had been thrown up by some great convulsion of nature to a certain height, and as if some other force had then drawn the tops of the whole mass slightly backward, breaking it up into a thousand hills. By some agency of this kind it might have assumed the strange forms which were now before me.

Woo-e-shan is considered by the Chinese to be one of the most wonderful, as well as one of the most sacred, spots in the empire. One of their manuscripts, quoted by Mr. Ball, thus describes it: "Of all the mountains of Fokien those of Woo-e are the finest, and its water the best. They are awfully high and rugged, surrounded by water, and seem as if excavated by spirits; nothing more wonderful can be seen. From the dynasty of Csin and Han, down to the present time, a succession of hermits and priests, of the sects of Tao-cze and Fo, have here risen up like the clouds of the air and the grass of the field, too numerous to enumerate. Its chief renown, however, is derived from its productions, and of these tea is the most celebrated." . . .

We now proceeded across the hills in the direction of the small town of Tsin-tsun, another great mart for black tea. Our road was a very rough one. It was merely a foot-

path, and sometimes merely narrow steps cut out of the rock. When we had gone about two miles we came to a solitary temple on the banks of a small river, which here winds among the hills. This stream is called by the Chinese the river or stream of nine windings, from the circuitous turns which it makes among the hills of Woo-e-shan. It divides the range into two districts,—the north and south; the north range is said to produce the best teas. Here the finest souchongs and pekoes are produced, but I believe these rarely find their way to Europe, or only in very small quantities. . . .

Having given the old man [the Buddhist priest at the temple] some money to purchase a dinner for myself and my men, I made a hasty meal and went out to explore the hills. I visited many of the tea farms, and was successful in procuring about four hundred young tea-plants. These were taken to Shanghai in good order, and many of them are now growing vigorously in the government tea plantation in the Himalayas.

I remained two days under the roof of the hospitable Taoist, and saw a great part of the Woo-e hills and their productions. On the evening of the second day, having entered into a fresh agreement with my chair-bearers and coolies, I intimated to the old priest that I intended to proceed on my journey early next morning. He kindly pressed me to stay a little longer, but, when he saw I was in earnest, he went out to his tea plantations and brought me some young plants, which he begged me to accept.

I felt highly pleased with his gratitude for the small present I had given him, and gladly accepted the plants, which increased my store very considerably; these, with the other plants, were carefully packed with their roots in damp moss, and the whole package was then covered with oil-paper. The latter precaution was taken to screen them

from the sun, and also from the prying eyes of the Chinese, who, although they did not seem to show any great jealousy on the point, yet might have annoyed us with impertinent questions. Early in the morning, our arrangements being completed, we bade adieu to our kind host and hostess, and set out across the hills in the direction of Tsin-tsun.

---

## RECEPTION OF GENERAL GRANT AT CANTON.

JOHN M. KEATING.

[The following selection is taken from Dr. Keating's "With General Grant in the East." It gives a picturesque account of the ceremonious customs of China, with street scenes in Canton,—the whole seen under conditions more favorable than travellers often possess. The travellers had landed at Hong-Kong, and made their way thence to Canton.]

WE steamed up along the Hong-Kong coast; saw the magnificent granite quarries, then crossed over to the China shore, and cruised in and out of the little islands, watching the fishermen dragging in their nets for the night. As we turned homeward towards and faced the west, the sun was fast setting behind the mountains of the China coast. For many miles one ridge of mountains beyond the other would blaze with a most intense and brilliant red, until the last faint outline that lay to the west seemed to be on fire, all the peaks glowing. It was like an evening on Lake Maggiore. In fact, this time of year the surroundings of Hong-Kong are much like the Italian lake scenes, particularly at night, when the atmosphere is hazy and the shadows take the place of vegetation on the hills of either side of the bay.

The most striking feature throughout the place certainly is the great number of Chinese and their varied occupations. At every turn you come upon these fellows working like galley-slaves, seldom if ever idle, carrying loads swinging on a pole that would be a credit to a pack-horse groaning under the burden, or you meet the chair coolie trotting along as unconscious as if nature had originally placed him in life as a beast of burden. From early morn till late at night these fellows are ready at any moment to start off on a dog-trot, and carry you where you will, complaining never, tiring never, always in the best of humor. You get from them your first impression of the Chinese character. Certainly it is a most favorable one. . . .

Our visit to Canton certainly in many ways far eclipsed anything that this very active party has yet accomplished in the way of sight-seeing. Captain Perkins having kindly placed the "Ashuelot" at the disposal of the general, it was arranged that she should take the party up the Canton River to visit the City of Rams. So, bright and early on Monday morning the advanced guard of the party were seen straggling down the hill from the Government House, taking advantage of the numerous *sampans* and with bags and baggage shooting out towards the "Ashuelot," that lay in deeper water anxiously awaiting her passengers to catch the up-tide in the Canton River. Shortly before eight o'clock General and Mrs. Grant arrived at Murray pier, accompanied by His Excellency the Governor and Mrs. Hennessy, and the government steam-launch being in attendance, the party soon boarded the "Ashuelot," and were received with the thunder of twenty-one guns. . . .

On the gun-deck a charming little dining-hall had been arranged by draping all the bunting from the ship's locker; one long table had been erected, and a few flowers, the remains of a bouquet that Mrs. Grant had received in the



morning, decorated the centre of it. At mid-day the whole ship's company sat down to a delicious tiffin to pass away the time which the stormy head tide was calculated to make heavy on our hands. On the arrival of the steamer off Chuenkee she was met by a Chinese gunboat specially sent to meet the "Ashuelot" and escort her up the river, the Chinese admiral at Canton sending his card down to General Grant. At certain points in the river salutes were fired as the vessel passed the forts; the sight was indeed a queer one, as the guns blazed away and hundreds of different colored flags on lances or staves suddenly appeared above the forts, either stuck in the ground or guarded by a Chinese soldier in full uniform. . . .

But as nothing can be counted on as a certainty in this world, a great disappointment was about to fall upon the good people of Canton. Delay at starting, the strong head tide which runs at a rate in these Chinese rivers that seems impossible, and frequent stoppages to receive the various officials from the war junks, all ended in our failing to reach the city before sundown.

It was not till after nine o'clock that the moorings of Shameen were reached, and the tired-out population, both Chinese and foreign, had abandoned all hope of seeing the distinguished visitor that night. All the military had turned out, armed to the throat with all the paraphernalia of war, calculated to do honor to China's guest, with their flags and banners, forming a line that extended the whole length of the foreign settlement of Shameen.

At the landing-place a bamboo arch covered with matting had been raised, wreathed with evergreens and decorated with rare plants and a great display of bunting. All to no purpose. The "Ashuelot" failing to appear, the soldiers were marched back to await orders, the crowd slowly dispersed, one by one, and when at last we did come, only

a great display of lanterns, sky-rockets, and signal-lights, with deafening salutes from all the war junks, awaited us. . . .

The day following our arrival, after the guns had ceased firing and the town seemed to have quieted down from its momentary excitement, it was arranged that the General and party should call officially upon the viceroy, whose yamun, or palace, was at the other end of the city of Canton. It may be interesting to those who have not been posted in the geography of this part of the world to know that the island of Shameen, separated from the mainland by a bridge of rather small pretensions, is what is called the Foreign Concession. Here live all the foreign merchants; the consulates are here situated, and the place itself looks more like a Long Island village very prettily laid out in quite an American style. Zealously guarded night and day is the narrow bridge that separates this from Chinatown proper, with its three gates, the side ones for coolies, the centre for the distinguished, and only such, to pass through. A sleepy-looking policeman, covered with tea-box characters, both on his back and chest, with smooth, boyish face, expressionless, his pigtail neatly curled up beneath his inverted-bowl hat, is the Cerberus that guards the way,—a small sword by his side and a big stick in his hand.

If it were only possible for me to describe to you the scene that presented itself that morning as we were started in full dress to pay our respects to the viceroy! In China everything is etiquette, everything has to be done in a certain way, from the number of coolies that carry the most distinguished of the party, down to the color of the chairs in which they are carried. The procession, headed by a body of Chinese troops, wound its way at a quick gait across the bridge, along the river front, and suddenly

wheeling off to the left, plunged into the thick jungle of a Chinese town. Our party numbered about twelve, the officers of the "Ashuelot" and the consuls in full dress uniform, the rest in evening dress, each armed with a fan, the sole occupant of a chair of state, and towering above the crowd on the shoulders of from four to eight men.

The chair, which is usually covered, is a most imposing affair, made somewhat on the plan of a pagoda, closed in by glass windows on three sides, shaded by blinds of bamboo matting; the door is a curtain of the same material, hiding the occupants from the gaze of the profane. At the risk of sacrificing Chinese etiquette, but gaining a breath of fresh (?) air, we left our curtained doors open, much to the edification of the crowd, who, in their eagerness to catch a glimpse of the distinguished strangers, made us all feel much like a travelling menagerie. The whole route to the viceroy's *yamun* led through the most thickly populated and most fashionable quarter of the city of Canton.

On we went for over an hour, up one street, down another, through one mass of individuals, solidly packed in every available corner, as far as the eye could reach. You can imagine the most hideous nightmare, where thousands of the strangest of beings are gazing intently at you, a sea of eyes within a few feet of your face and extending on all sides far and near, one constant stare, noiseless and immovable. Not a sound could be heard but the cry or grunt of the chair coolies as they warned the line of stoppers ahead of uneven ground or sudden corners.

The streets through which we passed were almost narrow enough to touch the houses on both sides; the stores with all open fronts, a counter, leaving room for a door-way, cutting the interior off from the main street; the roofs overlapping their eaves like umbrellas, forming a protection from

the weather to the passers beneath; huge signs—great boards with hieroglyphics painted in red or black—hanging down in front of each habitation; lanterns and strange notices of all sorts, on paper of various colors, or on wood, swung in the middle of the street. Though we had bright sunshine when we started, the streets were darkened by their narrowness, now and then a hazy ray of sunshine appearing through a cross street. The scene was more like that of a theatre stage behind the scenes during a performance. It was estimated that at least one hundred thousand people witnessed the procession. The party was headed by a body of troops, the traffic in the streets had been stopped, and each crossing was kept clear by a line of soldiers, who, forming a bulwark, kept back the eager, surging crowd that pressed forward in all directions.

Such an orderly mass of human beings I never saw. Now and then a luckless individual, from the pressure that came from behind, would step beyond the line, but the strong lash of the policeman coming upon his bare back would remind him quite forcibly of his delinquency, and amid the titter of the crowd he would sneak to a place of more security. Onward we went, until the number of soldiers appeared to increase, and soon the narrow passage through which we were carried was lined on either side by troops. Have you ever seen a Chinese soldier? He is really worth carefully examining. The first thing that strikes you is the extraordinary combination of colors he wears,—orange, yellow, blue, red, and green seem strangely arrayed in contrast. A loose sack, with wide sleeves, fitting closely to the neck, stamped with some strange characters on the back and breast, which we all concluded were his name and regiment, with trousers to match in color, and a hat usually of red and yellow color, resembling an inverted soup-bowl.

Armed with a gun, which seems to be a cross between an old-fashioned blunderbuss and a cannon, and which predicts danger to both parties in case of explosion, he seems every inch a soldier, if muscle and determination of purpose count for anything in bloody warfare. These troops are Tartars, and such they look. On arriving at the Ti Ping gate, the General was saluted in Chinese fashion. At the gate of the viceroy's yamun a salute of twenty-one guns was given, and the party filed through two lines of Tartar troops, armed with rifles. These presented arms in English fashion as the word of command was given in English.

What a strange sight awaited us as we turned into the court-yard of the viceroy's yamun, after the smoke had cleared away with the echo of the last deafening gun! A line of four or five hundred soldiers, extending on either side in triangular shape, lined the way up to the steps of the yamun. A continuation up to where the viceroy waited was formed by as many mandarins in full court dress. Most of these troops were armed with spears, or swords, and shields. From a small house, built for the purpose, a Chinese band cracked and squeaked what I presume was Wagner's "Lohengrin," and amidst the noise of guns and the exquisite music we were all carried, in a state more dead than alive, up the stairs and deposited at the foot of Lin Kwan Yu, the Viceroy of Canton, who, with Chang Tsein, the Tartar general, came forward to "chin-chin" the General, and welcome him to Canton.

The viceroy led General Grant to a seat, and the officials distributed themselves among the foreigners, the whole party sitting in a semicircle, which extended nearly the width of the room. The chairs upon which we sat were massive ones of that beautiful black carved wood made in Canton, and by the side of each guest, on massive tea-poys

of black wood also, were the most delicate Chinese cups, containing tea the like of which is unknown across the great Pacific. But however tempting (without cream or sugar), it is only to be tasted at parting, according to Chinese etiquette. A pair of silver-mounted ivory chop-sticks are passed around, and a paper napkin, neatly folded, is placed beside each guest, and after a long pause the interpreter steps forward, and a spirited conversation upon the prognostications of the weather, the pleasures and discomforts of travelling, starts up between the viceroy, General Grant, and Mr. Borie. . . . The whole room, which is more like a throne, is finished in black wood, with a rich red carpet, and walls tapestried in silk of beautiful colors. Hanging down from the great rafters that are above us are long jet-black boards, with inscriptions in red, on which I read (with the aid of an interpreter, after I got home) the titles of the viceroy and those of his ancestors. Hanging near the same, and arranged with wonderful taste, alternated rows of lanterns, some made of carved black wood, with plates of carved, figured glass, others most beautifully painted and shaped like pagodas.

In the second room, separated by only a few pillars and some steps, stood all the mandarins of lower grade, numbering hundreds, with all their attendants, dressed in silks and satins, with their scarlet bowl-shaped hats, and topped by the colored button, the evidence of their rank, each with a fan. The high officials who sat in the row with us all wore the red buttons of their rank, had their servants behind them, their pipe-bearers, etc.

[The visitors were soon after led into a room in which was a table containing refreshments.]

A number of plates and open dishes placed in rows were tastefully filled with all sorts of confectionery, and looked



for all the world like Whitman's counter during Christmas week. Seats had been found for the exact number of guests, whose cards had been sent early in the morning. When all had settled down, the scene presented was a fine spectacle,—the naval and consular uniforms contrasting with the rich dresses of the Chinese, the throng of some three hundred servants and attendants forming an appropriate background.

The chop-sticks were abandoned as hopeless, and, I must confess, the dishes also after a few attempts; so after a short time most delicious tea was served, pipes and cigars brought in, each guest presented with his hat and fan, and the procession re-formed, the officials bidding good-by to their visitors, each one in turn, in the room in which we were previously received. The line of chairs was once more formed and the party returned by the same route, the guns firing, the soldiers presenting arms, the same seemingly petrified crowd, the constant stare of the thousands of little black eyes for three miles, and we reached our comfortable quarters after seeing one of the most extraordinary sights imaginable.

The morning after our visit to the viceroy,—and a most fatiguing day it had been, for the excitement of novelty is always tiring,—the day's programme had been put into action before many of the actors were ready to appear in it. I had seen somewhere in early youth a graphic illustration representing a venerable dame from Banbury Cross, whose display of agility under trying circumstances on horseback made an impression upon me which was easily renewed. Hearing a slight disturbance the morning in question, in the street fronting my room, I sought my window just in time to catch a view of the aforesaid dame, with skirts flying in the breeze, actively engaged in controlling a lively white China pony that plunged and kicked



and endeavored to throw its rider, which seemed to be no easy task. Could this be some venerable Chinese lady who, after her morning ride, was calling upon Mrs. Grant? Another, and then another, soon appeared; finally a procession on foot, then a chair, closely covered, carried by uniformed coolies. Upon inquiry I learned that it was the Tartar general, who came to return General Grant's call, and that the beings upon horses were his aides-de-camp, who alone have the privilege of riding.

The guard of honor of Tartar soldiers drew up in line facing the houses, and when their general reappeared the line re-formed and the aides galloped ahead. Soon after ten o'clock, the shouts of the crowd outside, a visible uneasiness among the guard that surrounded our quarters day and night, the beating of gongs and firing of salutes, announced to us that something of unusual importance was occurring. Mr. Young and the author stepped outside the gate, and, looking towards the east, saw the advancing procession. In front marched two fellows carrying enormous gongs, which they struck in unison at every step. Following them, in double file, were a large number of banner-carriers; the banners of wood, with various inscriptions, gave to the world the titles of the viceroy. Then came an armed guard, those in advance carrying before them huge shields, across which was held a sword, the very look of which, together with the arm that carried it, was calculated to awe the miserable bystander. The rest carried spears and flags, each company with a characteristic uniform of its own. The enormous red umbrella, the evidence of rank, immediately preceded the state chair, then another guard and the rabble followed. Solemn indeed was the reception, as the guard divided and the viceroy was carried up the path to where the general awaited him to conduct him and his aides-de-camp to the dining-

room, where sweetmeats and tea were awaiting. The dressing of these high mandarins is, of course, of the richest kind, consisting of a wide-sleeved sack, fitting without collar to the neck, and extending down almost to the knees, of a dark color and, of course, of the finest silk, underneath which is a skirt which reaches to the feet, of the same material, but lighter in shade.

On the centre of the back and directly in front is the embroidered bird, in red and white. Around the neck a string of coral beads. The hats are of the inverted soup-bowl variety, fringed with red silk, and directly on top the button of rank. The viceroy, who is about sixty-five years of age, wears a moustache which has long since lost its color, and his queue, no doubt once long and handsome, is mostly composed of plaited silk. But his dignity of manner, his extreme politeness, and his whole behavior stamp him as a man who has risen by merit, and who, like all rulers in China, knows what he is about. Claspings his hands before him, with a low bow, a ceremony that we all go through, one would little think that upon his will alone a million and a half of Chinamen hold their heads upon their shoulders! The weather subject having been carefully and thoroughly discussed, the teacups were emptied, the party rose, and the viceroy departed.

[The reception was concluded the same day with a dinner at the viceroy's.]

It was getting dusk when the party arrived at the viceroy's residence, and as the chairs were set down in the reception-hall, a crowd of servants were lighting up the yamun. The effect of the many thousand tiny lamps, interspersed with the larger and many-colored lanterns, the great vaulted roof, and the gorgeous dressing of the attendants, was like a scene from the "Arabian Nights." We

all went through the same kow-towing as before, each being presented in turn, and were finally ushered into the larger apartment, with the semicircular row of chairs, had a most refreshing cup of tea, were cooled off by the fan-bearer placed behind each chair, and were then marched in a slow, stately procession through several courts and corridors, crossed a garden, and entered the dining-hall, which was ablaze with many-colored lights.

[The dinner, a wearisomely elaborate one, consisted of *eighty-six* courses.]

At the outset of the dinner roasted peach-kernels and watermelon-seeds were served as an appetizer, and then followed every variety of sweetmeats, alternating with delicate squares of the fattest pork or the daintiest morsel of choice bird. After about a dozen courses, pipes and cigars were introduced, a whiff from the former being taken between each course, and then were passed over to an attendant.

The smaller courses being finished, a small soup-ladle was now handed to each guest, and a silver tureen, holding about a quart, was placed in the centre of each table. This contained the famous birds'-nest soup. Our Chinese hosts then dipped their ladles into the dish, and each one of us holding forward ours, was helped,—no plates, of course, being used. Having drank the contents of the ladle, it was again replenished. Birds'-nest soup tastes like the most delicate glue, flavored with garlic. Upon inquiry, I learned that the small dishful at our table cost about forty dollars. I must confess its taste was disappointing, to say nothing of the manner in which it was eaten.

Then came some soup of *sharks' fins*, served in the same way, and finally a dish which was said to be a great delicacy,—pigeon's eggs, which, if I was rightly informed, had

undergone the process of partial hatching! Certain it is, that to thoroughly relish a Chinese dinner you require previous training, and, in my opinion, thorough ignorance of the bill of fare. The dinner having occupied a long time, it was suggested that we should abandon the remaining *forty-six* courses; so, requesting our farewell cup of tea, and bidding farewell to our kind host, we took our places in our chairs and departed, nothing loath, I assure you, hoping that a good cigar and some fresh air might preserve the lives we had so endangered.

Although it was so late, almost reaching the midnight hour, a surprisingly large number of people still lined the streets, and many of the shops were still open. Far in the recesses of these habitations were men hard at work. Shoemakers, tailors, millers, weavers, and occasionally the bright light from a blast-furnace would assist the many lanterns of the shops, those hanging in the streets, or those carried by each chair coolie, making the scene like a view of the infernal regions.

It is rather a novel sight to see the streets of a Chinese city at night, particularly Canton, and I doubt whether many of my readers who have been in China have done so; for the regulations are strict in closing the city gates at dusk, and all the foreign population reside outside. At night the Chinaman seeks his pipe, surrounded by his friends or family, as we saw him, sitting by the light of a few tapers or lanterns in the best room, an offshoot from his store, or else, with a passion that nothing will ever eradicate, spends his day's earnings in opium and gambling. . . .

I have been much impressed with the Chinese as I saw them during this visit to Canton,—no street rows, no drunkenness, nothing even offensive meeting the eye during our whole sojourn. For industry and sobriety they cer-

tainly cannot be excelled. You cannot but respect such a people, and you blush for nations who pride themselves upon their superior civilization.

---

## PEKING, AS SEEN FROM ITS WALLS.

C. F. GORDON CUMMING.

[The Chinese capital is abundantly provided with walls, enormous walls, walls within walls in fact, for Peking is composed of city within city, each of its several sections being densely walled in. We cannot do better than to take from Cumming's "*Wanderings in China*" some descriptive passages concerning this great city, both as seen from the walls and as experienced in the streets.]

To begin with, the Tartar city and Chinese city are totally distinct, the former being a great square city, and the latter forming a long oblong immediately to the south. Each city is enclosed by a mighty wall, but the south wall of the Tartar city forms the north wall of the Chinese city. The two together form twenty-five miles of this masonry for giants. The Tartar city has nine gates,—two to the north, two to the east, two to the west, three to the south. These three last consequently open into the Chinese city, which has seven gates of its own besides,—not gates such as we understand in Britain, but stupendous masses of masonry, like some fine old Border keep greatly magnified.

Within the Tartar city lies another great walled square. This is the Imperial city, in the heart of which (as a jewel in its setting) another great square district is enclosed, within very high pale-pink walls.

This inner space is the Forbidden City,—in other words,

the private space around the palace, wherein, guarded even from the reverential gaze of his people, dwells the Imperial Son of Heaven. To this palace the city owes its name, Pe-king (or, as the Chinese pronounce it, *Pai-ching*), meaning literally "North Palace," just as *Nan-king* was the southern palace.

Within these sacred precincts no foreigners have ever been allowed to set foot, though they may gaze from beyond a wide canal at the very ornamental archways, and the double and triple carved roofs of many buildings, rising above the masses of cool dark foliage. Every one of these archways and buildings is roofed with brilliant golden-yellow tiles of porcelain, which are positively dazzling in the sunlight. The tall buildings on the opposite side of the canal are similarly roofed, denoting that they, too, are specially Imperial property (yellow emphatically being the Imperial color, the use of which is prohibited to all save Buddhist priests). . . .

There is just one way by which to obtain quite an illusive impression of Peking, namely, by looking down on the city from its majestic walls. Then all the squalor, and dirt, and dust which are so painfully prominent at all other times seem to disappear, and, as if by magic, you find yourself overlooking rich bowers of greenery, tree-tops innumerable, from which here and there rise quaint ornamental roofs of temples, or mandarins' houses, with roofs of harmonious gray tiles, or of bright glazed porcelain which gleams in the sunlight. Then you realize how many cool pleasant homes wealthy citizens contrive to reserve in the midst of these dingy, gray, densely-crowded streets, of which you only catch a glimpse here and there, just enough to give a suggestion of life to the whole scene.

Such a glimpse I first obtained one morning at early dawn, ere the dust-clouds had begun to rise with the day's

busy traffic, and the peaceful beauty of the scene struck me the more forcibly from the contrast between the bird's-eye view and the reality when seen on the level. In truth, when standing on the south wall which divides the Tartar city from the Chinese, it is scarcely possible to realize that one is looking down on the dwellings of about one million three hundred thousand human beings. Of these, nine hundred thousand inhabit the Tartar city, which seen from the walls is apparently a beautiful park, richly wooded, and now clothed in its densest midsummer foliage. Only from certain points do you catch even a glimpse of a broad dusty street. And yet so effectually do high walls enclose these many shady gardens, that an enormous majority of the toiling multitude never see a tree, probably scarcely know that such exist,—as the people never dream of coming on to the walls, from which alone these are visible.

Looking over the wall on the other side into the Chinese city is certainly more suggestive of human beings, as there are fewer trees, for here the luxurious folk who dwell in palaces with shady courts are all Tartars, whereas the Chinese are the working bees, and their poor mud huts are densely packed all along the Grain-Tribute Canal, which here approaches from Tung-Chow, and is led quite round the square of the Tartar city, and almost quite round the Chinese city. Happily, from this height one does not discern the unutterable filth of its stagnant waters. But in the distance the houses again lose themselves in tree-tops, for we are looking towards the great parks of the Temples of Agriculture and of Heaven, and the lovely blue porcelain roofs of the latter are plainly visible.

Beyond these again, to the south of the city wall, stretches a vast enclosure called the Hai-tsz, or "Great Sea-like Plain," which is the Emperor's private hunting-grounds, enclosed by a high brick wall, forty miles in



circumference. Although emphatically a deer-forest, it can certainly not be accused of depopulating the country, as no less than sixteen hundred men are said to be employed in connection with this place. . . .

Now turning to the opposite direction, and looking into the Tartar city from this elevation of about fifty feet, the brilliant yellow-tiled roofs of the Imperial Palace are most conspicuous and very beautiful, as they rise above the masses of dark-green foliage. A considerable number of ornamental buildings, all yellow-roofed and gleaming like burnished gold, are scattered in every direction through the Imperial pleasure-grounds, and with the aid of good opera-glasses one can distinguish details very fairly; but, of course, when winter has stripped the trees, the view must be far more distinct.

The green-tiled roofs of the British Embassy are also conspicuous, and some important gray roofs also tower above the trees, and far away on the horizon lie a range of distant hills on whose slopes nestle beautifully-situated temples and monasteries, some of which mercifully open their doors to foreigners, and allow them to rent summer quarters in a cooler region than this.

Of course, as you travel right round the walls, the view changes considerably, one lot of roofs giving place to another, so that you obtain a bird's-eye view of the situation of most of the points of interest in the city. It would, however, take a really good walker to go the whole round of the walls, as the Tartar city forms a square four miles in every direction, adjoining the Chinese city, which is an oblong, thirteen miles in circumference.

It does not, however, follow that there are twenty-nine miles of outer wall, as three miles and a half of the south Tartar wall does double duty. (Is it not a strange turning

of the tables to think how of old the Chinese built their Great Wall to shut out the Tartars, and now the Tartar city wall excludes the Chinese from their own capital?)

[The walls of Peking, it may be said, are eighty-eight feet in thickness at base, and fifty feet wide at top,—thirty feet on the west. Above their fifty feet of height rise many lofty watch-towers, and six-feet-high parapets run along the inner and outer edges. They are built of large gray bricks, twenty inches long by nine wide.]

Only when thus seen from above is the actual width of any main street of Peking visible. The street [one extending from the great gate-way] is really about ninety feet wide, and right down the centre runs a slightly raised causeway, which is the Imperial highway, all of which sounds as if it should be handsome, but this is by no means the fact. The houses on either side are mean-looking one-storied brick buildings, and though some have handsomely carved and much gilded wooden fronts, even these are so begrimed with the mud of many winters and the dust of many summers that they do little to enliven the general dreariness, unless you are close to them.

On the other hand, the great width of the street defeats its own object, for the people, nowise appreciating such magnificent distances, establish rows of locomotive shops and booths on each side of the central causeway, while another row of similarly temporary booths is erected facing the permanent shops. Consequently no one on the street ever sees more than one side of it at a time.

The true street has a moderately ornamental wooden frontage, and a close inspection shows some of the shops to be really highly decorated with very elaborate designs; but though, as I have said, these were once resplendent with gold and scarlet, they are now so dingy and dirty as scarcely to look out of keeping with the rag-fair opposite.

[The shops are entirely open to the street, glass windows being unknown luxuries. From their fronts project long poles or gilded dragons with sign-boards. The booths are usually a framework covered with mattings, and in them are sold a great variety of articles. In summer the Chinese wear a very meagre allowance of clothing, and every one, from the beggar upward, carries a fan.]

The central roadway is reserved for cart-traffic, which plies ceaselessly summer and winter on the paved road. This, being never repaired from one year's end to the other, is all in the same atrocious condition as the road from Tung-Chow, and all others, both within and without the city.

But occasionally it is announced that on a given day the Emperor will come forth from his seclusion and pass along certain streets. Then the whole of the extemporized shops disappear as if by magic. A squad of men are put on,—not really to repair the road, but just to shovel all the dust into the holes and ruts, till the whole is perfectly level, so as to allow of one procession passing over it without a jolt (and till it has passed, not a foot is permitted to tread the Imperial carriage-road). Then every shop along the street thus honored is closed, and all access from side streets is carefully barricaded. Sometimes even a high screen of yellow cloth is fastened on poles all along the road on each side, lest any rash subject should venture to look upon the “Son of Heaven,” who is thus deprived of the interest of even seeing his own people in his own streets. . . .

Some of the street names are very nice. One near the Legation is “Happy Sparrow Street,” for these ubiquitous birds hop about in Peking as cheerily as in London. There is also a “Monkey Street,” near the Observatory, which is not so easily accounted for, as the monkey tribe do not haunt these parts. I am much struck by the Chinese expressions to describe a thoroughfare, or a *cul-de-sac*. The

former is said to be "a live street," the latter is "a dead street." One street is distinguished as the "Immeasurably Great Street," another is the "Stone Tiger Street." There are "Obedience Street," "Barbarian Street," and the noisiest and busiest of all, thronged with all manner of vociferous peddlers, is misnamed the "Street of Perpetual Repose." More to the point is the name of the Confucian Hall, which is well described as "The Hall of Intense Mental Exercise." From such glimpses as we outsiders can obtain of the shady secluded grounds of the Imperial Palace, there seems considerable fitness in naming it "The Tranquil Palace of Heaven;" while the Empress's house is "The Palace of Earth's Repose," and a certain white marble gate-way is known as "The Gate of Everlasting Peace." Another is "The Great Pure Gate," and a third is "The Gate of Steadfast Purity."

[We must revert to the story of Peking dust, "the curse of Peking."]

You will think I tell you enough and to spare concerning Peking dust,—but no wonder! Only be thankful you have not to inhale it by throat or nostril, to find your hair and clothes all powdered with it! For it is no ordinary dust to be classified as clean dirt! Very much the reverse,—it is the sun-dried pulverized filth of the whole city, which day by day, as the centuries roll on, becomes more and more unclean, and is never purified. It is not a nice subject to touch, but I cannot give an adequate idea of this capital of the North without just saying that, as there is no provision for household sewerage, the open streets are the receptacle for the most horrible filth, and scavengers go round the town with buckets on their shoulders, carrying small shovels with which to collect manure for their fields.

I do not mean to say that the city is without drainage.

On the contrary, there is a very elaborate and complete system of underground drains, built of large bricks, and covered with large stone slabs. These are opened and cleared every spring, after the winter frosts break up, and before the violent summer rains are due, otherwise the city would be flooded, and when once they are opened, they are allowed to remain so for weeks, forming a very unnecessary addition to the dangers of locomotion in the streets.

[The municipal street-watering is on a very limited scale, and though each householder waters the street before his own door at sunset, yet, as pure water is scarce, he uses for this purpose the house slops, or water from sewers, drains, or pools, without regard to the foul odors with which the air is thereby filled.]

Talk of eating a peck of dirt! those luckless Europeans whose lot is cast in Peking must get a good deal more than their share, for, happily, never have I seen any other city whose filth and foul smells equalled those of this great capital.

The miracle is to see how these people thrive on the poisonous atmosphere which they must forever inhale, and which makes us positively sick. In the narrowest, most crowded streets, where the air is most pestilential, these people look just as fat and healthy as in the open country, even where there are foul open drains under their windows. They are at least spared the danger of subtle drain poisons, for their ugly Giant Stink stalks unrebuked in open day. And yet, though these people have been inured to this condition of things since the hour of their birth, and therefore do not appear conscious of it, there is no doubt that the prevalence of sore eyes and disgusting skin-diseases, to say nothing of small-pox and typhoid epidemics, must be greatly due to the general dirt and all the foul smells which pervade every corner.

Of course the dirt which is so apparent in the streets reigns rampant in the houses, the habits of the people being intrinsically unclean. At meals they throw their bones and scraps of meat on the floor, and spill grease, but never dream of sweeping out the room, except perhaps just the middle, while the accumulated filth finds safe quarters in the corners and under the furniture. Even in the houses of the rich, the annual cleaning is limited to rubbing up dingy furniture and pasting clean paper over dirty windows. Then all through the long winter personal washing is limited to rubbing the face and neck with a flannel wrung out in hot water, but as to clothes, they are never changed day or night. A succession of thick wadded garments are heaped on one above the other as the weather grows colder, and they are cast off one by one with the return of spring. . . .

Noise and din and incessant chatter are marked features of all street life here,—every one volunteers his opinion as to whatever business his neighbor has on hand, and the voices of the crowd are neither sweet, gentle, nor low. Very much the contrary, especially when, as is usually the case, their loud, shrill wrangling has reference to some infinitesimal sum of money; for here, just as in India, a squabble over a few farthings seems a source of positive enjoyment.

Then there is the incessant din of street cries, while, as a deep base to these, comes the grunting chorus of the coolies who, in the middle road, are urging on their heavily-laden carts, and the lighter rattle of a never-ceasing stream of the terrible springless carts which take the place of cabs and carriages for great mandarins as for humbler folk; the very highest nobles, however, prefer the slower dignity of sedan-chairs. Riders on mules and donkeys go jingling along to the music of their own bells. Clearer and most

melodious is the tinkling of the square bells which hang from the neck of the last camels in those long files which now and then move slowly up the street, with soft, silent tread and gliding movement. Some are laden with tea, others bring fuel to the city,—a compound of clay and coal-dust made up into balls, which, being burnt in common portable stoves made of clay, iron, or brass, give out much heat.

But strange to say, though there are vast seams of coal in the mountains within fifty miles of Peking, it is so expensive here, on account of the carriage on camel- or donkey-back, that it is almost cheaper to burn coal brought from England, Australia, or Japan.

As we slowly made our way along the crowded street we noticed various amusing incidents. At one place we passed some mountebanks whose buffoonery called forth loud laughter; at another, a denser crowd tempted us to press forward to see the object of special interest, and lo! it was a Chinese "Punch and Judy," of much the same character as our own. From one street-hawker I bought a number of fans for some incredibly small sum, not for their beauty, but for their oddity, some having printed maps of Peking, to me incomprehensible, and others most intricate illustrations of ancient Tartar history, without any color,—simply designs.

But at this hour [the evening] the open-air cook-shops plied the busiest trade. Some are shaded by huge umbrellas, beneath which are spread the dressed dishes, to which a thick sprinkling of dust does duty in lieu of pepper. There are street ovens wherein all manner of pies are baked,—strange compounds of unknown animal and vegetable substances, which nevertheless really smell rather inviting; at least, they would do so were it not for the ever-present, all-pervading fumes of tobacco and opium,—



the one coarse, the other faint and sickly. These, mingling with all the other smells, do not produce an appetizing atmosphere.

Bean pudding in a crust of mashed potatoes, fried in oil, seemed to be in great demand, as also little pies of vegetables, and nicely boiled sweet potatoes. We watched the owner of a portable oven dispensing these to a hungry circle, on receipt of some absurdly small coin, while many other men supplied them with hot tea. Various preparations of Indian corn flour were also in favor, especially when baked in the form of tarts, with a little dab of treacle; there was also an enormous consumption of cakes of ground millet, and of flour cakes sprinkled with scorched sesamum seed. Instead of the invariable rice of the Southern Provinces, wheat-flour and maize are largely used,—also sorghum, a grain which grows to a height of ten feet. As to what we understand by bread, it does not exist, the substitute being heavy dumplings of flour, which are steamed instead of being baked. They are not bad, however, when toasted.

But the favorite food here is a cake made of bean curd. Common small beans are ground between two granite millstones like a hand quern. As the upper stone is turned water is poured on, and a creamy, white fluid oozes out, which flows into a tub, and is boiled with salt. The froth is skimmed off, and the curd is tied up in a cloth, put under pressure, and so formed into square cakes, which really taste rather like our own curds. . . . There is also an immense consumption of macaroni. . . . This is eaten hot with chillies, and you see men swallowing yards of it, very much like the Neapolitan beggars, except that they use chop-sticks instead of fingers.

## THE LAMA FEAST OF FLOWERS.

EVARISTE RÉGIS HUC.

[Abbé Huc, on his journey from Tartary to Tibet, paused for a time on his way at the Lamaseraï, or Lama settlement, of Kounboun, one of the most renowned centres of Tartar Buddhism. While there the curious and interesting Feast of Flowers took place, a festival so unique in character that we cannot resist the temptation to describe it.]

THE situation of the Lamaseraï of Kounboun is enchanting. Imagine a mountain intersected by a broad, deep ravine, whence spring up large trees, filled with a numerous population of ravens, magpies, and yellow-beaked crows. On either side the ravine, and up the sides of the mountain, rise, in amphitheatrical form, the white dwellings of the Lamas, each with its little terrace and wall of enclosure, adorned only by cleanliness, while here and there tower far above them the Buddhist temples, with their gilt roofs glittering with a thousand colors, and surrounded by elegant peristyles. The houses of the superiors are distinguished by pennants, floating above small hexagonal turrets, and on all sides the eye is struck by mystical sentences, in the Thibetan character, in red and black, on the doors, on the walls, and the stones, on pieces of linen fixed, like flags, on masts reared above the houses.

Almost at every step you meet with conical niches, in which incense and odoriferous wood are burning; and through the streets of the Lamaseraï circulates the population of Lamas, in their red and yellow dresses, grave in their deportment, and, although under no obligation to silence, speaking little, and that little in a low voice. It is only, however, at the commencement and the close of the public prayers and the schools that many of them are to

be met in the streets, for during the rest of the day they generally keep their cells, unless when they are seen descending, by winding paths, to the bottom of the ravine to fetch water.

This Lamaserai enjoys such a great reputation, that the worshippers of Buddha make pilgrimages to it from all parts of Tartary and Thibet, and at the festival the confluence of strangers is immense. There are four grand fêtes in the year, but the most famous is that which occurs on the fifteenth day of the first moon, and which is called the Feast of Flowers. It was the sixth of the first moon when we took up our abode at Kounboun, and already numerous caravans of pilgrims were arriving by all the roads leading to it, and every one was talking of the fête. The flowers this year, it was said, would be enchanting; the council of the Fine Arts had examined them, and declared them superior to all that had been seen in preceding years. Of course we were very eager for information concerning these marvellous productions and a festival so unknown to us, and we were greatly surprised at the details communicated to us.

The *Flowers* of the fifteenth of the first month consist of certain representations, secular and religious, in which all Asiatic nations appear in their appropriate costume, and in which the characters, dresses, landscapes, and decorations are all made out of *fresh butter*! Three months are employed in preparation for this singular spectacle. Twenty Lamas, chosen from among the first artists that can be found, are employed all day in working at the butter, plunging their hands continually in water, lest the heat of their fingers should injure the work; and as this is during the most rigorous cold of winter, they have much to suffer.

They begin by mixing and kneading the butter well in water, to make it firm; and when the material has been

sufficiently prepared, every one devotes himself to the part which has been confided to him. All work is under the direction of a chief, who has furnished the design for the flowers of the year, and who presides over its execution. When the modellers have finished their work, they give it over to another company of artists, who undertake the coloring, but still under the direction of the same chief.

On the evening before the fête the concourse of strangers was immense. Kounboun was no longer the calm and silent retreat, where all breathed the gravity and earnestness of a religious life,—but a worldly city, full of tumult and agitation. In all quarters we heard the piercing cries of camels and the lowing of the long-haired oxen, which had brought the pilgrims. On the higher parts of the mountain rose numerous tents, where were encamped those who had not been able to find a lodging in the houses of the Lamas, and during the whole of the fourteenth an immense number of pilgrims were engaged in performing a pilgrimage round the Lamaserai, in which the pilgrim is required to prostrate himself at every step!

Among these zealous Buddhists were a great number of Mongol Tartars, who came from a great distance, and who were remarkable for their heavy, stupid look, as well as for the scrupulous accomplishment of the ordinances of this kind of devotion. The long-haired ones were there also, not looking at all more engaging than at Tang-Keou-Eul, walking proudly as usual, and with the right arm bare, their long swords and guns slung in their belts. The most numerous of all, however, were the *Si-Fan*, whose faces expressed neither the rudeness of the long-haired nor the simple good faith of the Tartars, but they performed their pilgrimage with a sort of nonchalance, as if they would say, “We understand all that sort of thing; we belong to the parish.”

Among the crowd of pilgrims we were surprised to find some Chinese, with chaplets in their hands, making all the customary prostrations. They were, as Sandara the Bearded informed us, dealers in khatas, who did not believe in Buddha, but who performed all these ceremonies to get custom and sell their wares better. Whether this were truth or calumny we had no means of ascertaining; but, as far as we knew, it perfectly harmonized with the Chinese character. On the fifteenth the pilgrims making the tour of the Lamaserai were not so numerous as on the preceding days, for curiosity carried most of them in the direction where the preparations for the feast of flowers were going on. In the evening we all went out, leaving nobody but old Akayé to keep house for us. The *flowers* were placed in the open air before the Buddhist temples, on light scaffoldings of various designs, interspersed with innumerable vases of red and yellow copper, and the whole most beautifully and tastefully illuminated.

The flowers really astonished us; we should never have imagined that in the midst of these deserts, and among a half-civilized people, there could have been found artists of such merit. They were bas-reliefs, in colossal proportions, representing various subjects taken from the history of Buddhism. The figures were animated, the attitudes natural, the costumes easy and graceful, and at the first glance you could distinguish the kind and quality of texture meant to be represented. The furs, especially, were admirable. The skins of the sheep, tiger, wolf, and other animals were so well executed that one was tempted to touch them with the hand, to assure one's self that they were not real.

In all the reliefs it was easy to recognize Buddha, for his noble and majestic face belonged quite to the Caucasian type, and this agrees with the Buddhist tradi-

tions, which always point to the sky of the west as his place of birth. The complexion was fair, and delicately tinged with red, the eyes and nose large, the hair long, waving, and soft to the touch. The other personages showed the Mongol type, with the various Thibetan-Chinese and Tartar varieties, all clearly distinguishable. We saw also some heads of Hindoos and negroes, all equally well represented, and the latter especially greatly exciting the curiosity of the spectators. These grand reliefs were framed in by decorations with animals, birds, and flowers, all, of course, in butter, and exquisite in their form and color.

In the street leading from one temple to another we found at intervals reliefs in miniature, representing battles, hunts, scenes of nomadic life, and views of the principal Lamaseras of Thibet and Tartary. The work which excited most enthusiasm among the spectators, though we could not ourselves feel much inspired by it, was a sort of puppet theatre, erected before the principal temple, and in which the *dramatis personæ*, scenery, and decorations were all of butter. The whole performance consisted of two processions of Lamas, coming out of two little doors, remaining for a few moments on the stage, and then going back again.

As we did not find this very interesting, we soon went away to examine some groups of devils, as grotesque mostly as those of Callot; and while we were so engaged we suddenly heard a great burst of trumpets and marine shells. The Grand Lama, we were told, was just issuing from his sanctuary, to visit the flowers. We asked nothing better, for we had a great curiosity to see him, and he soon reached the spot where we were standing. This living Buddha was about forty years of age, of ordinary figure, commonplace physiognomy, and swarthy complexion; and

if he noticed the fine face of the first Buddha, as here represented, he must certainly have thought he had strangely degenerated from his original type.

He was on foot, surrounded by the principal dignitaries of the Lamaserai, and preceded by a crowd of Lamas, who cleared the way for him with great whips. If we were but little struck with the person of the Grand Lama, we were much so with his dress, which was precisely that of a bishop, for he had on his head a yellow mitre, a long staff in the form of a crozier in his right hand, and on his shoulders a mantle of violet-colored taffeta, fastened in front with a clasp, and exactly resembling a cope. We had, indeed, subsequently often occasion to remark the analogies between the Catholic and Buddhist costume and ceremonial.

The spectators appeared to pay but little attention to their living Buddha, being much more occupied with the Buddhas in fresh butter, which were certainly much prettier. The only ones who showed any signs of devotion were the Tartars, who joined their hands and bowed their heads in token of respect, and even seemed afflicted that the crowd in the streets prevented their prostrating themselves.

The Grand Lama, after he had completed his tour, returned to his sanctuary; and this was the signal for the people abandoning themselves to the wildest transports of joy. They sang till they were fairly out of breath; they danced; they pushed each other about; they tumbled head over heels, and shouted till one might have thought they had all gone crazy. As, in the midst of this disorder, it would have been easy for the butter decorations to have been destroyed, the Lamas were armed with lighted torches to keep off the mob, which was roaring around them like a tempestuous sea.



We returned home at a late hour, and by sunrise there was no longer a trace of the grand Feast of Flowers. All had disappeared;—the bas-reliefs had been demolished, and the enormous quantity of butter thrown down into the ravine, to serve as food for the crows. These grand works that had cost so much time, so much labor, and one may say so much genius, had served but for the spectacle of a single night. With the flowers the pilgrims also had disappeared. We saw them in the morning, slowly climbing the sides of the mountain, to return each to his own wild country. They walked in silence, with their heads cast down; for the mind of man can, in this world, support so little joy, that the day after a gay festival is commonly one of bitterness and melancholy.

---

## A CAPTIVE IN JAPAN.

WASSILI GOLOWNIN.

[In 1803 a Russian vessel attacked and destroyed several villages in the Japanese Kurile Islands, in revenge for a refusal of the Japanese to permit a landing. In 1811 this unwarranted assault was bitterly repaid upon Captain Wassili Golownin, of the Russian sloop-of-war "Diana," who had been sent to survey the southern Kurile Islands. The Japanese were found to be very distrustful of this expedition, and the captain with some of his officers landed with the purpose of meeting the Japanese officials, and convincing them of the peaceful character of his intentions. The consequence was that he and his officers and men were taken prisoners, and plunged into a cruel captivity that continued for more than two years. We extract some passages from Captain Golownin's interesting narrative.]

WE ran to our landing-place; but on arriving there, perceived with dismay that the tide had ebbed above five

fathoms, and left the strand quite dry. As the Japanese saw that it was impossible for us to get the boat afloat, and had previously assured themselves that it contained no arms, they gained confidence, advanced upon us with drawn sabres, which they held in both hands, muskets and spears, and surrounded us. I cast a look upon the boat, and said to myself, "It must be so,—our last refuge is lost,—our fate is inevitable." I surrendered. The Japanese seized me by the arms, and conducted me to the castle, into which my companions were also conveyed.

We were conducted to the same tent in which we had held the conference, but neither of the commanders with whom we had communicated was now there. The first thing done was to tie our hands behind our backs, and conduct us into an extensive but low building, which resembled a barrack, and which was situated opposite to the tent in the direction of the shore. Here we were all, except Makaroff,—whom we had not seen since our separation,—placed on our knees, and bound in the cruellest manner, with cords about the thickness of a finger; and as though this were not enough, another binding with smaller cords followed, which was still more painful. The Japanese are exceedingly expert at this work; and it would appear that they conform to some precise regulation in binding their prisoners, for we were all tied exactly in the same manner. There were the same number of knots and nooses, and all at equal distances, in the cords with which each of us was bound. There were loops round our breasts and necks; our elbows almost touched each other, and our hands were firmly bound together; from these fastenings proceeded a long cord, the end of which was held by a Japanese, and which on the slightest attempt to escape required only to be drawn to make the elbows come in contact, with the greatest pain, and to tighten the noose about

the neck to such a degree as almost to produce strangulation. Besides all this, they tied our legs in two places, above the knees and above the ankles; they then passed ropes from our necks over the cross-beams of the building, and drew them so tight that we found it impossible to move. Their next operation was searching our pockets, out of which they took everything, and then proceeded very tranquilly to smoke tobacco.

[After an hour they were led into the country, the cords being removed from their ankles. Golownin continues:]

I was so tightly bound, particularly about the neck, that before we had travelled six or seven versts, I could scarcely breathe. My companions told me that my face was swollen and discolored. I was almost blind, and could not speak without the greatest difficulty. We made signs to the Japanese, and requested them, through the interpretation of Alexei, to loosen the cord a little, but the cannonade [from the ship and fort] so frightened them that they paid no attention to our remonstrances; they only urged us to move faster, and kept constantly looking behind them.

Life now appeared a heavy burden to me, and I resolved, in case we should pass a river, to make a sudden spring into the water, and thus terminate a painful existence. I soon saw, however, that it would not be easy to execute this purpose, as the Japanese always held us fast by the arms when we had occasion to cross even a little brook. I fell at length senseless upon the ground. When I recovered, I found some persons sprinkling me with water, and the blood flowing from my mouth and nose. My companions, Moor and Chlebnikoff, were in deep distress, and imploring some persons to loosen the cords with which I was bound. They at last, with the greatest difficulty, pre-

vailed upon them to comply. I then found myself much eased, and was soon able to make an effort to proceed.

After a journey of about ten versts we arrived at a small village, situated on the straits which divide the island of Kunashier from Matamai. We were conducted into a house, where boiled rice was offered us, but we felt no desire to partake of food of any kind. On our declining to eat, we were taken into another apartment, in which we were laid down close to the walls, so as not to touch each other. The ropes by which we had been led were attached to iron hooks, driven into the wall for that purpose. Our boots were pulled off, and our legs tied as before in two places. Having secured us in this way, our guards sat down in the middle of the room round a chafing-dish, and drank tea and smoked. Any man might have slept tranquilly beside lions, bound as fast as we were, but it would seem that our guards did not think themselves secure. The cords with which we were tied were inspected every quarter of an hour.

At the approach of twilight our guards began to bestir themselves, and seemed to be preparing for a journey. About midnight a broad plank was brought in, to the four corners of which ropes were attached. These ropes were fastened at the top, and swung across a pole, the ends of which were laid on men's shoulders; and thus the whole was suspended. I was placed upon this plank, and immediately borne away. We now concluded that we were to be separated forever, and that we could entertain no hope of seeing each other again. Our farewell was like the parting of friends at the hour of death.

The sailors wept aloud as they bade me adieu, and my heart was wrung on leaving them. I was conveyed to the sea-side, and placed in a large boat, with a mat beneath me. In a few moments, Mr. Moor was likewise brought

to the shore in the same way as I had been, and was placed in the boat beside me. This was indeed an unexpected happiness. I was so overjoyed that for a few minutes I experienced a diminution of my torments. Moor was soon followed by Mr. Chlebnikoff, and the sailors, Simanoff and Wassiljeff; the rest were placed in another boat. A soldier under arms was placed between each of us. We were then covered over with mats, and the boats were rowed from the shore.

[The journey of the prisoners lasted four weeks, partly by water, but principally by land, the same minute caution being observed, seemingly to prevent them committing suicide. The people of the country, however, seemed to view them with pity, and offered such consolation as was in their power. At the end of this period they reached the city of Hakodadi, before whose gates crowds gathered to see them.]

We at length entered the city, where the concourse of people was so immense that our guards had great difficulty in clearing a passage for us. Having proceeded a distance of half a verst along a narrow street, we turned down a cross-street on our left, which led us into the open fields. [Here they beheld their future prison,] a large, dark building resembling a barn, within which were apartments formed of strong, thick spars of wood, which, but for the difference of size, looked exactly like bird-cages.

I was led into a passage or lobby of the building, where my boots were drawn off, and the ropes with which I was bound removed. I was then directed to enter a small apartment, which was divided from the passage by wooden palisades. I now looked around me in quest of Mr. Moor and Schkajeff; but how great was my dismay to find that I could neither see nor hear them! The Japanese, without saying a word, closed the door of my apartment, and quitted the lobby, the door of which they likewise closed

after them. I was now alone. The thought of being separated from my companions, and probably forever, completely overpowered me, and, in a paroxysm of despair, I threw myself upon the ground.

I remained for some time in a state of insensibility. At length, raising my eyes, I observed at the window a man, who beckoned me to approach him. I complied with his wish; and extending his hand through the railing, he presented me with two little sweet cakes, at the same time entreating me, by signs, to eat them quickly, as a punishment awaited him if he should be observed. At that moment I loathed the very sight of food; but I made an effort to eat the cakes, lest refusal might give offence to my kind visitor. His countenance now brightened up, and he left the window, with a promise to bring me more at a future time. I thanked him as well as I was able, and was greatly astonished that this man (who from his dress apparently belonged to the very lowest class) should be so far actuated by benevolence as to hazard his own safety for the sake of conveying comfort to an unfortunate stranger.

My guards now brought me some food; but I felt not the least inclination to partake of it, and sent it all away. In this state I remained until evening. I sometimes threw myself on the floor, or upon a bench, and occasionally walked about the apartment, meditating upon the means of effecting my escape. I attentively inspected the construction of my cage. It was six feet in length and breadth, and about eight feet in height. It was divided from the lobby by wooden palisades of tolerable thickness, and the door was fastened by a lock. On one side, near the door, was a small recess fitted up as a water-closet. There were two windows, both secured externally by strong wooden gratings, and in the inside furnished with paper screens, which I could open or shut at pleasure. One

window faced the wall of a building about two feet distant from that in which I was confined, and the other looked to the southern side of the fence which surrounded our prison. From this window I had a view of the neighboring hills and fields, part of the straits of Sangar, and the opposite coast. In the interior of the chamber stood a wooden bench, which, however, was so small that I could not stretch myself upon it, and three or four mats lay in one corner of the floor. The place contained no other furniture.

[After a few days he was given a sailor as companion, and in time his chest of clothing, and the effects of the others, were brought, having been sent ashore from the ship. Gradually the severity of the imprisonment was somewhat relaxed, and after a month or two they were removed to the city of Matsmai, where they were again immured in a cage-like prison. They were better treated, however, and every day for a month were taken before the *bunyo*, or governor, and questioned for hours in succession ]

The number of questions which the *bunyo* asked was incalculable. If he put an interrogatory concerning any circumstance connected with our case, he asked fifty which were unimportant, and many which were ludicrous. This so puzzled and tormented us that we sometimes made very irritable replies. On one occasion, we stated plainly that we had rather they should put an end to our existence at once than torture us in the way they did. When we were captured I had about me ten or twelve keys belonging to my desk and drawers and to boxes containing the astronomical instruments used on board the ship. The *bunyo* wished to be informed of the contents of every drawer and every box. When I pointed to my shirt, and told him that my drawers contained such things as those, he asked me how many I had. I replied that I did not know; and that it was my servant's business to keep that reckoning. Upon



this he immediately inquired how many servants I had, and what were their names and ages. I lost all patience, and asked why I was teased with such questions, and what use there could be in answering them since my property was not with me. The governor then, with great mildness, observed that he hoped we were not offended by his curiosity; that he did not intend to force any answers from us, but merely questioned us like a friend. . . .

We had to make ourselves understood to them by means of the half-wild Kurile, who knew scarcely anything of the subjects on which we conversed, and who was acquainted with no words in the Kurile language to express many of the terms which we made use of. The Japanese interrogated us without any kind of regularity, and often jumped from one subject to another. The following is a specimen of one of our examinations:

What kind of dress does the Emperor of Russia wear? What does he wear on his head? What kind of birds are found in the neighborhood of St. Petersburg? How many times do the Russians go to church in one day? What would be the price in Russia of the clothes we were then wearing? How many pieces of cannon are planted around the imperial palace? What wool is made use of in Russia for manufacturing cloth? What quadrupeds, birds, and fish are eaten in Russia? In what manner do the Russians eat? What sort of dresses do the ladies wear? What kind of horses does the Emperor usually ride? [And a host of similar questions.]

But they vexed us most of all by their inquiries respecting barracks. I have already observed that in Hakodadi they insisted on knowing how many men were under our command, according to our rank, when we were ashore. This question was again repeated, together with a request to know where the sailors lived in St. Petersburg. In

barracks, we replied. They then requested Mr. Moor to sketch, from the best of his recollection, a plan of St. Petersburg, and to point out in what part of the town the sailors' barracks were. This demand was no sooner complied with than they made inquiries respecting the length, breadth, and height of the barracks; the number of their gates, windows, and doors; into how many stories they were divided; in what part of the building the sailors lived; how they employed their time; how many men were employed to guard the barracks, etc.

But this was not all: they questioned us about the military barracks; asked how many buildings of that kind there were in St. Petersburg, in what part of the town they were situated, and what number of men they contained. We thought it best to plead ignorance of most of these matters; but this did not exempt us from the continuance of these interrogatories. We were asked in what part of the city our dwellings were situated, how far they were from the palace, and requested to point out the spot on the sketch which Mr. Moor had drawn. At length they wished to know how large our houses were, and how many servants we kept. I frequently thought that the Japanese took a pleasure thus to torment us; for to reply to all the questions which their insatiable curiosity induced them to put to us was a positive martyrdom. We sometimes absolutely refused to answer them, and told them they might, if they pleased, put us to death. The bunyo then would endeavor to soothe us by expressions of regard, and by making inquiries respecting matters relative to our imprisonment, but he would soon resume his trifling. We avoided by every possible manœuvre giving any opportunity for unnecessary questions; we returned short replies, and sometimes only half an answer. But every word brought with it a train of interrogatories.

[Shortly after this the strictness of the prison discipline was relaxed, and the captives were much better treated. They continued imprisoned during the winter, but in the following April were removed from prison and taken to a house expressly prepared for them. Here they received much better food, and were given the privilege of out-door exercise. Their purpose of escape, however, had not been given up.]

In one of our walks in the outskirts of the city we found a piece of steel, which one of the sailors picked up, under pretence of drawing up his boot, and slipped it into his pocket; we likewise found means to provide ourselves with some flints unperceived by our attendants. The fragments of our old shirt, which we threw upon the fire as if by accident, served us for tinder; we besides daily increased our store of provisions by secreting a portion of our allowances. We did not neglect defensive precautions. Having had the good fortune to find among the grass in our yard a large chisel, which had probably been left by the carpenters who repaired the house, we carefully hid it, and resolved on the first favorable opportunity to fasten it to a long pole, so that it might serve as a pike. To a similar service we destined a spade, which had also been left by accident in our yard, and which we appropriated. The proverb, that necessity is the mother of invention, was in our case fully verified, for Mr. Chlebnikoff actually managed to make a compass. We requested our attendants to let us have two needles for mending our clothes, and afterwards pretended that we had lost them. The Japanese sometimes fasten together the beams of their houses with copper; this had been done in our house, although the copper was very rusty. Mr. Chlebnikoff cleaned a piece of this copper, in the middle of which he bored a hole, so that a needle might be placed upon it. By frequently rubbing this needle on a stone, which he selected for the purpose, he succeeded in

magnetizing it, and finally gave it such a degree of polarity that it pointed with tolerable accuracy to the north. The case was composed of a few sheets of paper, pasted together with rice.

[On the 23d of April, 1812, they returned to their house from a walk, and threw themselves on their beds, as if much fatigued.]

During the twilight the sailors entered the kitchen, and carried off two knives, without being perceived. About half an hour before midnight, Simanoff and Schkajeff stole into the yard, and concealed themselves under the steps. When twelve o'clock struck, and the Sangar soldiers had gone their rounds, they began to make a hole under the fence, through which we all (Mr. Moor and Alexei excepted) crept, one after another. I stumbled in going out, slipped down, and struck my knee against a stake which was sunk into the ground close to the gap. The blow was extremely violent, but the pain soon diminished. We found ourselves on a very narrow path between the fence and the hollow, and with great difficulty we succeeded in gaining the high-road. With hasty steps we then passed between the trees, crossed the mound and the cemetery, and, in about half an hour, reached the foot of the first hill which we had to ascend.

Proceeding in our hazardous enterprise, we began, at the distance of about five versts from the shore, to climb the hills, and we endeavored, wherever it was possible, to direct our course northward. The stars served to guide us. While we were ascending the first hill, I felt a very violent pain in my knee, which in a short time swelled prodigiously. When we proceeded along level ground I could, with the aid of a stick, walk without much difficulty; but I experienced severe pain either in ascending or descending, as I was then obliged to tread heavily with the leg

which had been hurt. Being thus unable to make an equal use of both feet, I was quickly overcome with fatigue. My companions were, therefore, under the necessity of stopping every half-hour, to enable me to recover myself and ease my knee by resting.

Our object was to reach, before daybreak, some hills, across which a thick forest extended, so as to conceal us from the observation of the enemy; for we now had reason to regard the Japanese in that character. During our walks in the vicinity of the town, this forest appeared to us to be at no very considerable distance, but we soon found how greatly we had mistaken its situation. We could trace no foot-path leading to it, and we therefore advanced to it in as straight a direction as we could. Owing to the darkness of the night, we could see no farther than a few paces around us, and we sometimes found ourselves unexpectedly at the foot of a steep precipice, which it was impossible to climb. We had then to search for a more practicable road; which, when found, we continued to ascend until new obstacles presented themselves.

[They finally discovered a road that led directly to the forest, and had almost reached it, when they found they were pursued on horseback with lanterns. They took shelter in a deep hollow beside the road, and there crept into an aperture in the rock. The sun rose, the day passed, night came again, and they resumed their journey, though Captain Golownin's knee was exceedingly painful. They continued their course during the following day, on which the captain had a perilous adventure.]

Having ascended to a considerable height, we suddenly found ourselves at the foot of a steep rock, which we could not climb without the greatest difficulty and danger. I had nearly reached the top of the rock, when I found myself under the necessity of loosening my hold of the girdle of Makaroff, who otherwise, overburdened as he was, would

not have been able to gain the summit. I therefore placed the toes of my sound foot firmly against a stone, and throwing my right arm round a young tree, which was so much bent down that it inclined almost horizontally, I resolved to wait until Makaroff should reach the top, and be able to release me from my perilous situation. But powerful and vigorous as Makaroff was, his great exertions had so overcome him, that he no sooner reached the summit than he fell to the ground in almost a lifeless state. At this moment the stone against which I rested my foot detached itself, and rolled to the bottom of a deep hollow which the rock overhung. I was thus left hanging by one hand, without the possibility of obtaining any other support, owing to the excessive smoothness of the rock.

The rest of the sailors were at no great distance, but fatigue rendered them unable to afford me any assistance. Makaroff still lay stretched upon the ground, and Mr. Chlebnikoff was laboring to climb the rock at another point. Having remained in this dreadful position for several minutes, my hand began to smart severely, and I was on the point of ending my sufferings by precipitating myself more than a hundred fathoms beneath me, when Makaroff, suddenly recovering, beheld my situation, and hastened to my assistance. Resting his foot upon a stone which projected from the rock under my breast, he with one hand grasped a branch of the tree. With my hand that was free I then seized his girdle, and by a great effort on his part I was drawn to the top of the rock. We were no sooner both safe than Makaroff again fell down in a state of insensibility.

[They continued to proceed thus for several days, descending to the sea-shore at night, in search of food and a boat, and returning to the hills before day. On the 1st of May, after a week of freedom, they were recaptured and taken back to prison. Meanwhile, the Russians

were making every effort to procure their release, and on the 6th of September they received a letter from Lieutenant Rikord, of the "Diana," which was accompanied with an application to the Japanese government for their release. This effort failed, however, and more than a year passed before the strenuous efforts of their friends were successful. It was not till the 6th of October, 1813, that they were taken before the bunyo, and informed that they were free. They were received on board the "Diana" with enthusiastic joy, and sailed from Hakodadi October 10. Captain Golownin reached St. Petersburg finally on July 14, 1814, after an absence of seven years.]

---

## AMONG STRANGE SCENES AND CUSTOMS.

AIMÉ HUMBERT.

[M. Aimé Humbert, who, in 1862, shortly after the opening of Japan to foreign intercourse, was sent to Yedo by the Republic of Switzerland, as envoy extraordinary to make a treaty of commerce with Japan, published in 1870 a richly illustrated work descriptive of his observations during several years' residence, and of the laws, manners, and customs of the Japanese. He took up his residence at first in Yokohama, where he had as valet a bright little Japanese boy named Tô.]

It was from Tô that I took my first Japanese lesson. He gave me the key to conversation in three words, and the philosophical character of the method he employed will at once be appreciated. The operations of the mind resolve themselves into three forms,—doubt, negation, and affirmation. As soon as one knows how to express these three operations, the rest is only a matter of the vocabulary,—a charging of the memory with a certain number of the usual words. Thus we will commence with doubt, and say in Japanese *Arimaska?* which signifies, "Is there?" Then we pass to negation, *Arimasi*, "There is not," and



finish with *Arimas*, "There is." After that, the vocabulary will furnish us with the words which we most need, as *Nipon*, Japan, Japanese; *chi*, fire; *cha*, tea; *ma*, a horse; *mizu*, water, etc. Add a little mimicry, and we shall be able to comprehend many things without the aid of an interpreter. Thus coming home after a long ride, I order Tô to bring me tea: "*Cha arimaska?*" He answers, "*Arimas*," and soon the refreshing beverage is on my table. By the same process, I tell him to put the water on the fire, or in the tea, to call the betto and have the horse saddled, etc. . . .

Little by little neighborly relations were established between our residence and the quarter of the *yakounins* (guards). In Japan, as elsewhere, little presents create friendly feelings. Some packages of white sugar and Java coffee, sent to those families where we learned that there were recent births, or invalids, were gratefully received.

One day, when I was entirely alone, between four and five in the afternoon, the porter announced to me the arrival of a deputation of native ladies, and asked whether they should be received. These ladies had received from their husbands permission to return their thanks for the presents, but they also wished to examine our European mode of living. I ordered the porter to admit them, and took upon myself the duty of receiving them with all due honor.

I soon heard the sound of wooden shoes on the gravel of the garden-alleys, and saw, at the foot of the steps leading to the veranda, a group of smiling faces, among whom were four married women, two marriageable girls, and children of various ages. The first could be distinguished by the plainness of their toilets, having no ornaments in their hair, nothing fine or brilliantly colored in their clothing, no rouge on the face, but the teeth black as

ebony, in accordance with Japanese usage; the young girls, on the contrary, increase the natural whiteness of the teeth by a coat of carmine on the lips, rouge their cheeks, braid bands of scarlet crape among their black hair, and wear a broad girdle of brilliant colors. As to the children, their costume consisted of gay plaid robes and girdles; their heads were shaved, but, according to age or sex, several tufts of greater or less length were left, some loose, some bound together in a sort of *chignon*.

After the usual salutations and bows, the orators of the deputation,—for there were two or three who spoke at once,—made me many handsome compliments in Japanese, to which I replied in French, inviting them to enter the *salon*. Certainly I had been understood; for I heard expressions of thanks which I had already learned; and yet, instead of ascending the steps, they appeared to ask some further, unintelligible explanation. Finally the graceful company perceived my ignorance; adding gesture to words, they asked, “Shall we take off our shoes in the garden, or will it answer to do so on the veranda?” I decided in favor of the latter; whereupon they mounted the steps, took off and arranged their sandals, and joyously trod the carpets of the *salon*, the children with bare feet, the grown persons with cotton stockings, divided at the end by a *thumb* for the great toe.

Their first impression was a naïve admiration of what they saw, followed immediately by a general hilarity, for the tall pier-glasses, descending to the floor, reflected and repeated their forms, from head to foot, behind as well as in front. While the younger visitors continued to contemplate this phenomenon, so new and attractive to them, the married women asked me to explain the meaning of the pictures on the walls. I stated that they represented the Tycoon of Holland and wife, together with several

great daimios of the reigning family. They respectfully bowed; but one of them, whose curiosity was not satisfied, timidly expressed the opinion that the portrait of the *betto* of his Dutch Majesty had been included in the royal company. I did not enlighten her, for she could never have comprehended the noble fashion of representing a prince on foot, beside his saddle-horse, and even holding the bridle, like a Japanese groom!

Others, after having carefully examined the velvet of the chairs and sofas, came to me for the decision of a question which had arisen among them, concerning the use of those pieces of furniture. They agreed that the chairs were made to be sat upon; but the sofas? Did we not crouch upon them, with crossed legs, when the meals were served? They heartily commiserated the ladies and gentlemen of the West, who were obliged to use such an inconvenient piece of furniture, always sitting with their feet painfully resting on the floor.

My bedroom, opening from the *salon*, was next invaded. I cannot describe all the subjects of astonishment discovered by the curious troop. Being Japanese, they were none the less daughters of Eve; and the forbidden fruit which tempted them the most was an assortment of uniform buttons with the Swiss cross upon them, according to the military usage of my country. I was obliged to give them a few, although it was impossible to conjecture what use they would make of them, since all Japanese garments, male or female, are simply bound with silk cords. The gift of some articles of Parisian perfumery was well appreciated; but I could not make them understand the merits of *eau de Cologne*, for the cambric handkerchief is unknown to Japanese ladies. They informed me that the poorest girl would never degrade herself by carrying in her pocket an article with which she had wiped her nose.

The little squares of paper which they carry for the purpose are not likely, therefore, to be easily supplanted.

To restore the balance, I exhibited to them a case containing an assortment of sewing-thread, pins, and needles, and asked them to make use of it. They were unanimous in recognizing the imperfection of all their native implements for sewing. The needle by no means occupies the same place in their native society as in our family circles at home. Sewing, for example, is never seen during the visits and the long gossips of the Japanese women; even as men, in Europe, have recourse to the cigar, they employ only the pipe to season their 'hours of conversation. I gave to the children some small pictures of Swiss landscapes and costumes, and showed to the grown persons an album of family photographs, which they examined with an interest, an expression of feeling, truly touching.

[During the ensuing summer M. Humbert, with some other foreign residents, set out on an excursion to Kamakura, the residence of the Tycoons before the removal of the capital to Yedo. They took boat down the bay to the village of Kanasawa, which left them but five miles of overland journey.]

It was nine o'clock in the evening when we embarked. Two Japanese sentinels on the shore, armed with a musket without bayonet, saluted us with a peaceable "good-evening!" From all the barques moored to the quay arose, like a rhythmical moaning, the monotonous prayer of the fishermen to the supreme intercessor and patron of souls, "Amida, have mercy upon us!" The efficacy of this prayer depends on the number of minutes uninterruptedly devoted to it, according to the direction of the *bonzes*, or priests.

Our crew was composed of five boatmen, the constable, two valets, and a Chinese *comprador* (steward). They were all ready on the quarter-deck of the junk, leaving

the cabin at our disposition. We arranged three sleeping-places out of sacks, boxes, and such coverings as we had brought with us, and then mounted to the deck to enjoy the night. The boatmen, who were obliged to row across that part of the harbor occupied by the fleet, stood on their feet, two on each side, leaning on their long, plunging oars, to which they gave a sort of rotary movement in rowing, like the Venetian gondoliers. The fifth stood upon the stern and managed the rudder. The effect of this manner of rowing was like that of a screw-engine.

Afterwards, a light breeze having arisen, our boatmen drew in their oars and hoisted sail. We were soon on the open water, losing sight of the shores and the place of embarkation; the sky was covered with floating vapors, and the moon gave but a misty light. But when we went below to sleep, we found, to our horror, that the mosquitoes were there before us. There was nothing to do but to return to the deck, order our Chinaman to prepare tea, and pass the rest of the night crouched around the fire in his brazier.

In the early dawn the boatmen hauled down the sail and resumed their oars. We began to distinguish, on our right, a steep, picturesque promontory, clothed with beautiful groups of trees, and, directly in front of us, the domes of foliage which crown Webster Island. Skirting its shores, we entered by a narrow channel into the harbor of Kanasawa, passing a number of fishing-boats which were silently pushing out to their day's labor. At the entrance of the port a little temple, surrounded with fruit-trees, occupies the centre of a low island, connected with the market-place by a jetty; farther, on a massive pile of rocks, overlooking some sacred buildings, there is a tea-house with an observatory commanding a panorama of the entire bay.

The Japanese have a lively feeling for the beauty of their country. There is no picturesque point to which they do not call public attention, by building there a chapel, a tea-house, a pavilion, or some sort of an edifice inviting repose. Nowhere is the traveller so frequently invited to delay his journey, and relieve himself of fatigue under some hospitable roof, or cool shade, with a lovely landscape before his eyes.

We entered an hostelry near the port. A spacious gallery, above the level of the street, was put at our disposal. Some planks laid upon trestles, two benches, and empty boxes enabled us to seat ourselves at table in the European manner. We breakfasted on our own provisions, to which the hostess added tea, saki, rice, fried fish, and soy. She was assisted by two young servant-girls neatly dressed, and *coiffées* with even an air of elegance. Towards the close of our meal the children of the house timidly mounted the steps leading to our room; but, on my beckoning the youngest, he set up a loud cry. I drew from my pocket some pictured labels which I was in the habit of carrying about with me, and very soon he came to beg one of me. Then followed his mother, the girls of the inn, and the women of the neighborhood, with their children. An old grandmother expressed a wish to taste some white sugar, for the raw brown sugar brought from Loo-Choo is the only kind known in Japan. We succeeded, finally, in making them understand that we needed rest; whereupon they withdrew as gently and noiselessly as if we were already slumbering.

A sleeping-place was improvised by using a number of double screens, in order to divide the room into a number of separate retreats. I say separate, rather than enclosed, for the paper screens were not without holes; and after I was stretched upon the matting, with my head on a trav-



elling-cushion, I more than once saw a curious eye sparkling through the apertures. Finally I slept, but not for a long time. The matting of these Japanese houses serves as a retreat for multitudes of those insects which Toepffer has designated by the name of "domestic kangaroos." My comrades had the same experience, and we very soon returned to the open gallery. . . .

It was four o'clock in the morning when we left the tea-house. We traversed the deserted streets of Kanasawa in a southern direction, to the last of the chain of hills against which the village leans. There some constructions of a peculiar style announce a seignorial residence. Strong walls surround and support garden terraces; a portal, formed of two pillars and a cross-piece of massive oak, covered with black varnish and adorned with ornaments of copper, gives access to a spacious court-yard. Therein we distinguish a guard-house and other buildings, behind which there are great trees, which give an antique character to the residence. I learned that it belongs to the prince Noné-kura Tango, whose annual revenue is about one hundred and sixty thousand francs.

Farther on, after having crossed a bridge over a rapid river flowing to the west, we approach that chain of wooded mountains which divides the peninsula of Sagami into two opposite slopes. Around us the soil is cultivated; fields of beans have replaced the wheat harvested in June; the rice still rolls in green waves, but already in head. The paths which lead through the fields are so narrow that there is only space to put one foot before the other. Even on the road we followed two horses could scarcely go abreast, yet upon it we encountered a singular obstacle. An old man and his wife had chosen it as an economical lodging-place for the night, and were sleeping upon two bamboo mats, which were probably also their travelling-



cloaks. A little heap of smoking ashes indicated that they had made a fire of reeds to drive away the mosquitoes from their rural couch.

Rising from the foot of the hills, the road winds among rocks of sandstone, sometimes sharply pointed, often pierced with grottoes in which we discover little idols, altars, or votive offerings. On the summit of the ridge there is a cabin of planks and mats, built against a wall of rock, and containing some benches, a hearth, and utensils for preparing tea and rice. At this early morning hour it is uninhabited, and its furniture is intrusted to the honesty of the public. The descent on the other side is rapid. A beautiful golden pheasant looks at us from the border of a grove; one of my companions cannot resist the temptation of discharging his revolver. But the bird, untouched, does not seem to be much concerned by the attempt, and only after some reflection does he judge it prudent to remove to the top of a tall tree, out of reach.

Half-way down the slope we passed a village charmingly situated among trees and flowers, on the borders of a torrent which was dammed to feed some rice-mills. The natives were busy, in and around their houses; and a woman, on seeing us, hastened to summon her children from the pool where they were washing themselves. Little by little the road became filled with pack-horses and foot-travellers. The beautiful undulations of the country around us fell by degrees to the sea; over the rounded azure gulf shone the steep cliffs of the isle of Inosima. The white summit of Fusi-yama rose, in the distance, against the misty background of the landscape. Everywhere there was cultivation; everywhere fields dotted with groves, and threaded by leaping waters, which were spanned by arched bridges. Rustic huts and houses of fine appearance, freshly varnished, and with blooming

flower-gardens, are thickly scattered along the highway or on the declivities of the hills, and there are also frequent chapels, granite idols, and funeral monuments.

The approach to Kamakura is like that to a great city, but the great city no longer exists. A vigorous vegetation shows the traces of a soil slowly overcoming the disturbance of ruins, overthrown walls, and choked canals. Ancient avenues of trees terminate in waste, briery tracts, where they once led to palaces, of which no trace remains. Even palaces, in Japan, are constructed almost wholly of wood, and therefore leave no permanent ruins behind them. . . .

Still, in our days, Kamakura is the pantheon of the ancient glories of Japan. It is composed of a majestic collection of sacred edifices, which have been constantly respected during the fury of the civil wars. They are all placed under the protection of Hatchiman, one of the great national *kamis*. . . . Nearly all the large cities have a temple to Hatchiman; but that of Kamakura is distinguished above all others by its special treasures. Two large buildings are devoted to the display of relics, among which, it is said, are the spoils of Corea and the Mongol invasions, together with the objects plundered from the Portuguese and the native Christians, at the time of the expulsion of the former. No European has yet been allowed to see these treasures. On our approach to the temple it was easy to see that our appearance had been signalled in advance, for the bonzes ran with all speed through the courts to close the buildings containing the relics.

The temple of Hatchiman is approached by long alleys of those grand cypresses which form the noblest decoration of the Japanese places of worship. As we drew nearer in coming from Kanasawa, the chapels and com-

memorative stones on the sacred hills increased in number. After crossing a river on a fine wooden bridge, we found ourselves in the principal avenue, leading directly to the great square in front of the terraces, stairways, and buildings of the temple.

Around the first court are the houses of the bonzes, thrust behind each other like the side-scenes of a theatre, among trees planted around the wall of enclosure; while two great ponds of oval shape occupy the centre of the square. These latter are connected by a broad canal, which is crossed by parallel bridges, each remarkable in its appearance. The one on the right is built of hewn stones of whitish granite, and is so nearly a perfect semicircle in its form, that one involuntarily wonders what gymnastic exercises were intended to be performed on it; but I take it to be the bridge of honor reserved for the gods and other good spirits when they visit the temple. The bridge on the left is level, constructed of wood, covered with red lacquer, and with old copper ornaments on the railings. One pond is filled with the magnificent blossoms of the white lotus; the other is splendid with the red lotus. Gold and crimson fish, and others with pearly fins, swim in the crystal water between the leaves and flowers, and the black tortoise basks on the leaves.

We now reach the second court, elevated above the first, and only to be entered by passing through the lodge appropriated to the divine guardians of the sanctuary. This building, facing the bridges, shelters under its high, peaked roof two monstrous idols, one on each side. They are sculptured of wood, and coated with vermilion lacquer from head to foot. Their grimacing faces and enormous bodies are spotted with innumerable balls of chewed paper, which the native visitors throw at them in passing, with no more scruple than a band of mischievous school-boys.

Nevertheless, this is a very serious act on the part of the pilgrims, for it assures them that the prayer written on the piece of paper which they chew will probably reach its destination. In order to be entirely certain, they are required to purchase and suspend to the grating around the statues a pair of straw sandals large enough for the feet of the latter. Thousands of such sandals are constantly offered, and are allowed to hang on the grating until they drop to pieces from rottenness.

A high terrace, surmounted by a grand staircase, towers over the second court. It is supported by a wall of cyclopean construction, and supports the principal temple, with the habitations of the chief bonzes. The ornamentation of these buildings lacks neither taste nor proportion. It is chiefly applied to the portals, and to the brackets and cornices on which the roofs rest. The beautiful brown tint of the timber, which is almost the only material employed, is relieved by carvings painted red or a brilliant green. To complete the effect of the picture, one must add its frame of immemorial trees and the incomparable brilliancy of the sky. . . .

The avenue to which we were conducted, in leaving the avenue of Hatchiman, has been built in an admirable situation, on the summit of a promontory which commands a view of the whole bay of Kamakura; but it is all the more saddening to find, amid such lovely scenery, a pretended sanctuary which only produces an impression of disgust. The principal building seemed at first to offer nothing remarkable; there are only some insignificant gilded idols on the chief altar. In a lateral chapel one sees the god of wealth, armed with a miner's hammer. The bonzes, however, conducted us behind the altar, and there, in an obscure cage, like a prison, and as high as a tower, they lighted two lanterns, and hoisted them slowly up a kind

of mast. Then by the wavering light, almost lost in the shadows of the roof, we found ourselves face to face with an enormous idol of gilded wood, thirty-five feet in height, holding in the right hand a sceptre, in the left a lotus, and wearing a triple tiara, composed of the heads of inferior deities. This is one of the means by which the bonzes excite the superstitious imagination of the people, and keep them in a state of perpetual imbecility.

The monument dedicated to Daiboodhs—that is, the Great Boodha—may be considered as the most complete work of the Japanese genius, in regard both to art and to the religious sentiment. The temple of Hatchiman has already given us an example of the profit which native art has learned to draw from nature, in easily producing that impression of religious majesty, which we associate, at home, with Gothic architecture. The temple of Daiboodhs (known to the English and American residents in Japan by the name of *Dyboots*) has, in many respects, a very different character. In place of grand and broad dimensions, of that unbounded space which sinks from gate-way to gate-way to the sea, a solitary, mysterious retreat was sought, such as might dispose the spirit to expect some supernatural revelation. The road, avoiding all habitations, directs itself towards the mountains; it winds, at first, between hedges of tall shrubs; then we see nothing before us but a straight path, ascending through foliage and flowers: then it turns, as if seeking some remote goals, and all at once appears at the bottom of the alley a gigantic seated divinity of bronze, with folded hands, and head gently inclined in an attitude of contemplative ecstacy.

The involuntary shock which one feels, on the first appearance of this grand figure, soon gives place to admiration. There is an irresistible charm in the posture of Daiboodhs, in the harmony of his bodily proportions, in

the noble simplicity of his drapery, and in the calmness and serenity of his countenance. A dense belt of foliage, over which tower a few beautiful groups of trees, is the only enclosure of the sacred place, the silence and solitude of which is undisturbed. We hardly distinguish the modest hermitage of the officiating priest, concealed in the foliage. The altar, where a little incense burns at the foot of the divinity, consists of a table of bronze, with two lotus vases of the same metal, and of admirable workmanship. The azure of the sky, the grand gloom of the statue, the austere tint of the bronze, the brilliancy of the flowers, and the varied verdure of the hedges and thickets, fill this retreat with the richest effects of light and colors.

The figure of Daiboodhs, with the base upon which it rests, is a little more than sixty-five feet high. It does not equal in elevation the statue of San Carlo Borromeo, near Arona, on Lake Maggiore; but the latter leaves the spectator as cold as if it were merely a trigonometric signal. The interiors of both colossal statues have been utilized, more or less skilfully. The European tourists seat themselves in the nose of the cardinal; the Japanese descend by a staircase into the foundation of their Daiboodhs, where they find a quiet oratory, the altar of which receives a ray of the sun through an opening in the folds of the god's bronze mantle.

[The story of this visit concludes with the following dissertation on Japanese Buddhism:]

Buddhism is a flexible, conciliating, insinuating faith, accommodating itself to the genius and the usages of the most diverse races. From their very first entrance into Japan, the bonzes succeeded in obtaining the charge of the ancient relics, and even of the chapels of the saints, and preserving them within the bounds of their own sanctu-

aries. They speedily added to their ceremonies symbols borrowed from the ancient national worship ; and, finally, in order more thoroughly to confound the two religions, they introduced into their temples both Japanese saints clothed with the titles and attributes of Hindoo divinities, and the Hindoo divinities transformed into Japanese saints. Owing to this combination, which is known under the name of Rioobou-Sintoo, Buddhism became the dominant religion of Japan.

At first it was the great Boodh of India, to whom colossal statues—of which the Daiboodhs of Kamakura furnishes the best type—were erected. Afterwards, the Japanese idea of a supreme divinity was personified in the fantastic image of Amida, who is represented under nine different forms, symbolizing his incarnation and his essential perfections,—one of the latter being expressed in the emblem of a dog's head. Among the auxiliary gods who serve as mediators between men and the supreme being, the favor of the Japanese people is principally bestowed upon Quan-non, who possesses the most frequented temple in Yedo, and in Miako the famous temple of the Thirty-three Thousand Three Hundred and Thirty-three Genii (pronounced in Japanese, *Sanman sansin sanbiak sansin santaï*). This divinity rests on a lotus-flower, the left leg doubled under the body ; the head is covered with a veil which falls on the shoulders. The idol has no less than forty-six arms, bearing all sorts of attributes which attest his power.



## SCENERY OF JAPAN.

SIR RUTHERFORD ALCOCK.

[The author of the following selection, an English diplomatist, was born in London in 1809. For years he served as an army surgeon, and afterwards became a consul in China. In 1858 he was made consul-general in Japan, and in 1859 British Envoy to that empire. He was appointed Minister to China in 1865. He wrote several works relating to Japan, which have the merit of showing the conditions existing in that empire shortly after its opening to foreign nations (in 1854), and before the influx of ideas and habits from abroad. As a curious relic of antiquity, we precede our selection by Marco Polo's brief description of Zipangu, or Japan, as heard by him at the court of Kublaï Khan, in Peking, at the end of the thirteenth century.]

“ZIPANGU is an island in the Eastern Ocean, situate at the distance of about fifteen hundred miles from the mainland of *Manji* (Manchooria?). It is of considerable size; its inhabitants have fair complexions, are well made, and are civilized in their manners. Their religion is the worship of idols. They are independent of every foreign power, and governed only by their kings. They have gold in the greatest abundance, its sources being inexhaustible; but as the king does not allow of its being exported, few merchants visit the country, nor is it frequented by much shipping from other ports. To this circumstance we are to attribute the extraordinary richness of the sovereign's palace, according to what we are told by those who have had access to the place. The entire roof is covered with a plating of gold, in the same manner as we cover houses, or more properly churches, with lead. The ceilings of the halls are of the same precious metal; many of the apartments have small tables of pure gold, considerably thick,

and the windows also have golden ornaments. So vast, indeed, are the riches of the palace, that it is impossible to convey an idea of them.

“In this island there are pearls also in large quantities, of a red color, round in shape, and of great size; equal in value to, or even exceeding, that of the white pearls. It is customary with one part of the inhabitants to bury their dead, and with another part to burn them. The former have a practice of putting one of these pearls into the mouth of the corpse. There are also found there a number of precious stones.

“Of so great celebrity was the wealth of this island, that a desire was excited in the breast of the Grand Khan Kublai, now reigning, to make the conquest of it, and to annex it to his dominions.”

[One of the most striking features of Japanese scenery is the great isolated volcanic cone of Fusi-yama, the sacred mountain of Japan, which rises in imposing grandeur before all eyes in the bay and city of Yedo. This peak, which is sufficiently free from snow to permit ascent only in July and August, was visited by Alcock in 1860. As his was the first trip of foreigners so far inland from the coast, it caused great excitement in town and village. We subjoin his account.]

As each roadside village, and even the larger towns, generally consist of one long and seemingly endless street, the news of our approach spread as rapidly and unerringly as the message of an electric telegraph, turning out the whole population as if by a simultaneous shock; men, women, and children,—clothed and nude,—dogs, poultry, and cats! I think at Odowara no living thing could have been left inside. Such a waving sea of heads seemed to bar our passage, that I began to congratulate myself that my unknown friend, the Daimio, had so courteously provided me with an escort. I felt some curiosity as to the mode they would take to open a way through the dense

mass of swaying bodies and excited heads, which looked all the more formidable the nearer we approached. My guides, however, seemed perfectly unembarrassed, and well they might be,—for when within a few steps of the foremost ranks, there was a wave of the fan, and a single word of command issued, “*Shitanirio!*” (kneel down!) when, as if by magic, a wide path was opened and every head dropped; the body disappearing in some marvellous way behind the legs and knees of its owner.

[The habits of Japanese landlords differ essentially from what custom has made us familiar with in America and Europe.]

Immediately after arrival the landlord appears in full costume, and, prostrating himself with his head to the ground, felicitates himself on the honor of receiving so distinguished a guest, begs to receive your orders, and that you will be pleased to accept a humble offering at his hands,—generally a little fruit, a few grapes or oranges, occasionally a rope of eggs, that is to say, a row of them, curiously twisted and plaited into a fine rope of straw. Due thanks having been given, he disappears, and you see no more of him or his servants—if, as usually happens, the guests bring their own and do not require help—until the foot is in the stirrup; when he makes another formal salutation, parting with thanks and good wishes. These details apply to the whole journey; the house or garden may be a little larger or smaller, the paper on the walls which divide the rooms a little fresher or dingier, but all the essential features are stereotyped, and exactly reproduced from one end of the kingdom to the other.

[The route to Fusiyama led up the rugged passes of the Hakoni Mountains, which rise to a height of six thousand feet. These were profusely covered with vegetation. They continued their course to Mouriyama, the highest inhabited point on the mountain, and the next day started at daybreak for the final ascent.]

At first our way lay through waving fields of corn, succeeded by a belt of high, rank grass; but soon we entered the mazes of the wood, which clings round the base and creeps high up the sides of the mountain, clothing the shoulders of the towering peak like the shaggy mane of a lion, with increased majesty. At first we found trees of large growth,—good trunks of the oak, the pine, and the beech,—and came upon many traces of the fury with which the typhoon had swept across. Large trees had been broken short off, and others uprooted. One of these broken off had been thrown right across our path, and compelled us either to scramble over or creep under its massive trunk. At Hakimondo we left the horses, and the last trace of permanent habitation or the haunts of men. Soon after the wood became thinner and more stunted in growth, while the beech and birch took the place of the oak and pine.

We speedily lost all traces of life, vegetable or animal; a solitary sparrow or two alone flitted occasionally across our path. In the winding ascent over the rubble and scoræ of the mountain—which alone is seen after ascending about half-way,—little huts or caves, as these resting-places are called, partly dug out and roofed over to give refuge to the pilgrims, appeared. There are, I think, eleven from Hakimondo to the summit, and they are generally about a couple of miles asunder. In one of these we took up our quarters for the night, and laid down our rugs, too tired to be very delicate. Nevertheless, the cold, and the *occupants* we found former pilgrims had left, precluded much sleep.

Daylight was rather a relief; and after a cup of hot coffee and a biscuit, we commenced the upper half of the ascent. The first part, after we left the horses, had occupied about four hours' steady work, and we reached

our sleeping-station a little before sunset, lava and scorix everywhere around us. The clouds were sailing far below our feet, and a vast panorama of hill and plain, bounded by the sea, stretched far away. We looked down on the summits of the Hakoni range, being evidently far above their level, and we could distinctly see the lake lying in one of the hollows. The last half of the ascent is by far the most arduous, growing more steep as each station is passed.

The first rays of the sun just touched, with a line of light, the broad waters of the Pacific as they wash the coast, when we made our start. The first station seemed very near, and was reached within the hour; but each step now became more difficult. The path, if such may be called the zigzag which our guides took, often led directly over fragments of out-jutting rocks, while the loose scorix prevented firm footing, and added much to the fatigue. The air became more rarefied, and perceptibly affected the breathing. At last the third station was passed, and a strong effort carried us to the fourth, the whole party by this time straggling at long intervals. This was now the last between us and the summit. It did not seem so far, until a few figures on the edge of the crater furnished a means of measurement, and they looked painfully diminutive.

The last stage, more rough and precipitous than all the preceding, had this further disadvantage, that it came after the fatigue of all the others. More than an hour's toil, with frequent stoppages for breath and rest to aching legs and spine, was needed; and more than one of our number felt very near the end of his strength before the last step placed the happy pilgrim on the topmost stone and enabled him to look down the yawning crater. This is a great oval opening, with jagged lips, estimated by Lieutenant Robin-

son, with such means of measurement as he could command, at about one thousand yards in length, with a mean width of six hundred, and is probably about three hundred and fifty yards in depth. Looking down on the other side, which had a northern aspect, there seemed a total absence of vegetation, even on the lower levels, and the rich country we had left was completely hid by a canopy of clouds drifting far below. The estimated height of the edge of the crater above the level of the sea was thirteen thousand nine hundred and ninety-seven feet; and the highest peak, fourteen thousand one hundred and seventy-seven feet.

The Japanese, who perform this pilgrimage from religious motives, are generally dressed in white garments, which they are careful to have stamped with various mystic characters and idols' images by the bonzes located there during the season for that purpose. On the sleeves of many of the pilgrims scallop-shells appear,—a strange coincidence, which I have never been able to explain. The origin of the pilgrimage is traced back to an ancient date, when a holy man, the founder of the Sinto religion,—the oldest in Japan,—took up his residence on the mountain. Since his death, his spirit is still believed to have influence to bestow health and various other blessings on those who make the pilgrimage in honor of his memory.

The volcano has long been extinct; the latest eruption recorded was in 1707. The tradition is that the mountain itself appeared in a single night from the bowels of the earth, a lake of equal dimensions making its appearance near Miako at the same hour. The time actually spent in climbing up to the summit was about eight hours, but the descent occupied little more than three. We slept two nights on the mountain, and had greatly to congratulate ourselves on the weather, having fallen upon the only two

fine days out of six. As we descended on the last morning there was a thick Scotch mist, which soon changed into a drenching rain. We only found patches of snow here and there near the summit, but on our return to Yedo, three weeks later, it was completely covered.

[On their return they turned aside from the main highway, in order to visit the mineral springs of Atami, on the shore of the promontory of Idzu. The country was very beautiful, diversified with clumps of trees, hedge-rows, and winding rivulets. Nothing could be richer than the soil, or the variety of its productions. Snug-looking hamlets and homesteads were nestled among the trees, or under the hills, and here and there were park walls, or splendid avenues of cryptomeria, leading to the residences of the native princes. The people had a happy, contented, and prosperous air, quite disproving the accounts of the oppression and exaction imposed upon them by their local rulers. The principal crop was rice, but there were also many fields of tobacco and cotton, arum and sweet potato, with orchards of persimmon- and orange-trees.]

In the following spring Alcock made an overland journey from Nagasaki to Yedo, his description of which yields many points worthy of selection.]

During this nine days' journey there was a combination of every kind of scenery. Well-cultivated valleys, winding among the hills, were graced with terraces stretching far up towards their summits, wherever a scanty soil could be found or *carried*, with a favorable aspect for the crops. We traversed some wild-looking passes, too, where hill and rock seemed tumbled in chaotic confusion from their volcanic beds. Frequent glimpses were caught of the sea-coast and bays, from which the road seldom strays very far inland. Pretty hamlets and clumps of fine trees were rarely wanting; and if the villages looked poor, and the peasant's home (bare of furniture at all times) more than usually void of comfort, yet all the people looked as if they had not only a roof to cover them, but rice to eat,



which is more than can always be said of our populations in Europe. As groups of women and children crowded around the doors of the cottages, the whole interior of which the eye could easily take in at a glance, it would sometimes appear a problem how so many living beings could find sleeping room, or what provision there could be for the commonest requirements of decency, much less comfort. They must of necessity herd together very much like cattle; but neither is that, unfortunately, peculiar to Japan.

At Urisino in the morning, and Takeiwa in the evening of the third day, we found some hot sulphur baths. The first we visited was open to the street, with merely a shed roof to shelter the bathers from the sun. As we approached, an elderly matron stepped out on the margin, leaving half a dozen of the other sex behind her to continue their soaking process. The freedom of the lady from all self-consciousness or embarrassment was perfect of its kind. The springs are close to the bank of a river, shaded by some noble trees; and the scene is both lively and picturesque, with groups of votaries, nude and undraped, crowding around the various reservoirs, and enjoying alternately the medicinal virtues of the waters and the cool shade of the trees. . . .

On our way to Uzino, on the seventh day, we passed through many scenes worthy of the artist's pencil; indeed, the number of tempting pictures was truly tantalizing, since it was clearly impossible to take even the slightest sketch of all. A little wayside shrine, embosomed in trees, was approached over a ravine, across which nature or art had flung a great boulder of granite. The scene, with a group of Japanese seated in the foreground, proved altogether irresistible. Again, as we descended through a rocky pass into the valley below, and caught the first

glimpse of the cultivated fields and terraced hills, with another range of mountains towering beyond, picturesque Japanese figures filling up the foreground, it was difficult to pass and take no note.

On the eighth day, our way to Koyonoski lay chiefly along the banks of a river, on a high causeway raised some twenty feet above the level of the water. We passed several depots of coal, evidently placed there for embarkation, in some large flat-bottomed boats, a novel sight on the sand-choked rivers of Japan,—certainly in Kiusiu, where boats are to be seen only as exceptions. Kokura, the fortified capital of the province of Bouzen, and one of the keys to the strait between Kiusiu and Nipon, we reached early next morning, fortunately, for the sun beat hot upon our heads and shoulders long before ten o'clock. The roads were sheets of mud, and in places all but impassable with the heavy rains that had recently fallen; and, though the scenery was as beautiful as ever, it was difficult under such conditions to enjoy it. Pleasant country houses, each surrounded by its garden and clumps of trees or orchards, line the road which leads to the provincial capital, for more than a mile. It was holiday time, and all the inhabitants were at their windows, dressed in their best, or grouped on the door-steps to watch the *cortége* pass.

[Sir Rutherford gives the following description of his arrival at Osacca:]

We were nearly an hour in traversing the suburbs of this vast city, before we seemed to gain the great thoroughfare, filled to overflowing with an immense, but very orderly crowd. There was pushing and squeezing, and from time to time a desperate descent was made by the police on some luckless wights in the front rank. Blows

on the bare head were dealt furiously on all; but the weapon was a fan, and although in their hands a very effective one, it could hardly do much mischief. We came at last to the main river, spanned by a bridge three hundred yards long, well and solidly built, below which there is an island, covered with houses, in the midst of the stream, something like the island of St. Louis in the Seine. Not a trace of hostile feeling was to be seen anywhere, though the curiosity was great to see the foreign ministers. Here, indeed, as might be noticed at a glance, was a vast population, with whom trade was the chief occupation; and at every step evidences of the greatest activity were visible.

Piled up near the bridge I noticed glazed tiles for drains, and large earthen jars for coffins,—the Japanese being buried as he lives, with his heels tucked up under him in a sitting posture,—an arrangement which has at least the advantage of saving space in the cemeteries, still further economized by burning the bodies of the poorer classes, and merely burying their ashes in a jar of small dimensions. The Japanese have some strange superstitions about either sleeping or being buried with the head to the north. In every sleeping-room at the resting-places, we found the points of the compass marked on the ceiling; and my Japanese servant would on no account let my bed be made up in any but the right direction.

[Their reception at Nieno was very different, every house being tightly closed, and not a face to be seen. This was due to the hostility of the daimio there resident. Passing through this sealed town, they entered the open country again.]

Our way lay for many days through mountain scenery and fertile valleys, the hills generally clothed to the very summit with trees, chiefly of the pine family. The same

sandy character of the soil, and the formation of the hills already noticed, continued until we approached within sight of Fusi-yama, when it was exchanged for the dark rich mould which alone is to be seen within a hundred miles of Yedo. On the fourth day we had struck into the ordinary route, and had the advantage of the fine sanded roads and park-like avenues of the Tokaido. And now each day we met one or more *cortéges* of daimios coming from the capital. As a general rule we had nothing to complain of; if some of the principal officers and armed retainers scowled at us, and seemed to think our presence on the high-roads an offence, the greater number passed on their way, as we did on ours, without any manifestation of feeling or opinion.

In one case only, I was amused by a somewhat characteristic trait. Mr. De Wit and I were riding abreast and without any escort, having left them far behind, when, seeing a rather large *cortége* filling up the road as we turned an angle, we drew to one side and went in single file. No sooner did the leading officer observe the movement than he instantly began to swagger, and motioned all the train to spread themselves over the whole road; so that all we gained by our consideration and courtesy was to run the risk of being pushed into the ditch by an insolent subordinate. Thus it is ever in the East. To yield the wall is a sign of weakness; to yield to anything spontaneously is to provoke oppression; and they who, from courtesy, step aside are fortunate if they do not get trampled down for cowards and fools.

As we advanced through the country, both men and women were busily employed in planting out their rice. This was the first time I had seen any but isolated cases of women being engaged in field labor in Japan; for the Japanese appear to me to be honorably distinguished among

nations of a higher civilization, in that they leave their women to the lighter work of the house, and perform themselves the harder out-door labor. Indeed, I was at first in some doubt here, for it was by no means easy to distinguish the women from the men at a little distance. To guard the legs probably from leeches, as they paddled in the mud, they all wore gaiters up to the knees and short cotton trousers. When the neck was covered, there was no very distinguishing difference between the sexes, as the men never have any hair about the face. The wheat in Japan never appears to be sown broadcast. All that I have seen has been drilled and planted in rows, much as the rice is, a few stalks together. Labor is cheap, and it is to be presumed they find this the more profitable way.

As we approached Mia, on the bay of Owari, we passed another great castle. And yet this term is very likely, I fear, to mislead the reader. What constitutes a daimio's castle, then, in Japan, is first a moat surrounded by a wall, generally built of mud intersected with layers of tiles, and plastered over; sometimes with parapets, and loop-holed for musketry; a large gate-way, with massive overhanging roof; a straggling group of ignoble-looking lath and plaster houses inside, rarely more than one story high, and sometimes, if the owner is a daimio of very great pretensions, his walls will be flanked with turrets. In his grounds, something like a two- or three-storied pagoda will rise above the dead level of the other roofs, and look picturesque through the clumps of fine timber, with which the grounds of the owners are always graced, whatever else may be wanting.

## WALKS IN YEDO.

AIMÉ HUMBERT.

[To the preceding description of a rural excursion by M. Humbert, we add the following interesting account of civic scenes and customs, as observed by him in the capital city of Yedo (now Tokio) in those early days before the freshness of native Japanese life was in any degree vitiated by the intrusion of foreign ideas. He thus describes the quarter of the city named Takanawa, that in which the foreign legations were situated.]

FROM morning until night the low streets and quays of Takanawa are crowded with people. The stable population of the quarter seemed to me to have no other industry except to raise, in one manner or another, a light tribute from those arriving and departing. Here, tobacco is cut and sold ; there, rice is hulled and made into biscuits ; everywhere saki is sold, tea, dried fish, watermelons, an infinite variety of cheap fruits and other comestibles, spread on tables in the open air, or under sheds and on the shelves of innumerable restaurants. In all directions, coolies, boatmen, and bearers of cargoes offer their services. In some lateral streets, stalls may be hired for pack-horses, and stables for the buffaloes which bring to market the products of the surrounding country. They are harnessed to small rustic carts, the only wheeled vehicles which one meets in Yedo.

The singers, the dancers, the wandering jugglers who come to try their success in the capital, make their first appearance at the doors of the tea-houses of Takanawa. Among the singers there are those who form a privileged class, but subjected to a certain supervision by the police. They may be known by their large flat hats, thrown back



BUDDHIST TEMPLE, KIOTO.





from the temples; they always go in pairs, or in fours when two dancers accompany the two singers.

The favorite jugglers at the Japanese street-corners are young boys, who, before commencing their tricks, conceal their heads in large hoods, surmounted by a tuft of cock's feathers and a small scarlet mask representing the muzzle of a dog. These poor children, in bending and curving themselves, one upon the other, to the monotonous sound of the tambourine of their conductor, present the appearance of a really grotesque and fantastic struggle between two animals, with monstrous heads and human limbs.

In the deafening sounds of all these diversions in the spaces filled by the public, there was frequently mixed the noise of the cymbals and bells of the mendicant brotherhood. I saw, for the first time, some whose heads were not tonsured, and inquired what the order was to which they belonged. Our interpreter answered that they were laymen, simple citizens of Yedo, making a business of devotion. Although they were all similarly clad in white, in token of mourning or penitence, those who carried a bell, a long stick, some books in a basket, and wore a large white hat with a picture of Fusi-yama on the side, were returning from a pilgrimage to the holy mountain, made by public charity; while the others, with a cymbal at the girdle, an immense black and yellow hat, and a heavy box on the back, were probably small ruined merchants, who had become colporteurs and exhibitors of idols, in the pay of some monastery.

On the heights above the landing-place, a long street leaves the Tokaido, cuts obliquely through the chain of hills where the legations are situated, and traverses in a straight line, from south to north, the northern part of Takanawa. We followed this street to the end, and passed, successively, through three very distinct zones of the social

life of Yedo. The first, with its motley crowd of people living in the open air, I have already described.

Behind our monastic hills we found a population entirely sedentary, occupied, within their dwellings, in various manual labors. The workshops were announced, at a distance, by significant signs,—sometimes a board cut in the form of a sandal, sometimes an enormous umbrella of waxed paper, spread open like an awning, over the shop; or a quantity of straw hats of all sizes, dangling from the peak of the roof down to the door. We see, in passing, the armorers and polishers, busy in mounting coats of mail, iron war fans, and sabres. An old artisan, naked, crouched on a mat, pulls the bellows of the forge with his left heel, and at the same time hammers with his right hand the iron bar which his left hand holds on the anvil. His son, also naked, takes the iron bars with the tongs and passes them to his father as they become red-hot.

Little by little the road which we are following becomes deserted. We enter the vast solitude of a collection of seignorial residences. On our right extend the magnificent shades of the park of the Prince of Satsouma; on our left the wall of enclosure of a palace of the Prince of Arima. When we had turned the northwestern angle of this wall, we found ourselves before the principal front of the building, opposite to which there was a plantation of trees, bathed by the waters of a limpid river which separates the quarter of Takanawa from that of Atakosta.

Mr. Beato set to work to procure a photograph of this peaceful picture, when two officers of the prince hastily approached him, and insisted that he should desist from the operation. M. Metman begged them to go first and ascertain the commands of their master. The officers went to deliver the message; returning in a few minutes, they declared that the prince absolutely refused to permit that

any view whatever of his palace should be taken. Beato bowed respectfully, and ordered the porters to carry away the instrument. The officers withdrew, satisfied, without suspecting that the artist had had time to take two negatives during their brief absence. The yakounins of our escort, impassive witnesses of the scene, were unanimous in applauding the success of the stratagem.

[From the summit of a neighboring hill a general view of the city was obtained.]

At last the moment comes when the whole city is revealed to the view. We will begin with the southern pavilion: at first the eyes are dazzled with the extent and brilliancy of the picture. The sun sinks to the horizon, in a cloudless sky; the transparency of the atmosphere allows us to distinguish the forts on the luminous surface of the bay. But over all the space, extending from the anchorage to the foot of the hill upon which we stand, the vision knows not where to linger: there is a veritable ocean of long streets, of white walls and gray roofs. Nothing interrupts the monotony of the panorama, except, here and there, the dark foliage of clumps of trees, or some temple, the gable of which towers like a wave over the undulating lines of the dwellings. In the nearer neighborhood, a broad cavity drawn across the streets, as if a hurricane had passed that way, marks the course of a recent conflagration, and, still farther off, the sombre mass of the hills consecrated to the sepulchres of the Tycoons presents the appearance of a solitary island rising out of a raging sea.

The panorama furnished by the northern pavilion is still more uniform, if possible. It embraces the quarters specially inhabited by the nobility, and the ramparts and leafy parks of the Imperial Castle bound the view on the horizon. The *daïmio-yaskis*, or seignorial residences, to which

we improperly give the name of palaces, only differ from each other in their extent and dimensions. The most opulent and the most modest present the same type of architecture, the same simple character. The external circuit consists of ranges of buildings reserved for the servants and men-at-arms of the prince: they are but a single story in height, and form a long square which is always surrounded by a ditch. A single roof covers them all, with no other break in it than the front of a portal, generally inserted in the centre of one of the sides of the parallelogram. There is not often any other exit through the outer wall than through this portal. The windows in the buildings are very numerous, low, and broad, regularly set in two parallel rows, and usually closed with wooden gratings.

[From another elevated point of view M. Humbert succeeded in obtaining an outlook over the city, and was able also to gain a view of the palace of the Tycoon.]

By following the road which skirts the terraces of the Regent's palace, we finally reach a plateau on the north-eastern side of the castle, the most elevated point being nearly on a level with the top of the interior glacis of the latter. The residence of the Tycoon appears to us to be seated on the southwestern extremity of the long chain of hills and plateaus which constitute the southern, western, and northern quarters of the capital.

The undulating outlines of Yedo, from the southern side, present the image of a vast amphitheatre, the grades of which descend towards the bay. Hollows formed by the windings of three rivers may be traced through it, in the distance, the southernmost between Sinagawa and Takanawa; the second, between the latter quarter and those of Asabon and Atakosta; the nearest and most considerable between Atakosta and Sakourada, the same which fills the

moats of the castle and the navigable canals of the commercial city, between the castle and the sea.

Towards the east we see no summits; the city extends in a continuous plain to the great river Ogawa, beyond which the populous quarters of Hindjo are gradually lost in the mists of the horizon. All that part of Yedo to the eastward of the castle was entirely unknown to us, and, far as the view extended, we could not discover its end.

The immensity of the Japanese capital produces a strange impression. The imagination, as well as the vision, is fatigued in hovering over that boundless agglomeration of human dwellings, all of which, great or little, are marked by the same stamp of uniformity. Each one of our old European cities has its distinctive physiognomy, strongly indicated by the monuments of different ages, and uniting to grand artistic effects the austere charm of ancient memories. But at Yedo, all things are of the same epoch, and in the same style; everything rests on a single fact, on a single political circumstance,—the foundation of the dynasty of the Tycoons. Yedo is a wholly modern city, which seems to be waiting for its history and its monuments.

Even the residence of the Tycoon, viewed from a distance, offers nothing remarkable except its dimensions, its vast circuit of terraces, supported by enormous walls of granite, its parks of magnificent shade, and its moats resembling quiet lakes, where flocks of aquatic birds freely sport in the water. That which chiefly strikes the senses, within the enclosures, is the grand scale to which everything is conformed: walls, avenues of trees, canals, portals, guard-houses, and dwellings of the retainers. The exquisite neatness of the squares and avenues, the profound silence which reigns around the buildings, the noble simplicity of these constructions of cedar upon marble basements,—all

combine to produce a solemn effect, and to provoke those impressions of majesty, mystery, and fear which despotism needs in order to support its prestige.

Here, as in the Japanese temples, one cannot but admire the simplicity of the means employed by the native architects, in realizing their boldest conceptions. They always borrow the most effective of their resources directly from nature. The Tycoon's hall of audience possesses neither columns, nor statues, nor furniture of any kind. It consists of a succession of vast and very lofty chambers, separated one from the other by movable screens, which reach to the ceiling. They are so disposed as to give an effect of perspective, like the side-scenes of a theatre, and the end of the vista opens upon broad lawns and avenues of trees.

The Tycoon's throne is a sort of *daïs*, raised several steps, and supported against the wall which faces the principal entrance. The resident delegates of the Court of the Mikado, the Ministers of State, and the members of the Representative Council of the Daimios, have their seats on his right or left. Through the whole extent of the hall, as far as the eye can reach, the high court officials, the princes of feudal provinces, the lords of cities, castles, districts of the country, and the chiefs of the military aristocracy, are ranged by hundreds—or at the grand receptions, by thousands—in the places assigned to them by their rank in the hierarchy. No sound is heard in this immense crowd; each one is without arms, and barefooted, his feet concealed in the folds of immense dragging trousers. The daimios are recognized by their high-pointed caps and their long mantles of brocade, ornamented, on the sleeves, with the family coat of arms. The officers of the Tycoon wear an over-dress of silken gauze, spreading out on the shoulders like two large wings.

The assembly, divided into distinct groups, await the



arrival of the Tycoon, crouched in silence on the thick bamboo matting which covers the floor. Then they prostrate themselves before the sovereign as soon as he appears, and until, seated on his throne, he has ordered his ministers to receive communications from the audience. Each orator or reporter prostrates himself anew on approaching the throne, and when commanded to speak. The costume of the Tycoon is composed of a robe of brocade with long sleeves, bound around the waist with silken cords, and large puffed trousers which cover his velvet boots. He wears on the top of his head a pointed hat of gold, which somewhat resembles the Doge's bonnet. What more splendid, or more majestic decoration could he give to his audience-hall than this living gallery of the glories of Japan, this august assembly of princes, lords, and high officials, personifying the wealth and power of the Empire?

[It need scarcely be said that the Tycoon has ceased to be, the Mikado, the real emperor, having resumed his long-suppressed functions. Yedo remains the capital, but under another name, that of Tokio. M. Humbert thus describes the swordsmanship of the Japanese:]

Notwithstanding their prompt intelligence of the great progress in the art of war realized by the Western nations, the Japanese have not yet been able to abolish the heavy military apparel of their feudal times. The helmet, the coat of mail, the halberd, the two-handed sword, are still employed in their reviews and grand manœuvres. Bodies of archers still flank infantry columns equipped in the European manner, and chevaliers worthy of the times of the Crusades make their appearance in the dust of artillery trains.

All the young officers are daily exercised, from an early age, in face-to-face combats, with the lance and two handed sword, the rapier and the knife. The quarter which we

traversed possessed two race-courses and several buildings destined for exercises in equitation and fencing. We saw the masters passing, accompanied by their pupils and followed by servants who bore lances and sabres of wood, as well as gloves, masks, and breastplates, such as are used in the fencing-halls of the German universities. The jousts, still hot from their encounters, had thrown their silk mantles over one shoulder, and opened their close jackets upon the breast. Thus relieved, they walked along at their ease, silent and dignified, as is the manner of gentlemen.

I was several times present at the fencing-matches of the yakounins. The champions salute each other before the attack: sometimes he who is on the defensive drops one knee upon the earth, in order the better to cross weapons and to parry with more force the blows of his adversary. Each pass is accompanied with theatrical poses and expressive gestures; each blow provokes passionate exclamations from one or the other; then the judges intervene and emphatically pronounce their verdict, until finally a cup of tea appears as the interlude. There is even a variety of fencing for the Japanese ladies. Their arm is a lance with a curved blade, something like that of the Polish scythemen. They hold it with the point direct towards the earth, and wield it according to rule in a series of attitudes, poses, and cadenced movements, which would furnish charming subjects for a ballet. I was not allowed to see much of this graceful display, which I happened to get sight of in passing before a half-open court-yard. My yakounins closed the gate, assuring me that the customs of the country do not allow witnesses to see these feminine feats of arms.

In their weapons the Japanese nobles exhibit the greatest luxury, and take the most pride. Especially their sabres,

the temper of which is unrivalled, are generally enriched, at the hilt and on the scabbard, with metal ornaments, graven and cut with great skill. But the principal value of their arms consists in their antiquity and celebrity. Each sword in the old families of the daimios has its history and traditions, the glory of which is measured by the blood which it has shed. A new sword must not long remain virgin in the hands of him who buys it; until an occasion is offered for baptizing it in human blood, the young brave who becomes its owner tries its quality on living animals, or, better still, on the corpses of criminals. When the executioner delivers to him the body, in accordance with higher authority, he fastens it to a cross, or upon trestles, in the court of his dwelling, and sets to work to cut, slash, and pierce, until he has acquired enough strength and skill to divide two bodies, one laid upon the other, at a single blow.

"[Our author prefaces his narrative of exploration of the citizens' quarter by the following amusing experience:]

Two attachés of the Prussian Legation at Yokohama came to visit M. Metman, and as they wished to procure both the Almanac of the Mikado's Court and the official Annual of the Tycoon's government, the latter gentleman accompanied them to the shop of a bookseller in the city. I begged him to purchase for me at the same time any literary curiosities or specimens of native art which might fall into his hands.

When the gentlemen, together with their yakounins, were installed in the book-store, the owner at once furnished them with the "Almanac of Miako," which was on hand. He stated that the "Yedo Annual" was also to be had, and, pushing aside a screen, entered the next room. One of the yakounins accompanied him; presently the

two returned, the bookseller stammering out that he had no "Annuals" to sell. "Well," said one of the Prussian secretaries, "send to another shop for them; we will wait here." Thereupon there was a movement among the yakounins, consultations in the street, and prolonged absence of the bookseller. During this time the three strangers lighted their cigars, and asked an employé of the establishment to bring them boxes to sit upon, and to place before them all the illustrated works in the shop. When the owner returned, he bowed to the ground, and sighed out, "The 'Annual' cannot be had in the neighborhood, and it is now too late to send to the castle."

"What of that?" was the reply. "Send your boy for it! For our part, we are going to have our dinner brought here; we shall not leave you until we have the 'Annual.'"

M. Metman thereupon wrote a note, which he sent to the steward of the Legation by one of the men of the escort. The bookseller also gave a commission to one of his employés, and the review of illustrated works was continued until the arrival of four coolies, carrying at the extremity of their bamboo poles the lacquered boxes and wicker baskets containing the dinner.

The meal was spread upon the matting; the yakounins and the bookseller were invited to take part in it, but they politely declined. Nevertheless, when the sound of champagne corks began to be heard, they drew nearer, and the foaming glasses soon circulated around the shop. "Have you anything more to show us by way of dessert?" asked M. Metman.

The bookseller answered, "You already know the contents of my shop. I have nothing more to show except some drawings, sketches on detached sheets, made by two artists of Yedo, lately deceased. It is all which they have left to their families, who have given me the useless legacy

for a small supply of rice. Here are still the old sheets on which they tried their pencils. If you like the sketches, take the package along with the books you have bought."

M. Metman called the coolies, and ordered them to fill their baskets with the dishes, the packages of books and drawings; but to leave the bottles and the remainder of the dinner for the yakounins and the people of the house. Then, turning to the bookseller, he said, "Will it be necessary, do you think, to order our mattresses and quilts, in order to pass the night here? Now is the time to send for them by the coolies."

A general hilarity succeeded this question; then there were whisperings and goings to and fro, between the shop and the street, where an increasing crowd of curious spectators endeavored to find out what strange drama was being enacted. At last the owner and his employé reappeared, bearing some volumes under their arms. He bowed again, and placed in the hands of the strangers, evidently with the consent of the yakounins, two perfectly authentic copies of the official "Annual of Yedo."

I passed the night in examining the precious collection. It was composed of thirty illustrated works and a quantity of sheets, loose or sewed together. Here were old encyclopædias, enriched with plates which seemed to have issued from the German workshops of the Middle Ages; there, albums of sketches in India ink, reproduced on wood, or collections of stories and popular scenes, illustrated with pictures in two tints, produced by a process unknown to us. Numerous paintings on silk and rice paper represented the bridges, the markets, the theatres, all the places of meeting, and all the types of the laboring classes and the burgher society of Yedo.

But nothing of all these equalled in importance the posthumous work of the two poor unknown artists, for

the latter revealed to me both the favorite subjects and the style of the modern school of Japanese painters. These sketches, inspired by the scenes of the streets and public gardens, were a veritable treasure for the study of the people of Yedo. These dusty and spotted bundles, wherein I found a hundred and two finished pictures and a hundred and thirty rough sketches, devoted exclusively to the classes which live outside of the Castle, the aristocratic quarters, the barracks, and the monasteries, were a mine to be worked! Such a collection was for me the surest guide, the most faithful interpreter which I could have consulted, before plunging into the labyrinth of streets, quays, and canals which thread the masses of the dwellings of the *bourgeoise* population, on both sides of the river.

The district of Nipon-bassi, or the Bridge of Nipon, which is the heart of the city, contains in a space of four square kilometres five longitudinal and twenty-two cross streets, cutting the former at right angles, and forming seventy-eight blocks of houses, each being almost the exact model of the other. Navigable canals surround this long parallelogram on the four sides, and fifteen bridges give it communication with the other parts of the city. Although they have a character so completely homogeneous, these quarters of the city do not leave that impression of fastidious monotony which the mansions belonging to the court or the feudal nobility rarely fail to produce. The houses of the citizens, not less than the palaces, do not vary from the type of architecture which is appropriate to them: they are simple constructions of wood, but two stories in height, the upper one bordered by a gallery looking upon the street, with a low roof covered with slate-colored tiles, and having plaster ornaments at the extremities of the ridge-pole. But if the

frame be the same, the pictures which it encloses are delightful in their variety, unexpectedness, and picturesque originality.

Here at the entrance of a street of Nipon-bassi there is a barber's shop, where three citizens, in the simplest apparel, come to make their morning toilette. Seated on stools, they gravely hold up with the left hand the lacquered dish which receives the spoils of the razor or scissors. The artists, on their side, relieved of everything which may restrict the freedom of their movements, bend to the right or left of their customers' heads, which they traverse with hand or instrument, like ancient sculptors modelling caryatides.

A few steps farther we find a shoemaker's shop. It bristles with wooden hooks, from which hang innumerable pairs of straw sandals. The owner, squatted on his counter, reminds me of one of those native idols to which the pilgrims make offerings of shoes. Persons of both sexes stop in front of him, examine the sandals or try them on, exchange some friendly words with him, and lay the proper price at his feet without disturbing him.

Then follow shops for the sale of sea-weed, several varieties of which are cooked and eaten by the people. There is also in Yedo an enormous consumption of shell-fish. Oysters are abundant and fleshy, but not very delicate; the Japanese have no other way of opening them except to break the upper shell with a stone. At Uraga a large species of oyster is dried and exported to all parts of the empire; the trade therein is said to be a royalty of the Tycoon.

The show of the seed-stores of Yedo is very attractive. The quantity and infinite variety of the products offered, the diversity of their forms and colors, the art with which they are arranged on the shelves, all combined to attract



the attention ; but we are filled with surprise and admiration on perceiving that each one of the packages already enveloped in paper, each one of the cones ready for sale, bears, with the name of the seed, a sketch in colors of the plant itself. The illustration is often a little masterpiece, which seems to have been stolen from some charming floral album. We soon discover the artist and his studio,—that is, some young workman of the establishment, stretched at full length upon mats sprinkled with flowers and sheets of paper, and in this singular attitude making every touch of his brush produce the true effect.

As we approach the central bridge of the district the crowd increases, and on both sides of the street the shops give place to popular restaurants, to pastry-shops of rice and millet, and the sale of tea and hot saki. Here we are in the neighborhood of the great fish-market. The canal is covered with boats, which land fresh sea-fish and the product of the rivers, the fish of the polar currents and those of the equatorial stream, tortoises of the bay of Nipon, deformed polypi, and fantastic crustacea. Siebold counted, in this market-place, seventy different varieties of fish, crabs, and mollusks, and twenty-six kinds of mussels and other shell-fish.

The stalls, roughly erected near the landing-place, are besieged by purveyors who come to purchase at the auctions. Amid the tumultuous throngs vigorous arms are seen lifting the heavy baskets and emptying them into the lacquered boxes of the coolies ; from time to time the crowd gives way to let two coolies pass, carrying a porpoise, a dolphin, or a shark, suspended by cords to a bamboo across their shoulders. The Japanese boil the flesh of these animals ; they even salt down the blubber of whales.

Towards the middle of the day, during the hot season, the streets of Yedo become deserted ; the shores of the

canals are lined with empty boats, fastened to the piles. No clamor, no noise comes up from the depths of the great city. If we still distinguish, here and there, either a traveller or a couple of pilgrims, hurrying along to reach their mid-day resting-place, they walk in silence, with bowed heads and eyes fatigued with the glare of the road. The rays of the sun make broad luminous zones, whereon are drawn the outlines of the shadows which fall from broad roofs upon the flag-stones of the pavements, or from centenary trees upon the turf of the gardens.

The population of the streets and canals is withdrawn within the hostelries or private dwellings, where, in the remote basement-rooms, they enjoy the principal meal of the day, and then give two or three hours to sleep. In pursuing our route from street to street, along the shaded sidewalks, the eye looks through the openings between the screens, detects the household interiors, and catches glimpses of picturesque groups of men, women, and children, squatted around their simple dinner.

The table-cloth, made of woven straw, is spread upon the floor matting. In the centre is placed a great bowl of lacquered wood, containing rice, which is the basis of food with all classes of Japanese society. The usual manner of preparing it is to place it in a small keg of very light wood, which is then dropped into a kettle of boiling water. Each guest attacks the common supply, taking as much rice as will fill and heap a large porcelain bowl, which he sets to his lips, eating without the use of chop-sticks until the supply is nearly exhausted, when he adds to the rice some pieces of fish, crabs, or fowls, taken from the dish appropriated to animal food. The meats are seasoned with sea-salt, pepper, and soy, a very pungent sauce produced by the fermentation of a variety of black beans. Soft or hard eggs, cooked vegetables, such as turnips, carrots, sweet

potatoes, pickles made of sliced bamboo sprouts, and a salad made of the bulbous roots of the lotus, complete the bill of fare of an ordinary Japanese dinner.

Tea and saki are necessary accompaniments, both being generally taken hot and without sugar. I have never examined the beautiful utensils of a Japanese meal,—their bowls, cups, saucers, boxes, wooden plates, their porcelain urns, cups, and flagons, their teapots of glazed porous earthenware; and I have never watched the guests at the table, with the grace of their movements and the dexterity of their small and elegant hands, without fancying them to be a company of large children, playing at housekeeping, and eating for amusement rather than to satisfy their appetites. The diseases resulting from excess at the table or an unwholesome diet are generally unknown; but the immoderate use of their national drink frequently gives rise to serious disorders. I myself saw more than one case of delirium tremens.

---

## LIFE AND SCENERY IN MONGOLIA.

EVARISTE R. HUC.

[To the selections already made from the curious and often amusing work of Abbé Huc, we add a third, descriptive of his journey in Mongolia, of which he gives a vivid and interesting account, with numerous significant suggestions concerning the character of the Chinese and Tartars.]

THE day had scarcely dawned when we were again on foot; but, before setting off, we had to effect a metamorphosis in our costume. The missionaries who reside in China all wear the dress of the Chinese merchants, and have nothing in their costume to mark their religious character.

This costume, it appears to us, has been in some measure an obstacle to the success of their missions. For among the Tartars a "*black man*," that is, a secular person, who undertakes to speak of religion, excites only contempt. Religion they consider as an affair belonging exclusively to the Lamas. We resolved, therefore, to adopt the costume worn on ordinary occasions by the Lamas of Tibet; namely, a long yellow robe fastened by a red girdle, and five gilt buttons, with a violet velvet collar, and a yellow cap surmounted by a red rosette. We also thought it expedient from this time to give up the use of wine and tobacco, and when the host brought us a smoking urn full of the hot wine so much in favor among the Chinese, we signified to him that we were about to change our modes of life as well as our dress. "You know," we added, laughing, "that good Lamas abstain from smoking and drinking." But our Chinese friends regarded us with compassion, and evidently thought we were about to perish of privation.

After leaving this inn we may be considered to have fairly commenced our pilgrimage, and the only companion of our wayfaring for the future was to be the camel-driver, Samdadchiemba. This young man was neither a Chinese, a Tartar, nor a Tibetan, but a little of all three, a Dchia-hour. At the first glance it was easy to perceive his Mongol origin; he had a deeply-bronzed complexion; a great mouth, cut in a straight line; and a large nose insolently turned up, that gave to his whole physiognomy a disdainful aspect. When he looked at you with his little eyes twinkling between lids entirely without eyelashes, and with the skin of his forehead wrinkled up, the feeling he inspired was something between confidence and fear. His life had been spent in rather a vagabond manner, in rambling, sometimes about the Chinese towns and sometimes

in the deserts of Tartary,—for he had run away at the age of eleven from a Lama college, to escape the excessive corrections of his master. This mode of life had of course not tended much to polish the natural asperity of his character, and his intellect was entirely uncultivated; but his muscular strength was immense, and he was not a little proud of it. After having been instructed and baptized by M. Gabet [Huc's companion on this journey], he had wished to attach himself to the service of the missionaries, and the journey we were about to undertake was precisely in harmony with his rambling and adventurous humor.

[The mountain of Sainoula, which they soon crossed, is infested with robbers, whose peculiar civility Huc thus describes:]

The robbers of these countries are in general remarkable for the politeness with which they flavor their address. They do not put a pistol to your head, and cry, roughly, "Your money or your life!" but they say, in the most courteous tone, "My eldest brother, I am weary of walking on foot. Be so good as to lend me your horse;" or, "I am without money,—will you not lend me your purse?" or, "It is very cold to-day,—be kind enough to lend me your coat." If the eldest brother be charitable enough to comply, he receives thanks; if not, the request is enforced by two or three blows of the cudgel, or, if that is not sufficient, recourse is had to the sabre.

The sun was about to set, and we were still on the immense plateau which forms the summit of the mountain, and whence you can obtain an extensive view over the plains of Tartary, and the tents of the Mongols ranged in the form of an amphitheatre on the declivities of the hills. The imperial forest extends from north to south for three hundred miles, and nearly eighty from east to west, and it has been used as a hunting-ground by many successive

emperors of China; but, for about twenty-seven years past, these huntings have been discontinued, and not only stags and wild boars, but also bears, panthers, wolves, and tigers, abound in it. Woe to the wood-cutter or the hunter who should venture alone into its recesses. Those who have done so have disappeared without leaving a vestige behind them.

[Huc tells an amusing story of some Mongol horsemen, who, taking them to be Lamas, dismounted and prostrated themselves at the entrance to their tent.]

"Men of prayer," said they, with much apparent emotion, "we come to beg you to draw a horoscope. Two horses have been stolen from us to-day, and we have vainly sought to discover the thieves. O men, whose power and knowledge are without bounds, teach us how we may find them!" "My brethren," we replied, "we are not Lamas of Buddha; we do not believe in horoscopes; to pretend to such knowledge is false and deceitful!" The poor Tartars redoubled their solicitations; but when they saw that our resolution could not be shaken, they remounted their horses and returned to the mountains.

Samdadchiemba, during this conversation, had remained crouched in a corner by the fire, holding in both hands a bowl of tea, which he never once took from his lips. At length, as they were taking their departure, he knitted his brows, rose from his seat abruptly, and went to the door of the tent. The Tartars were already at a considerable distance; but he uttered a loud shout, and made gestures with his hands to induce them to come back. Thinking, probably, that we had changed our minds, and would consent to draw the horoscope, they returned; but as soon as they came within hail, Samdadchiemba addressed them:

"My Mongol brothers," he said, "in future be more pru-

dent; take better care of your animals and they will not be stolen. Remember these words, for they are worth more than all the horoscopes in the world." After having finished this speech, he marched gravely back to his tent, and sat down again to his tea. At first we were vexed with him; but, as the Tartars did not appear angry, we ended with laughing.

On the following day the numerous Tartars and Chinese travellers whom we met on the way were a sign to us that we were approaching the large town of Tolon-Noor; and already we could see before us, glittering in the sun, the gilded roofs of the two magnificent lama convents to the north of the town.

Two motives had induced us to visit Tolon-Noor. We wished, in the first place, to complete our stock of travelling utensils; and we also considered it desirable to place ourselves in relation with the lamas of the country, and obtain information concerning some important points in Tartary; and in pursuit of these objects we had to traverse almost every quarter of the town. Tolon-Noor is not a walled town, but a vast agglomeration of ugly and ill-arranged houses, and in the middle of its narrow and tortuous streets you see open mud-holes and sewers; and while the foot passengers walk in single file along the slippery pavement, mules, camels, and carts make their way through the deep, black, foul-smelling mud.

Often enough the wheeled carriages upset; and then it is impossible to describe the confusion that takes place in these miserable streets. Goods are either stolen by the thieves who watch for such opportunities, or lost in the mud, and the animals are not infrequently suffocated. But notwithstanding the few attractions of Tolon-Noor, the sterility of its environs, the extreme cold of its winter, and the suffocating heat of its summers, its population is im-



mense, and its commerce prodigious. Russian goods find their way here by way of Kiakta; the Tartars are constantly bringing vast herds of oxen, camels, and horses, and taking back tobacco, linen, and brick-tea. This perpetual coming and going of strangers; the hawkers running about with their wares; the traders endeavoring to entice customers into their shops; the lamas, in their showy dresses of scarlet and yellow, endeavoring to attract attention by the skill with which they manage their fiery horses in the most difficult passes,—all these things give the streets a very animated appearance. After having maturely considered the information we had obtained, we determined to direct our course towards the west, and quitted Tolon-Noor on the 1st of October.

We had not been more than an hour on our way on the following day when we heard behind us a confused noise as of a number of men and horses, and turning our heads perceived a numerous caravan advancing towards us at a rapid pace. We were soon overtaken by three horsemen, and one of them, whom we recognized by his costume for a Tartar mandarin, roared out to us in a deafening voice, "Lord Lamas, where is your country?"

"We are from the sky of the west."

"Across what countries have you passed your beneficent shadows?"

"We come from the town of Tolon-Noor."

"Has peace accompanied your route?"

"So far we have journeyed happily,—and you—are you at peace? What is your country?"

"We are Khalkas, from the kingdom of Mourguevan."

"Has the rain been abundant? Are your flocks in prosperity?"

"All is at peace in our pastures. Whither is your caravan proceeding?"

"We are going to bow our heads before the Five Towers."

During this short conversation the rest of the troop had come up. We were near a brook, the banks of which were bordered with bushes, and the chief of the caravan gave orders to halt, and immediately the camels arriving in a file described a circle, into the midst of which was drawn a vehicle on four wheels.

"*Sok! Sok!*" cried the camel-drivers, and the camels, obedient to the order, lay down all at once as if struck by the same blow. Then, while a multitude of tents rose suddenly, as if by enchantment, along the banks of the brook, two mandarins, decorated with the blue ball, approached the carriage, opened the door, and immediately we saw descending from it a Tartar woman, clothed in a long robe of green silk.

It was the queen of the country of the Khalkas, who was going on a pilgrimage to the famous lama convent of the Five Towers, in the Chinese province of Chan-Si. Immediately on perceiving us, she saluted us by raising her two hands, and said, "My lord Lamas, we are going to encamp here. Is the place fortunate?" "Royal pilgrim of Mourguevan," we replied, "you can here light the fire of your hearth in peace. For us, we are about to continue our route, for the sun was already high when we folded our tent."

[That evening they were visited by two Tartars in their encampment, from one of whom they received some rather remarkable information.]

While we ate our frugal meal, I observed that one of the Tartars was the object of particular attention to the other; and on inquiry we found that the superior had had two years before the honor of serving in the war against the

“rebels of the South,”—that is, the English,—having marched with the banners of Tchakar. He had, however, never been called upon to fight, for the *Holy Master* (the Emperor of China) had, in his immense mercy, granted peace to the rebels soon after, and the Tartar troops had been sent back to their flocks and herds. He had been told, however, by the Chinese, what kind of people, or monsters rather, these English were; they lived in the water like fish, and when you least expected it they would rise to the surface and cast at you fiery gourds. Then, as soon as you bend your bow to send an arrow at them, they plunge into the water like frogs. . . .

Tchakar, a Mongol word signifying border-country, lies to the north of the great wall of China, and east of Toumet. It is about four hundred and fifty miles in length and three hundred in breadth, and its inhabitants are all soldiers of the Emperor of China, and receive annually a certain sum regulated according to their titles. It is divided in eight banners, distinguished by their color,—blue, red, white, and yellow, and bluish, reddish, whitish, and yellowish. Each banner has a separate territory, and possesses a kind of tribunal which takes cognizance of its affairs, and a chief called *Ou-Gourdha*; and from among these eight ou-gourdhass a governor general is chosen. Tchakar is, in fact, nothing but a vast camp; and in order that the army shall be at all times in readiness to march, the Tartars are prohibited under severe penalties from cultivating the ground. They are required to live on their pay and the produce of their flocks. . . .

We had gone nearly three days' march when we came to an imposing and majestic antiquity. It was a great forsaken city, with battlement ramparts, watch-towers, four great gates directed to the four cardinal points, all in perfect preservation, but all sunk three parts into the earth,

and covered with thick turf. Since the abandonment of the city, the earth around it has risen to that extent.

We entered the city with solemn emotion ; there were no ruins to be seen, but only the form of a large and fine town, half buried and enveloped in grass as in a funeral shroud. The inequalities of the ground still seem to point out the direction of streets and the principal buildings ; but the only human being we saw was a young Mongol shepherd, who, seated on a mound, was silently smoking his pipe, while his goats grazed on the deserted ramparts around him. Similar remains of cities are not infrequently to be met with in the deserts of Mongolia, but their history is buried in oblivion. Probably, however, they do not date beyond the thirteenth century ; for it is known that at this epoch the Mongols had made themselves masters of the Chinese Empire, and, according to the Chinese historians, numerous and flourishing towns existed at that time in Northern Tartary. The Tartars could give no information concerning this interesting ruin, but merely say that they call it the old town. . . .

In the deserts of Tartary, Mongols are frequently met with carrying on their shoulders the bones of their kindred, and journeying in caravans to the Five Towers, there to purchase, almost at its weight in gold, a few feet of earth whereon to erect a mausoleum. Some of them undertake a journey of a whole year's duration, and of excessive hardship, to reach this holy spot.

The Tartar sovereigns are sometimes interred in a manner which appears the very height of extravagance and barbarism ; the royal corpse is placed in an edifice of brick, adorned with stone images of men, lions, tigers, elephants, and divers subjects from the Buddhist mythology. With the illustrious defunct they inter, in a large vault in the centre of the building, considerable sums in gold and sil-

ver, precious stones, and costly habits. These monstrous interments frequently cost the lives of a number of slaves: children of both sexes distinguished for their beauty are taken, and compelled to swallow mercury until they are suffocated; by this means, it is asserted, the color and freshness of the victims is preserved so well that they appear alive. They are then ranged standing round the corpse of their master to serve him as in life. They hold in their hands the pipe, fan, the little vial of snuff, and the other numerous baubles of Tartar royalty.

To guard these buried treasures there is placed in the vault a kind of bow, constructed to discharge a number of arrows one after the other. This bow, or rather these bows, are bound together, and the arrows fixed. This species of infernal machine is so placed that the act of opening the door of the vault discharges the first arrow, the discharge of the first releases the second, and so on to the last. The bow-makers keep these murderous machines all ready prepared, and the Chinese sometimes purchase them to guard their houses in their absence.

[This certainly sounds like one of the veracious tales of the Arabian Nights' Entertainments, and it needs some degree of faith to accept it verbatim. M. Huc goes on to describe the country of Western Toumet, which was next reached, and which, unlike Mongolia in general, was an agricultural district, the people comfortable and well-to-do. Here they made a short stay in the city of *Koui-Noa-Tchen*, or the "Blue Town," where they put up at a tavern with the following sign: "Hotel of the Three Perfections; Lodging for Travellers on Horse or Camel; All sorts of business negotiated with unfailing success,"—an example of grandiloquence which has many counterparts in China. Huc thus describes this city:]

The commercial importance enjoyed by the Blue Town arises from the lama convents, whose celebrity attracts hither Mongols from the most distant parts: hence the commerce is almost exclusively Tartar. The Mongols

bring great herds of oxen, horses, camels, and sheep; they also sell here skins, mushrooms, and salt, the only produce of the desert of Tartary; and they take in return brick-tea, clothes, saddles for their horses, sticks of incense to burn before their idols, oatmeal, millet, and some domestic utensils. Koukon-Khoton is also famous for its camel trade. The place of sale is a vast square, into which run all the principal streets of the town. Elevations shelving on one side, from one end of the square to the other, give this market the appearance of a field deeply furrowed. The camels are placed in a line, so that their forefeet rest on these elevations, and this elevation displays, and in a manner increases, the stature of the animals, already so gigantic. It would be difficult to describe the confusion and uproar which prevails in this market. To the cries of the buyers and sellers who are quarrelling or talking, as people talk when a revolt is at its height, are joined the long groans of the poor camels, whose noses are incessantly tweaked to try their address in kneeling or rising.

When we were about to set out, we summoned the master of the hotel, according to custom, to settle our account; and we calculated that, for three men and six animals for four days, we should have to pay at least two ounces of silver. But we had the agreeable surprise of hearing him say, "My lord Lamas, let us not make any reckoning. Put three hundred sapecks (thirty cents) into the chest, and let that suffice. My house," added he, "is recently established, and I wish to obtain for it a good reputation. Since you are from a distant country, I wish you to tell your illustrious compatriots that my hotel is worthy of their confidence." "We will certainly speak of your disinterestedness," we replied, "and our countrymen, when they have occasion to visit the Blue Town, will not fail to stop at the Hotel of the Three Perfections."

[We cannot follow further this entertaining journey through Mongolia, and must conclude with M. Huc's remarks when they finally left that country and entered China proper.]

The general aspect of Mongolia is wild and gloomy; never is the eye relieved by the charm and variety of a landscape. The monotony of the steppes is broken only by ravines, great fissures, and stony, sterile hills. Towards the north, in the country of the Khalkas, nature appears more animated; the summits of the mountains are crowned by forests, and the rich pasturage of the plains is watered by numerous rivers; but during the long season of winter the earth is buried under a thick covering of snow. From the side of the Great Wall, Chinese industry glides like a serpent into the desert. Towns begin to rise on all sides; the "Land of Grass" is being gradually covered by crops, and the Mongol shepherds are by degrees driven back to the north by the encroachments of agriculture.

The sandy plains occupy perhaps the greater part of Mongolia, and in these not a tree is to be seen; short, brittle grass makes its way with difficulty through the barren soil, and creeping thorns and some scanty tufts of heath form the only vegetation, the sole pasturage, of Gobi. Water is extremely scarce, being only found in deep wells dug for the use of travellers who are obliged to cross this miserable region.



## SCENES FROM PASTORAL LIFE AMONG THE KIRGHIS NOMADS.

THOMAS W. ATKINSON.

[Whoever would know the characteristic details of life in Siberia and on the steppes must read the works of Thomas Witleam Atkinson, "Oriental and Western Siberia" and "Travels in the Region of the Upper and Lower Amoor." He was one of the first travellers to penetrate these regions, in which he spent seven years, and whose characteristics he has picturesquely described. Mr. Atkinson was of English origin: born in Yorkshire in 1799; died, 1861. We select from "The Upper and Lower Amoor" a spirited description of one of the annual events in the life of the pastoral Kirghis of the Asiatic steppes.]

IN the morning I beheld a scene that can only be witnessed in these pastoral regions. The aoul [nomad encampment] consisted of thirteen yourts [tents], in which there were twenty-nine men, thirty-four women, and twenty-six children. They had encamped here only two days before, and the remainder of the tribe were far to the northward. The yourts were put up in a temporary manner, and the voilocks [felt coverings of the yourts] were hanging in picturesque folds. Near us were several other aouls. At a short distance in front of the yourt Kairan was seated on the ground, with several other chiefs around him, in deep consultation. Not far from them the women were at their morning's occupation, milking their cows, sheep, and goats, and the men were preparing to drive the herds to their pastures. When the latter began to move off, the plain around seemed one mass of living animals; while Kirghis, dressed in their gay costumes, and mounted on spirited horses, were galloping to and fro, separating their

different charges. More than thirty-five thousand animals were in motion.

Having ascended one of the numerous tumuli, that afforded a clear view over the vast steppe, I observed long lines of dark objects extending far into the distance. These were horses, oxen, and camels, belonging to other tribes, now on their march towards the pass. In every direction great herds of cattle could be seen,—some so far away that they appeared like specks on these interminable plains. To the south the snowy peaks of the Ac-tan were glittering in the sun, while the lower ranges of the Ala-tan were lit up, showing their varied colors in all their splendor. My attention was riveted to the scene, as it forcibly suggested the exodus from Egypt.

While thus employed, Kairan and the chiefs broke up their council, ascended the tumulus, and told me that three Kirghis had returned from the mountains, whither they had been to examine the upper passes; a necessary precaution to ascertain if the herds could cross the high ridge and descend into the valleys beyond. They had reported favorably, and the intelligence had already been sent on into the steppe to the other Kirghis, by whom it would be communicated from one tribe to another, and set the whole on the march.

[What was in view was the annual summer migration of the nomad tribes to the high mountain valleys, to take advantage of the short season of pasturage in that elevated region. Atkinson and his attendants set out in advance.]

My old guide through the great gorge was in ecstasies as we bounded over the plain. He obtained a long lance from one of the men, and showed me how well he could wield it. Having pushed his horse in advance, he put him into a gallop, turning the lance round his head on his

fingers; in an instant he brought it down to the side of his horse, placing the butt in the stirrup, and levelling the weapon for a charge. Giving a wild shriek, he bent low in his saddle and went off at full speed. He had his horse in perfect command, and, throwing him on his haunches, turned suddenly round, and, with lance levelled, charged towards me, passing close by my side. My Cossacks, who could use the weapon well, were delighted with his dexterity. It was evident that his leader, Kinsara, had not failed to drill his men. Indeed, I was assured that it was their proficiency in the use of the lance and battle-axe that had made them so formidable among the Asiatic tribes. If these men are ever trained under good officers, they will become some of the best irregular cavalry in the world, unequalled for long and rapid marches. They possess all the qualities that made the reputation of the wild hordes led on by Genghis Khan.

As we travelled along vast herds of cattle were seen in every direction, all drawing towards the mountains, and after a ride of nearly six hours we reached the aoul of our friends. When my people saw us they were greatly delighted, and my host Djani-bek seemed pleased to see me again.

[On the next day Atkinson rode on over the plain, and reached an aoul whose chief was seated at the door of his tent, listening to his family bard, who was singing the great deeds of his race.]

The family group, the glowing sky, and the vast plain with the thousands of animals scattered over it, formed a charming picture. Homer was never listened to with more attention than was this shepherd-poet, while singing the traditions of the ancestors of his tribe. Whatever power the old Greek possessed over the minds of his audience was equalled by that of the bard before me. When he sang of

the mountain scenes around, the pastoral habits of the people, their flocks and herds, the faces of his hearers were calm, and they sat unmoved. But when he began to recite the warlike deeds of their race their eyes flashed with delight; as he proceeded they were worked up into a passion, and some grasped their battle-axes and sprang to their feet in a state of frenzy. Then followed a mournful strain, telling of the death of a chief, when all excitement ceased, and every one listened with deep attention. Such was the sway this unlettered bard had over the minds of his wild comrades.

As I sat watching the group, I saw there were many sturdy fellows sitting round their aged chief, all of whom appeared quiet and calm; but a word from him would rouse their passions and change the scene into one of the wildest excitement. The uplifting of his battle-axe would send them on a plundering expedition, when they would spare neither age nor sex. If the baranta was a successful one, the poet would add one more stanza to his song. I listened long to these wild strains, which delayed my departure till the sun was casting his last rays over the steppe. Nor was it without reluctance that I said "amanbul" to the old chief, mounted my horse, and galloped over the plain. . . .

When the first pale yellowish streaks were seen breaking over the steppe [the next morning], and extending in narrow lines along the horizon, each few minutes added light and depth to their color, till they changed through all the shades of orange to a deep crimson, far more brilliant than the ruby. Still, the plain was a dark purple-gray, and all objects on it were indistinct and almost lost in gloom. As one group of cattle after another rose out of the dusky vapor that shrouded the earth, they appeared magnified, which caused the head and neck of the camels

to assume the proportions of some mighty antediluvian monster stalking over the plain, while the huge forms of the other creatures aided in the illusion. Gradually the whole scene changed, and the commotion in the aoul began; the bulls were up and bellowing, as if calling and marshalling their herds together for the march. Turning in another direction, the horses were seen with their heads thrown aloft and snorting; others were plunging and kicking furiously; while the sheep and goats, with their kids and lambs, seemed just rising into existence. A little later, as the sun rose, the plain was seen covered far and wide with myriads of living animals.

Soon after daylight long lines of camels and horses were seen wending their way in a southwesterly direction, followed by herds of oxen. The sheep and goats were innumerable; they stretched over miles of country, and were following slowly in the rear. With each herd and flock there were a number of Kirghis mounted on good horses; these, galloping to and fro, added greatly to the general effect.

At the aoul women in their best attire were taking down the yourts and securing them on camels. Their household goods were being packed up by the girls and boys, after which they were loaded on camels, bulls, and cows. These children of the steppe were not long in making their preparations to depart in search of new homes. In less than three hours all were ready, when we sprung into our saddles and rode away.

The camels formed a most curious portion of the spectacle, with the willow framework of the yourts hanging from their saddles, giving them the appearance of huge animals with wings just expanding for a flight. The poor creatures had burdens far larger than themselves, under which they evidently walked with difficulty. Then fol-

lowed a string of bulls with bales of Bokharian carpets slung over their saddles, and boxes and other household utensils placed above. Then a refractory bull was seen similarly loaded, with the large iron caldron on the top. The furious beast went rushing on; presently the straps gave way, and the caldron went rolling down the declivity. Seeing this, he became frantic, leaping and plunging, and at each bound a part of his load was left behind. As the bales rolled over he charged at them vigorously, and soon got rid of all his incumbrances. He now rushed at every horseman who happened to be in his course, and several had narrow escapes; at last he took refuge among the herd. The koumis-bag, with its contents, so precious to a Kirghis, was secured on a grave and careful bull, who moved along with stately dignity.

After these a number of cows joined in the procession, having two leathern bags secured on their backs, with a young child sitting in each, watching the crowd of animals as they bounded past. Mingled in this throng were women dressed in their rich Chinese silk costumes, some crimson, others yellow, red, and green, and the elder females in black velvet kalats. A few of the young girls had fox-skin caps, and others silk caps, richly embroidered in various colors. The matrons wore white calico head-gear, embroidered with red, hanging down over their shoulders like hoods. Many were mounted on wild steeds, which they sat and managed with extraordinary ease and skill. Girls and boys were riding various animals according to their ages; some of the elder ones horses, others young bulls, and some were even mounted on calves, having voilock boots secured to the saddles, into which the young urchins inserted their legs, guiding the beast by a thong secured to his nose. This was a cavalcade to be seen only in those regions.

A ride over the plain of somewhat more than two hours brought us to the foot of the mountains; we crossed a low hill and beheld the entrance to the pass, which appeared filled with a mass of animals moving slowly onward. Turning towards the north, vast herds of cattle were seen extending as far as my vision could reach, marching from various points in the steppe towards their pastures in the mountains; and through this pass the enormous multitude must ascend. Having stood a short time watching the living tide roll on, I rode into the valley and joined the moving mass.

The mouth of the pass was about three hundred yards wide, between grassy slopes, up which it was impossible for either man or animal to climb. The whole width, as far as I could see, was filled with camels, horses, and oxen; Kirghis were riding among them, shouting and using their whips on any refractory brute that came within their reach. At length we plunged into a herd of horses, with camels in front and bulls and oxen in our rear. We presently passed the grassy slopes to where the gorge narrowed to about one hundred yards in width, with precipices rising up on each side to the height of six hundred or seven hundred feet. From this mob of quadrupeds there was no escape on either side, and to turn back was utterly impossible, as we were now wedged in among wild horses. These brutes showed every disposition to kick, but, fortunately for us, without the power, the space for each animal being too limited. This did not, however, prevent them using their teeth, and it required great vigilance and constant use of the whip to pass unscathed.

As we rode on the scene became fearfully grand: the precipices increased in height at every hundred yards we advanced. In one place there were overhanging crags nine hundred feet above us, split and rent into fragments,



ready apparently to topple over at the slightest impulse, while higher in the pass the scenery became more savage. Then we had the shouting of men, the cry of the camels, the shrieks and snorting of horses when bitten by their neighbors, with the bellowing of the bulls and oxen in our rear, —a wonderfully savage chorus, heightened by the echoes resounding from crag to crag, accompanied by a constant drone in the distant bleating of an immense multitude of sheep.

The bottom of the gorge ascended rapidly, which enabled me to look back, when I saw, about fifty paces in our rear, a phalanx of bulls which no man would dare to face,—even the Kirghis kept clear of these. They came steadily on, but the horses near them plunged and reared when the sharp horns gored their haunches. Another danger presently beset us. The Kirghis said that a little farther on the bed of the gorge was strewn with fallen rocks and small stones, and that riding over these would require great care, for if one of our steeds fell it would be fatal to both horse and rider. Shortly we came to a recess in the precipice, and here two children mounted on young bulls had taken refuge: having escaped from the crowd of animals, they had clambered up among the rocks, and the four were looking down at the passing mass in perfect calm. Poor creatures, it was impossible to reach them or afford them the least aid; the only thing that could be done was to urge them to remain still where they were.

The rough ground that had been mentioned by the Kirghis was now distinctly seen by the motion of the animals before us. Hitherto the stream of heads and backs had run smoothly on; now, however, it became a rapid, where heads and tails were tossed aloft in quick succession. We were approaching some jutting masses that formed a bend in the gorge. On reaching these a terrific scene burst upon

us. The pass was narrowed by huge blocks fallen from above, one of which was thirty-five to forty feet high and somewhat more in width, standing about twenty paces from the foot of the rocks, and about two hundred yards from us. The prospect was fearful, for as we rode on the horses were being wedged more closely together between the frowning cliffs. All looked with anxiety at the pent-up tide of animals struggling onward, till they burst over the rocky barrier.

Each few minutes brought us nearer the danger; not a word was spoken, but every eye was fixed on the animals bounding over the rocks. Several fell, uttering a shriek, and were seen no more. Instinct seemed to warn the animals of their impending danger; they were, however, forced along by those behind, nor was it possible for us to see the ground over which we were riding. At length we came among the crowd of leaping horses; our own made three or four bounds, and the dreaded spot was passed. The gorge opened out wider; still it was filled with camels and horses, moving slowly onward. To stop and look back was impossible, as the living stream came rushing on. Although accidents are often fatal to the people on this spot, and many animals belonging to each tribe are killed on their journey to and from the mountains, such is the apathy of these Asiatics that they never think of removing a single stone. After the herds have passed, whatever remains of camel, horse, or other animal is gathered up, and feasted on by the people.

We had been more than four hours ascending this mountain gorge when we reached a part less abrupt. Here we got out of the throng, and, guided by a Kirghis, began to ascend a narrow ravine that brought us to some elevated rocks, from which we had a view into the gorge, where we saw the vast herds still struggling on. My guide said

that it would take them three hours to reach the head of the pass. Having looked down on this singular scene for a short time, I mounted my horse, and shortly reached the plateau. From this point a ride of about three miles brought me to the top of the gorge, and here I found a stream of camels and horses pouring towards the high plain.

We had reached a point just beneath the snow line, about seven thousand feet above the sea, and presently it began to rain, while the higher ridges became shrouded in vapor. At a short distance from the head of the pass some Kirghis had pitched their yourts. Here we sought shelter from the pelting storm, and dined, remaining a couple of hours, in the vain hope that the shower would cease. During this time the stream of countless animals still pressed on, attended by the wet and shivering herdsmen, bent on reaching a sheltered valley, in which to pass the night.

[Finding that the rain showed no sign of ceasing, the travellers pushed on through a wind that now became a gale. The fog made their route very dangerous, and it was after passing many perils of precipices that they found a Kirghis encampment, in which to pass the night. The next morning Atkinson ascended a ridge which bounded their little valley on the north.]

When I had gained the summit, a prospect opened out on the north that greatly astonished me. I was standing on some rocky pinnacles, rising over a precipice not less than fifteen hundred feet deep, from which it appeared possible to send a rifle-ball into the gorge we had ascended yesterday; but the purity of the atmosphere in these regions renders distance most deceptive, as I have often proved at the cost of a long and solitary ride.

From my present elevated position the steppe appeared boundless, and extending till earth and sky were blended in misty air. Notwithstanding the vast number of cattle

that ascended yesterday, immense herds were scattered over the plain in all directions, preparing to ascend the pass. Wishing to see something of the route that had led me to this spot, I proceeded along the ridge, following our track for about half a mile, when I beheld the dangers we had escaped. We had ridden along the brink of a great precipice, obscured by the fog. I found the spot over which the camel of our friends had fallen, and on looking down, observed a party of four wolves at breakfast.

[From the elevated region reached by the herds descent was made into the mountain valleys where pasturage was to be had. The descent had not been made without loss, several camels and horses having fallen over precipices in the fog.]

Proceeding onward, along the edge of some high cliffs, we beheld at every few hundred paces groups of men collecting the dead cattle. Unfortunately these were not the worst accidents, for I was afterwards informed that several people had been killed, which made me reflect on our escape through such dangers. After riding about ten miles we reached the valley, and just at dusk arrived at the Kirghis aoul, where the chief received me kindly. I had now reached their summer pastures, at the foot of the snowy peaks of the Ac-tan, in Chinese Tartary, and about seven thousand feet above the level of the sea. This is the highest point at which the Kirghis obtain food for their cattle. They remain here a month or five weeks, and then gradually descend, eating up the different pastures on their way back to the steppe, which they usually reach about the first week in September.

[In conclusion of this selection, we may return with Atkinson to the steppe at a later point in his narrative, and give his description of one of the characteristic wonders of the desert.]

Many of my readers know nothing practically of the mirage, and thus they can neither appreciate the beauty of this deception, nor estimate the disappointment it creates. I fear my pencil fails in rendering its magical effect, and my pen cannot give an adequate idea of its tantalizing power on the thirsty traveller. It has, however, often fallen to my lot to witness it, when an apparent lake stretched out before me, tempting both man and animal to rush on and slake their burning thirst. Even after years of experience I have been deceived by this phenomenon, so real has it appeared, and many of its peculiar and magical effects have been preserved. Sometimes vast cities seemed rising on the plains, in which a multitude of towers, spires, domes, and columns were grouped together with a picturesque effect that neither poet nor painter could depict. And these were reflected in the deceptive fluid with all the distinctness of a mirror; at times a slight breeze seemed to ruffle the placid surface, destroying the forms for a few minutes, and then they reappeared.

Sometimes I have been almost induced to believe that vast tropical forests were before me, where palms of gigantic size, with their graceful foliage, overtopped every other tree, and that beyond were mountain crests, giving a reality to the scene that caused me for the moment to doubt its being a phantom. At last I have passed over the spot where the lake, the mighty city, and the vast forest had appeared, and found nothing but small bushes and tufts of grass growing on the steppe.

## ACROSS THE STEPPES TO KHIVA.

FREDERICK BURNABY.

[Captain Fred Burnaby's "Ride to Khiva" is one of the most spirited records extant descriptive of the steppe region of Russia and Asia. The writer, born at Bedford, England, in 1842, produced, in addition to the work named, "On Horseback through Asia Minor," "A Ride across the Channel," and other works. He was killed in the battle near Aboo Klea, in Nubia, in 1885. The selection here given takes him up in his winter journey shortly after he had left Kasala, in Asiatic Russia.]

A LITTLE way from the town we came upon hundreds of cotton-bales lying scattered along the path. No one was left in charge of them, and the huge bundles seemed at the disposal of any would-be thief. It appeared they had been brought from Bokhara. The camel-drivers had gone on to Kasala to feast with their friends in that town, but would return when the festival was over, and then continue the journey to Orenburg. In the mean time their master's property was left in the steppe, this affording a striking proof of the happy-go-lucky disposition of the Tartar camel-drivers.

"Will not some of the cotton be stolen?" I inquired of Nazar.

"If God pleases," was the pious answer.

The Mohammedans invariably throw upon the Deity the responsibility for any mischance that may occur through their own negligence, the doctrine of *fatalism* thus covering a multitude of sins.

I subsequently discovered that the only way to impart a little circumspection to my careless camel-driver when, after breaking my boxes, he excused himself on the ground

that the Almighty had been the cause of the disaster, was to administer to the delinquent a slight chastisement. This having been inflicted, I exclaimed, "Brother, it was the will of God. You must not complain. It was your destiny to break my property, and mine to beat you. We neither of us could help it, praise be to Allah."

This method of dealing with my party had a capital effect upon them, and much more care was afterwards taken in loading and unloading the camels.

Kasala now lay far in our wake, and naught could be seen save an endless white expanse. A gale came on. The wind howled and whistled, billowing before it broad waves of snow. Our eyes began to run, and the eyeballs to ache; the constant glare and cutting breeze half blinded us as we rode. The horses waded heavily through the piled-up ridges. The poor beasts suffered like ourselves: their eyes were incrustated with frozen tears, and it was as much as we could do to urge them forward. . . .

After marching for about five hours, the guide asked me to halt the caravan. The sun was fast disappearing in the west, as we had started late; and as it is always as well to make a short journey on the first day, in order to see how the saddles fit, and if the luggage has been well adjusted on the camels, I consented, but with the express stipulation that we must strike our camp and start again at twelve that night.

Camels will only feed in the daytime, and the best plan is to march them as much as possible during the night. They walk very slowly, and, as a rule, cannot go more than two miles and a third an hour. This is the average rate of a caravan; however, they walk a little faster at night than during the day, so it is always as well to halt at sunset and start at midnight, unloading the camels for about two hours in the day to feed. By this means the



traveller ought to get sixteen hours per day steady work from his caravan, and march at least thirty-seven miles.

All this time the Turkoman driver and guide were engaged in putting up the *kibitka*. This was intended to screen us from the bitterly cold wind, which, coming straight from the east, whistled across the desert, unchecked by mountain or forest.

The *kibitkas* are very simple in their construction. I will endeavor briefly to describe them. Imagine a bundle of sticks, each five feet three inches in length and an inch in diameter; these are connected with each other by means of some cross-sticks, through the ends of which holes are bored and leather thongs passed. This allows plenty of room for all the sticks to open out freely; they then form a complete circle about twelve feet in diameter and five feet three in height. They do not require any forcing into the ground, for the circular shape keeps them steady.

When this is done, a thick piece of *cashmar*, or cloth made of sheep's wool, is suspended from their tops, and reaches to the ground. This forms a shield through which the wind cannot pass. Another bundle of sticks is then produced. They are all fastened at one end to a small wooden cross about six inches long by four broad. A man standing in the centre of the circle raises up this bundle in the air, the cross upward, and hitches their other ends, by means of little leather loops, one by one on the different upright sticks which form the circular walls. The result is, they all pull against each other, and are consequently self-supporting. Another piece of cloth is passed round the outside of this scaffolding, leaving a piece uncovered at the top to allow the smoke to escape. One stick is removed from the uprights which form the walls. This substitutes a door, and the *kibitka* is completed.

A fire is now lighted in the middle of the tent, some

snow put in a kettle, which is suspended from a tripod of three sticks above the flames, and, under the influence of a few glasses of scalding tea, the wayfarer makes himself as comfortable as circumstances will admit.

However, the smoke from the damp wood filled the tent. It was of so pungent a character that we found it impossible to keep on the roof. Our eyes, which had suffered from the wind and glare, now smarted from the smoke, and it was impossible to keep them open.

"The wood is damp," said the guide; "better be cold than be blind;" and, unhooking the upper framework of the kибитка, he left the walls standing.

It was a glorious evening; the stars as seen from the snow-covered desert were brighter and more dazzling than any I had hitherto witnessed. From time to time some glittering meteor would shoot across the heavens. A momentary track of vivid flame traced out its course through space. Showers of orbs of falling fire, flashed for one moment, and then disappeared from our view. Myriads of constellations and worlds above sparkled like gems in a priceless diadem. It was a magnificent pyrotechnic display, Nature being the sole actor in the spectacle. It was well worth a journey even to Central Asia.

In the mean time the guide, who took upon himself the office of *chef de cuisine*, was occupied with an iron pot, his special property. He was busily engaged throwing into this receptacle slices of meat, which with difficulty he had hacked from a piece of frozen mutton. A few handfuls of rice were next added, and some hunches of mutton fat. This he extracted from a hiding-place in his clothes, and the culinary compound was speedily crackling over the red-hot embers of our fire.

It was not a very appetizing spectacle, nor a dish that Baron Brisse would have been likely to add to any of his

*menus*; but after a ride across the steppes in midwinter the traveller soon loses every other feeling in the absorbing one of hunger, and at that time I think I could have eaten my great-grandfather if he had been properly roasted for the occasion.

Nazar's face assumed a most voracious aspect. Seizing a large wooden ladle, he buried it in the cooking mass; then, first of all filling his own mouth, with a look of supreme satisfaction he handed me the ladle.

The guide, baring his arm to the elbow, plunged his hand into the pot, and throwing about a quarter of a pound of its contents within his capacious jaws, bolted it at one swallow. His eyes nearly started out of his head with the effort. He smiled condescendingly; pointed to the viands, the result of his culinary skill; and rubbing his stomach slowly, gave me to understand that the meat was done to a turn.

The Turkoman sat in a corner of the kибитка. He was taking some little square biscuits or cakes, made of flour, salt, and fat, from a small bag which had been attached to the saddle of his donkey. His countenance wore a melancholy expression, for the biscuits were frozen as hard as brickbats. From time to time he would lay one of the cakes upon the embers, and, when it was thawed through, hand it to one of my party. "*Yackshe*" (good), he said to me, looking at the smoking mutton with a beseeching look, as much as to say, "Let me, too, partake," when, notwithstanding the disapproving looks of Nazar and the guide, who wished to eat it all themselves, I desired him to squat down by their side.

It was a quaint sight, the two wild figures before me, with their bare arms thrust alternately into the pot, every now and then swearing and looking fiercely at the Turkoman, who, to make up for lost time, ate much more rapidly than they did. I myself was supplied with a large saucer-

ful of rice and meat, which, in spite of the rough manner in which it had been prepared, proved a very savory compound.

[While thus engaged, three Khivans rode up, a merchant and his servants, on their way home from Orenburg. From these the traveller gained some information about the road to Khiva.]

After staying at our fireside about half an hour, the merchant left, and in a short time sent a message by one of his servants asking me if I would honor him by drinking tea with himself and followers.

I found the party encamped in a small ravine, about a hundred yards from my own kibitka, and seated around a fire. They had sheltered themselves in the same way as ourselves, and in addition had raised up an embankment of snow in the direction of the wind, so as to be better protected from its gusts. The camel-drivers had unloaded their animals, and were engaged in shovelling away the snow, so as to leave a dry spot upon which the huge beasts could lie down. Should this not be done, and the camels rest upon the snow, the heat of their bodies converts it into water, and the animals get cold in the stomach, an illness which generally proves fatal to them. The luggage and saddles were placed around the cleared spot so as to protect the camels from the wind, and I found that my Turkoman had joined the party, and that his three beasts were also within the enclosure.

The merchant, producing a pillow and piece of carpet, made me sit in the place of honor, nearest the fire. Presently he handed me a tin slop-basin, full of what he called tea, but which was the nastiest beverage it has ever been my bad luck to taste. It was not tea, in our sense of the word, but a mixture which had a peculiar flavor of grease, salt, and tea-leaves. Swallowing my nausea as

well as I could, in order to avoid offending my host, I drank off the nasty draught, and exclaimed, in the best Tartar I could command for the occasion, "Excellent."

My host was much pleased with my appreciation of the beverage, and said, "Now I see that you are not a Russian" (Nazar having previously informed him that I was an Englishman). "Strange to say, Russians do not like my tea. Good tea comes from Hindoostan. You will drink some more?"

Fortunately Nazar now came to my rescue. He called attention to the stars, and said that it was late, and that we were going to start early; so, shaking hands with my host, I escaped from his well-meant but decidedly disagreeable hospitality.

[Leaving the party to their slumbers, and their after midnight journey, we shall give some remarks of the author concerning the inhabitants of the steppes.]

The Kirghis poetry is filled with odes in honor of sheep, the natives placing this animal on the highest pinnacle of their estimation—after their wives, and sometimes, indeed, before them. Sheep make up the entire riches of these nomad tribes. A Kirghis lives upon their milk during the summer and autumn. At that time of the year he would consider it a great piece of extravagance to eat any meat, and this is only done should any animal become ill and die, in which case there is a feast in the kikitka. However, if a guest arrives, nothing is too good for him, and hospitality is shown by slaying one of the flock. It is then a red-letter day, and it is remembered long afterwards by the owner of the animal.

In winter, when there is nothing else upon which the Kirghis can subsist, they are obliged occasionally to kill some of their sheep, varying this diet by eating either a

horse or a little camel's flesh,—that is to say, should any of these last-named animals meet with an accident or die a natural death in the neighborhood. A native's clothes are made entirely of sheep's wool manufactured into coarse homespun. When he wishes to buy a horse or a camel, he gives so many sheep in exchange; and when he wants a wife, he pays for her in the same commodity, a good fat sheep being worth in those parts about four rubles, or eleven shillings of our money.

[The courtship and marriage customs are of interest.]

It is considered a sign of manhood should the bridegroom [who has previously bargained with the bride's parents], regardless of robbers or marauding parties, bring no companions when journeying towards the kikitka of his betrothed. The young lady herself sits inside the tent, and sings a ditty which has reference to her lover's bravery, to her own good looks, and to his good fortune, to sheep, and to the festivities about to ensue.

The women of the tribe squat on the ground and form a circle round the tent. If the bridegroom attempts to enter the bride's kikitka, the jealous females rush forward and beat him with sticks, the most unfavored and elderly of the unmarried women taking great delight in this performance. However, love generally prevails; the young man's back smarts, but he forces a passage into the kikitka. His beloved one now throws herself into his arms, and he there seeks a solace for all his troubles. The young lady then presents him with some feathers, red silk, and cloves, this being the accustomed offering made by a Kirghis maiden to her bridegroom to testify to him her purity and affection. The happy couple are now left alone, the women outside singing some native ditty, in which the joys of marriage are rather forcibly described.

Feasting then begins; friends and relations come from all parts of the steppe, having brought horses and sheep as a contribution to the festival; indeed, without this it would be impossible for the host to give the entertainment, for he would be literally eaten out of house and home.

Sometimes a hundred sheep and forty or fifty horses are slain, the iron caldron being kept all day long at boiling-point. The Kirghis stuff themselves to repletion, and afterwards carry away in their trousers, which they tie up at the knee, the meat they are unable to swallow at the time. It is a peculiar pocket, the roast mutton in this manner coming closely in contact with the Kirghis legs; but such little matters do not affect these half-wild wanderers. When the feast is over the games begin, and the animals which have not been eaten are set apart as prizes, the young men wrestling with each other. No tripping is allowed, no dexterity comes into play, and the contest is decided by sheer strength.

After this there are horse-races, the length of the course being from twenty to thirty miles, this distance being accomplished at the rate of from eighteen to twenty miles an hour, the successful rider sometimes receiving eight or nine horses as a prize.

Then the girls obtain the swiftest horses which they can borrow from their friends or relations, and one of the Amazons, challenging the men to race against her, gallops across the steppe. She is pursued by a horseman, who strives to place his hand round her waist, the girl all this time showering blows with her whip on the head of her admirer, and doing her best to keep him at bay. If he does not succeed in his attempt, the girl will often turn round upon him, and so belabor the unfortunate wight with her whip that he frequently falls off his horse, and is then an object of scorn and derision to all the assembled guests;



but if, on the contrary, he succeeds in placing his hand on the girl's breast, she surrenders at once, they ride away together amid the cheers and encouraging shouts of the company, and it is not considered strict etiquette to follow, no chaperons in Tartary being considered necessary.

The Turkomans sometimes decide the knotty point of who is to marry the prettiest girl in their tribe in the same primitive manner. On these occasions the whole tribe turns out, and the young lady, being allowed her choice of horses, gallops away from her suitors. They follow her, and she avoids those whom she dislikes, and seeks to throw herself in the way of the object of her affections. The moment that she is caught she becomes the wife of her captor. Further ceremonies are dispensed with, and he then takes her to his tent.

[Returning to the caravan, which had meanwhile continued its journey to more inhabited regions, we have next to relate the story of a quarrel and reconciliation.]

We now encountered a small party of Khivans. My guide gave them the customary salutation, "*Salam aalei-kom*;" however, they made no response. Their leader had observed by my dress that I was a foreigner. He looked fixedly at us, and recognized the guide as the one who had aided the Russians during their advance against the Khan's country. The Khivan stopped his horse, and called out to him, "There you are again, with dogs of unbelievers! I have little doubt but that you are an unbeliever yourself."

This was too much for the equanimity of my guide, who piqued himself upon his rigid observance of all Mohammedan rites. Did he not wash his feet with snow the prescribed number of times a day, in spite of the danger of having them frost-bitten, and had he not once suffered in consequence? Did he not rub his hands with snow before

eating? and had he ever been known to put his left hand in the dish? No; I might be called a dog of an unbeliever, and that was very likely the case. Had he not seen me eat some sausages of that kind which, when at Kasala, he had been informed were made of the flesh of the unclean animal? and was not one pot of the preserved meat which I had purchased at Orenburg, and of which he always refused to partake, also a composition of the same foul beast?

The insult was too great to be borne, and he made a tremendous effort to draw his cimeter. This was a hopeless task; so, rushing forward with his whip in the air, he assailed his enemy by striking vigorous blows on a new Astrakhan cap which adorned the head of the Khivan. The latter retaliated by striking the guide on his crimson dressing-gown with a short camel stick. The damage done to their clothes was great, and the Khivan, suddenly seizing the skirt of my guide's garment, tore it up the back, the sound of the tear making my follower more furious than ever, for he was very proud of the robe in question, and was looking forward to displaying it to his brother-in-law at Kalenderhana.

The combatants became breathless with their exertions, The Khivan's companions surrounded the guide, and began to play with their knife-handles in a menacing manner. They were six men to two, as the guide and myself had outstripped our caravan by several versts. I now drew my pistol from its holster, and this action on my part immediately produced the desired effect. A revolver is a formidable weapon, and the band of Khivans had sufficient discrimination to recognize its use. Their party fell back a little, and one of them, putting his knife down on the ground, said something to me, which I understood meant, "It is not your business to interfere; let them settle it be-

tween themselves." To this I could make no objection; when the opponents, seeing that they were to be the only combatants, left off wrestling together.

My guide, who was very much out of breath, now blew his nose with his fingers as a sign of contempt for his adversary, and squatted on his haunches on the ground. His foe, not to be outdone, performed the same feat with his nasal organ, and sat down opposite him. They then began a verbal battle, in which the reputations of their respective female relatives were much aspersed. This continued for about five minutes, when, becoming tired with waiting, I walked up to them and said "*Aman*" (peace); then, taking hold of their wrists, I forcibly made them shake hands. "*Salam aaleikom*" (peace be with you), at last said the guide. "*Aaleikom asalam*" (with you be peace), was the answer, and the combatants separated.

---

## A PEDESTRIAN IN SIBERIA.

JOHN DUNDAS COCHRANE.

[Captain John Dundas Cochrane, an eccentric British naval officer, born about 1780, gained through his exploits the title of "The Pedestrian Traveller." In 1820 he set out on a project to travel around the world on foot, and in pursuance of this ambitious purpose walked through Europe to St. Petersburg, and thence traversed Russia and Siberia on foot as far as Kamtchatka. Here he married a native of Siberia, gave up his plan, and returned by way of Russia to England. He died in South America in 1825. His adventures began before he had got far from the Russian capital. He tells the following story:]

I PASSED the night in the cottage of a farmer, resigning myself to the attacks and annoyance of such vermin as generally haunt impoverished dwellings, and was therefore

proportionately pleased in the morning to pursue my journey. My route was towards Linbane, at about the ninth mile-stone from which I sat down, to smoke a cigar or pipe, as fancy might indicate; I was suddenly seized from behind by two ruffians, whose visages were as much concealed as the oddness of their dress would permit. One of them, who held an iron bar in his hand, dragged me by the collar towards the forest, while the other, with a bayoneted musket, pushed me on in such a manner as to make me move with more than ordinary celerity; a boy, auxiliary to these vagabonds, was stationed on the roadside to keep a lookout.

We had got some sixty or eighty paces into the thickest part of the forest, when I was desired to undress, and, having stripped off my trousers and jacket, then my shirt, and finally my shoes and stockings, they proceeded to tie me to a tree. From this ceremony, and from the manner of it, I fully concluded that they intended to try the effect of a musket on me, by firing at me as they would at a mark. I was, however, reserved for fresh scenes; the villains, with much *sang-froid*, seated themselves at my feet, and rifled my knapsack and pocket, even cutting out the linings of the clothes in search of bank-bills or some other valuables. They then compelled me to take at least a pound of black bread and a glass of rum, poured from a small flask which had been suspended from my neck. Having appropriated my trousers, shirts, stockings, and English shooting shoes, as also my spectacles, watch, compass, thermometer, and small pocket-sextant, with one hundred and sixty roubles (about seven pounds), they at length released me from the tree, and at the point of a stiletto made me swear that I would not inform against them,—such, at least, I conjectured to be their meaning, though of their language I understood not a word.

Having received my promise, I was again treated to bread and rum, and once more fastened to the tree, in which condition they finally abandoned me. Not long after, a boy who was passing heard my cries, and set me at liberty. I did not doubt he was sent by my late companions upon so considerate an errand, and felt so far grateful; though it might require something more than common charity to forgive their depriving me of my shirt and trousers, and leaving me almost as naked as I came into the world.

To pursue my route, or return to Tzarsko Selo, would, indeed, be alike indecent and ridiculous; but being so, and there being no remedy, I made "forward" the order of the day; having first, with the remnant of my apparel, rigged myself *à l'Ecossaise*, I resumed my route. I had still left me a blue jacket, a flannel waistcoat, and a spare one, which I tied round my waist in such a manner that it reached down to the knees; my empty knapsack was restored to its old place, and I trotted on with even a merry heart.

[The traveller, despite this misadventure, made his way steadily onward, meeting with much kindness as he went. He slept generally out of doors, passing one night *in a cask*. He finally crossed the Ural Mountains into Siberia.]

On reaching the Asiatic side of the Ural chain, I could not help remarking that the inhabitants of all the villages were much more civil, more hospitable, and more cleanly dressed; and in no one instance would they accept of money for the food I had occasion to procure. I never entered a cottage but *shtshee* (a cabbage soup), with meat, milk, and bread, was immediately placed before me unasked; nor could any entreaty of mine induce them to receive a higher reward than a pipe of tobacco or a glass

of *vodka* (whiskey). In short, to prevent uselessly troubling the inhabitants, I was obliged to consign my nearly exhausted purse to the care of my knapsack, renouncing the hackneyed and unsocial custom of paying for food.

Among the proofs of their civility, or rather of the interest which Russians take in foreigners, as well as the means they have of making themselves understood, one very strong one occurred to me in a small village. I had learned so much of the language as to know that *kchorosho* is the Russian word for "well," but not that *kchudo* was the translation for "bad." My host being a good sort of a blunt fellow, was discoursing upon the impropriety of travelling as I did. As I could not comprehend him, I was impatient to go, but he persisted in detaining me until he had made me understand the meaning of *kchudo*. My extreme stupidity offered a powerful barrier to his design; but a smart slap on one cheek and a kiss on the other, followed by the words *kchudo* and *kchorosho*, soon cured my dulness, and I laughed heartily in spite of this mode of instruction.

[Continuing his journey, Captain Cochrane passed successively through Omsk, Tomsk, Irkutsk, Yakutsk, and various smaller Siberian towns, everywhere meeting with kindness. From Yakutsk, which he reached October 6, his route lay through the frozen regions of Northern Siberia.]

Yakutsk, although a considerable place of trade, and a great pass for the American Company, is ill built, and more scattered even than Irkutsk, in the most exposed of all bleak situations, on the left bank of the Lena, which is in summer four miles, and in winter two miles and a half, wide, appearing, as it really is, one of the finest streams in the world, running a course of nearly three thousand miles from its source, near Irkutsk, to the frozen

sea, which it enters by several mouths. There are seven thousand inhabitants in the city, of whom the greater part are Russians, and the rest Yakuti. Half a dozen churches, the remains of an old fortress, a monastery, and some tolerable buildings give it some appearance of decency, yet I could not help thinking it one of the most dreary-looking places I had seen, though I was in enjoyment of every comfort, and therefore the less disposed to complain.

I remained in Yakutsk three weeks, making the needful preparations for my journey during so severe a season of the year. In particular I looked to the nature of my dress, for the accounts of the cold which I should have to encounter were such that I considered myself exposed to death, without even the satisfaction of expecting to be buried, from the eternal frost that prevails there. Could, however, this feeling be gratified, the satisfaction would be materially increased by the knowledge that the body itself would enter the next world in the same state that it left this; for everywhere to the north of Yakutsk, the earth, two feet and a half below the surface, is perpetually frozen; consequently a carcass buried in it at that depth must remain perpetually the same.

The way I passed my time at Mr. Minitsky's was sufficiently regular; I rose early, and always went early to bed; occupied, while daylight lasted, in bringing up my journal; then at a game of billiards; afterwards at dinner, always on the most excellent fare, with wine, rum, and other delicacies. In the evening, with a party of the natives, male and female, at the house of the chief; the ladies to all appearance dumb, not daring to utter a word, and solely employed in cracking their nuts, a very small species of the cedar-nut, which abounds in such quantities as to be made an article of trade to Okotsk and Kamtchatka. I am not exaggerating when I say that half a



dozen of females will sit down and consume each many hundreds of these nuts, and quit the house without having spoken a word,—unless a stolen one, in fear it should be heard.

While the ladies are thus cracking their nuts, staring, and listening, and speechless, the gentlemen are employed in drinking rum or rye-brandy punch, as their tastes may dictate. Nor is even good rum a scarce article here, coming as it does by way of Kamtchatka. I was one feast-day on a visit to a respectable old gentleman, one of the council; there were no chairs, but a long table was spread, with fish pies, a piece of roast beef, boiled deer's tongues, and some wild berries in a tart. The first thing presented is a glass of brandy, which I refused, knowing the chief to have some good wine; this I was offered, and accepted, when I was told by my friend the chief that it was not the custom to accept anything of that kind the first time, but to await the third. Relying upon the chief's better knowledge of the Siberian world, I refused the next glass of wine, which was offered me twice, and need not say I ultimately lost it, probably from the practice of economizing good wine in a place where it can seldom be purchased.

My dresses completed, and the river having, according to custom, been passed and declared closed, I packed up my knapsack and other baggage, as I was provided also with a couple of bags of black biscuit through the kindness of my host, with a piece of roast beef, a few dried fish, half a dozen pounds of tea, and twenty pounds of sugar-candy, besides fifty pounds of tobacco, and a keg of *vodkey* (corn-brandy), a most indispensable article on such a journey, whether for my own or others' comfort. I had, besides, a pipe, flint, steel, and axe, and, what was of most importance, a Cossack companion, who indeed proved in-

valuable to me. My destination was Nishney Kolymsk, distant about one thousand eight hundred miles, which were to be travelled over in the coldest season of the year, and in what is esteemed the coldest part of the northeast of Asia.

[The thermometer stood at twenty-nine below zero when he left Yakutsk, October 31, and went lower as he advanced northward, through a frozen and cheerless region. His narrative is one of constant contest with the cold, diversified with the following account of Siberian appetites:]

At Tabalak I had a pretty good specimen of the appetite of a child, whose age (as I understood from the steersman, who spoke some English and less French) did not exceed five years. I had observed the child crawling on the floor, and scraping up with its thumb the tallow-grease which fell from a lighted candle, and I inquired in surprise whether it proceeded from hunger or liking of the fat. I was told from neither, but simply from the habit in both Yakuti and Tongousi of eating whenever there is food, and never permitting anything that can be eaten to be lost. I gave the child a candle made of the most impure tallow, a second and a third,—and all were devoured with avidity. The steersman then gave him several pounds of sour, frozen butter, this also he immediately consumed; lastly, a large piece of yellow soap;—all went the same road; but, as I was now convinced the child would continue to gorge as long as it could receive anything, I begged my companion to desist as I had done.

For an instance in confirmation of this, no doubt, extraordinary statement, I shall refer to the voyages of the Russian admiral, Saritcheff. “No sooner,” he says, “had they stopped to rest or spend the night, than they had their kettle on the fire, which they never left until they

pursued their journey, spending the intervals for rest in eating, and, in consequence of no sleep, were drowsy all the next day." The admiral also says that "such extraordinary voracity was never attended with any ill effects, although they made a practice of devouring, at one meal, what would have killed any other person. The laborers," the admiral says, "had an allowance of four poods, or one hundred and forty-four English pounds, of fat, and seventy-two pounds of rye-flour, yet in a fortnight they complained of having nothing to eat. Not crediting the fact, the Yakuti said that one of them was accustomed to consume at home, in the space of a day, or twenty-four hours, the hind quarter of *a large ox, twenty pounds of fat, and a proportionate quantity of melted butter for his drink.* The appearance of the man not justifying his assertion, the admiral had a mind to try his gourmandizing powers, and for that purpose he had a thick porridge of rice boiled down with three pounds of butter, weighing together twenty-eight pounds, and although the glutton had *already breakfasted*, yet did he sit down to it with great eagerness, and consumed the whole without stirring from the spot; and, except that his stomach betrayed more than an ordinary fulness, he showed no sign of inconvenience or injury, but would have been ready to renew his gluttony the following day.

[After nine days more of travel, they descended from the hill country, and reached the town of Zashiversk, in the well-wooded valley of the Indigirka.]

Of all the places I have ever seen, bearing the name of city or town, this is the most dreary and desolate: my blood froze within me as I beheld and approached the place. All that I have seen in passing rocky or snowy sierras or passes in Spain, in traversing the wastes of

Canada, or in crossing the Cordilleras or Andes in South America, the Pyrenees, or the Alps, cannot be compared with the desolation of the scene around me. The first considerable halting-place from Yakutsk, the half-way house, is nine hundred or one thousand miles removed from a civilized place. Such a spot gives name to a commissariat, and contains seven habitations of the most miserable kind, inhabited severally by two clergymen, each separate, a non-commissioned officer, and a second in command; a postmaster, a merchant, and an old widow. I have, during my service in the navy, and during a period when seamen were scarce, seen a merchant ship with sixteen guns and only fifteen men, but I never before saw a town with only seven inhabitants.

On the 23d of December I quitted the *town* of Zashiversk, not ungrateful for the hospitality of its poor inhabitants, who had supplied me with plenty of fish, here eaten in a raw state, and which to this hour I remember as the greatest delicacy I have ever tasted. Spite of our prejudices, there is nothing to be compared to the melting of raw fish in the mouth; oysters, clotted cream, or the finest jelly in the world is nothing to it; nor is it only a small quantity that may be eaten of this precious commodity. I myself have finished a whole fish which, in its frozen state, might have weighed two or three pounds, and, with black biscuit and a glass of rye-brandy, have defied either nature or art to prepare a better meal. It is cut up or shaved into slices with a sharp knife from head to tail, and thence derives the name of Stroganina.

My first day's journey made me better acquainted with the power and use of dogs; water or ice, fish, firewood, travellers and their goods, and everything being here drawn by these animals. I continued over a flat country, and lakes communicating with one another by small

streams, suffering much at times from the cold, especially in the knees, which, although not sensibly cold, had a feeling of deadness and painful fatigue which I could not account for, till a peddler explained to me, by signs and words, that if I did not alter my plan I should certainly lose both my legs above the knees. They appeared, indeed, a little inflamed, owing, as he said, to the inadequate protection of the knee-joints, which, on horseback, are more than ordinarily exposed, all the defence they had being a single leather, in sometimes sixty-eight degrees below zero, Fahrenheit. I considered that I was still bound to the northward, and that the extreme of winter had not yet come upon me, and therefore thought it better to accept a pair of *souturee* (knee-preservers, made of the skins of reindeers' legs), which he very kindly offered. The service they did me is astonishing; from that moment I had less pain and more heat, and became fully satisfied that the extremities are alone to be taken care of. . . .

[On the last day he travelled sixty miles.] Although I was obliged from the cold to dismount at least twenty or thirty times to take a run for mere self-preservation. At Malone the track for horses is in general finished, though they do sometimes go as far as Nishney Kolymsk, and even to the Frozen Sea, in search of sea-horse and mammoths' tusks. . . .

Resumed next morning, with increased cold though calm weather, and reached Nishney Kolymsk at noon, amid a frost of sixty-two and a half degrees below zero, according to many spirit thermometers of Baron Wrangel's, on the last day of December, 1820, after a most tedious, laborious, and to me perilous journey of sixty-one days, twenty of which were passed in the snow, without even the comfort of a blanket; nor had I even a second coat, or parka, nor even a second pair of boots, and less clothing than even

the guides and attendants of the poorest class. I met at Nishney Kolymask the Baron Wrangel, and his companion, Mr. Matiushkin, a midshipman. It was the last day of the old year; and in the present enjoyment of a moderate meal, a hearty welcome, and excellent friends, I soon forgot the past, and felt little concern for the future. Quarters were appropriated me in the baron's own house; and with him, on the shores of the Frozen Sea, I enjoyed health and every comfort I could desire.

[Baron Wrangel's purpose was to visit the northeast cape of Asia, ascertain its latitude and longitude, and gain further geographical information. Captain Cochrane wished to join the expedition, but not having government permission, his services could not be accepted. He accordingly, the next spring, made his way over a difficult and dangerous route to Okotsk, reaching there June 19. He finally gave up his design of crossing Bering Strait to America, married a native of Kamtchatka, and returned with his wife westward through Siberia over much of his old route.]

Descending the western branch of the Ural Mountains, I found myself again in Europe: the land of malt, the fireside home, again had charms for the traveller. The sensations I experienced upon quitting the most favored quarter of the globe were nothing when compared to the present. Then I thought I was going only to the abode of misery, vice, and cruelty, while now I knew I had come from that of humanity, hospitality, and kindness. I looked back to the hills, which are, as it were, the barrier between virtue and vice, but felt, in spite of it, a desire to return and end my days. And so strong is still that desire that I should not hesitate to bid adieu to politics, war, and other refined pursuits, to enjoy in Central Siberia those comforts which may be had without fear of foreign or domestic disturbance.

At length I arrived safely in St. Petersburg, from which

I had been absent exactly three years and three weeks, and to which I returned in infinitely better health than when I left it.

---

## A SIBERIAN TRAGEDY.

THOMAS W. ATKINSON.

[From Atkinson's monumental work on Siberia we extract the following well-told description of one of the many tragedies that have taken place in that unhappy land. As an example of a great fright on small grounds it has few rivals, while the fate of the unfortunate fugitives is doubtless far from being an unusual incident in that prison realm. Rumor connected Atkinson himself with the event in a not very satisfactory relation. He had shortly before left Siberia for Mongolia, from which circumstance the rumor concerning him arose.]

ABOUT the latter part of September, 1850, an event occurred in the Altai which caused great sensation throughout Western Siberia. . . . One night, when all my friends in Barnaoul had quietly retired to rest, little thinking that danger was fast approaching their abodes, they were awakened from their slumbers a little after midnight by a party of Cossacks galloping up the quiet street, to the house of the chief of the mines. A loud thundering at the door roused the inmates, when a despatch was delivered informing the colonel that Siberia was being invaded by three thousand Asiatics, who were descending the valley of the Bëa, and the officer in command of the Cossacks at Sandypskoï required troops to be sent to Bisk forthwith: upon which town he intended to retreat, not having a sufficient force to check the invaders.

In a few minutes Cossacks were sent to rouse up the officers, and desire them to repair to the house of their



chief without delay. On their assembling, the despatch was read; causing great consternation among those who dreaded the advancing savages. Similar despatches had been sent to the Governor of Tomsk, to Prince Gortchikoff in Omsk, and to the Emperor in Petersburg. The director of the mines ordered the colonel in command of the military to have his men (about eight hundred) ready to march at daybreak.

After this he turned his attention to the safety of the town, and what it contained. Nearly all the gold obtained from the mines of Siberia had been delivered in Barnaoul, to be smelted into bars, ready to be sent by the first winter roads to Petersburg. It was supposed that the Asiatics knew this, and that their object was plunder. There were about forty-three thousand two hundred pounds weight of gold and twenty-eight thousand eight hundred pounds of silver in the cellars of the smelting works: a prize worth having. Besides the precious metals, there were the stores belonging to the crown, and other property of considerable value,—even the dwellings of the officers would have afforded a rich booty. The shops and warehouses contained supplies of everything needed by the inhabitants, and an immense stock of wodka was stored in the government cellars.

The chief assigned to each officer the duty he had to perform, some to provide for the security of the precious metals, and others to make arrangements for defending the town. Having placed the whole under the command of Colonel Kavanka, the director prepared to lead the troops to the scene of action on the Bëa.

The approaching dangers were now made known to the ladies. The idea of being captured and carried away by the savage tribes filled their minds with horror; as many traditions remained in Siberia of the barbarities in-

flicted by the Asiatic hordes in former invasions. When their husbands announced the orders they had received the excitement increased; the news spread into every dwelling, as usual much exaggerated on the transit. Many believed that the invaders were close at hand, and fear caused some to fancy that they heard their savage cries. The Cossacks galloping to and fro with orders strengthened this idea; and the panic filled every female heart when the shrill notes of the bugles and the roll of the drums echoed in the night.

Just as the gray dawn began to break in the eastern sky two Cossacks dashed through the gates into Barnaoul, and galloped on to the house of the director. One of them leaped from his horse and delivered a second despatch from the officer at Sandypskoï with the information that the invaders were rapidly descending the valley of the Bëa. Also that they had commenced burning the *ouls* of the Kalmucks, and were murdering every man, woman, and child they could lay hands on. Instead of three thousand, they were now announced to be seven thousand strong, great numbers of whom were armed with rifles. Further, this army of savages was led on by the Englishman Atkinson,—a fact affirmed to be beyond all doubt, as the writer of the despatch stated that he had seen him. This account caused general alarm. Some thought that the wild hordes of Asia were bursting forth, as in the time of Genghiz Khan, to spread desolation over the country on their march towards Europe. All felt that the affair had become serious, and the Cossacks declared that the people at all the villages on their route were packing up their goods and preparing for flight.

[The director and other officials were satisfied that Atkinson was with the invaders, but as a prisoner, not as a leader. It was supposed that he, from his knowledge of the mountain passes, had been forced

to act as guide. Plans of rescue were suggested and his fate was feared for. At six o'clock the troops were on the march, and active steps were taken for the defence of the town.]

Some of the ladies proposed that the governor's mansion, a large brick building, should be made the citadel; and that in the lower story all the precious metals belonging to His Imperial Majesty, as well as their own valuables, should be deposited; while they and their children should occupy the upper rooms; satisfied that the Emperor would insure such a defence of the position as might lead to their preservation. At ten o'clock in the forenoon a third despatch arrived, informing the director that the Cossacks had retreated from Sandypskoï; the number of the enemy had now advanced to ten thousand, and it was stated that the inhabitants of the towns of Bisk and Kouznetsk were leaving their homes, and carrying what little property they could along with them. In fact, wheresoever the news had reached, the people were fleeing from their dwellings with the utmost precipitation.

The distance from Barnaoul to Sandypskoï was more than two hundred and fifty miles, and the troops were pushed on at their greatest speed. Immediately the intelligence reached Prince Gortchikoff he left Omsk and travelled to Semipalätinsk, a distance of more than six hundred miles, in forty hours. From this place he sent a regiment of Cossacks with six guns to secure some of the passes in the Altai; while another with six guns was ordered from Oustkamenogorsk to cut off any bodies of men making their way westward.

[General Anossoff, at Tomsk, took similar active precautions, and a strong force was soon marching south. On their fourth day's march they met the people fleeing in great numbers, while stories of the ferocious cruelty with which the Kalmucks had been treated were widely repeated. In fact, the whole district was stricken with panic.]

On the fifth day the troops from Barnaoul reached Bisk, and found the town deserted by all the inhabitants, except a few civil officers and a small body of Cossacks; the latter in guard of the warehouses in which were stored the valuable furs belonging to the crown. During the night news reached the commander which cast a doubt on the accuracy of the despatches. Gradually reports were received reducing the number of the invaders, and containing reliable information that they were not continuing their march down the valley of the Béa. This delayed the farther advance of the soldiers; and Cossacks were sent to stop the march of the troops under the command of the two generals from Tomsk. In the course of two days it was ascertained that this alarming invasion had its source in a party of forty Circassian prisoners who had escaped from the gold mines on the Birioussa. When this discovery was made the troops returned to their respective stations, and the local officers were left to deal with the affair.

These fugitive Circassians had no intention of invading the Russian dominions, their object being to escape from the great Siberian prison to their far-distant homes. They were prisoners of war, and had been sent to work in the mines of Siberia, which was considered an act of great cruelty. Surely soldiers who had bravely defended their homes deserved a better fate than to be mixed with Russian convicts, many of whom were criminals of the worst class. These brave fellows had been employed at the gold washings on the Birioussa, a river which forms the boundary between the governments of Irkoutsk and Yenissey. From this place they determined to escape, and, after many difficulties, made the attempt.

By the aid of small quantities of gold, which they managed to secrete during their labors, they procured a rifle and ammunition for each man from the Tartars, who con-

sealed them in a cavern in the mountains, about seven miles from the mines. The most essential requisites for their future success had now been obtained, but at a cost of ten times their value. There was no fear of the Tartars betraying them, as their own safety depended on their secrecy, and a terrible punishment awaited them if detected with gold in their possession.

On a Saturday afternoon in the latter part of July, 1850, when the labors of the day were ended, the Circassians quietly left the mine in small parties, going in different directions. This was done without exciting any suspicion, and they met in the evening at a rendezvous, a ravine in the mountains, about six miles from the mines in a southerly direction. A stud of spare horses were kept at pastures in the forest several miles from their place of meeting, and at about seven from the mines. A large party of Circassians proceeded towards this place, and arrived near it just at dusk, and three were sent on in advance carrying their rifles, as if returning from the hunt.

The horsekeepers were driving the animals into the enclosure to secure them for the night. When this was accomplished, they discovered three rifles pointed at them, and were told that they would be shot if they attempted to escape. A shrill whistle called up the other exiles, who instantly secured the three men; the best horses were at once selected out of a stud of between three and four hundred, and as two of their attendants were great hunters, and well acquainted with the mountain regions around, the Circassians carried them all away to act as guides to the Chinese frontier, and to prevent the discovery of their means of flight till they had got a good start; moreover, they turned the remainder of the stud out of the enclosed ground, and drove them into the forest, to make it appear that they had broken loose, and that the absent men were

searching for them. They departed, carrying off fifty-five horses. No time was lost in reaching their friends in the glen, who received them with shouts of joy. An hour before midnight, when the moon rose to light them on their way, they commenced their flight.

The hunters led them southward, through rugged passes and over several ridges, without once stopping till they reached, a little before sunrise, a high summit, whence they could look down upon the gold mine, and distinguish the smoke curling up from the fires that are constantly kept burning to drive away those pests, the mosquitoes. Having taken a last look at the place of their exile, they hastened onward into a grassy valley, where they fed their horses and breakfasted. After a rest they pushed on again.

[They continued their course till they passed the Chinese frontier, when the guides, who knew nothing of the region in advance, were released. For several weeks the fugitives pushed onward through a difficult mountain region. Unfortunately, they knew nothing of the country, and permitted themselves to be turned back by the snowy peaks of the Tangnon Mountains, beyond which they would have found safety among the Kalkas and Kirghis tribes. As a result, the character of the country gradually forced them to the northwest. At length they reached the eastern shores of the Altin-Kool. Here was their last chance of success, but they unluckily took the wrong course, and were again turned towards the north. They finally reached the Bëa, the only outlet of the Altin-Kool.]

More than two months had now passed since the poor fellows left the Birioussa, and they were still in their Siberian prison; during this period they had suffered both from hunger and fatigue. Although game was abundant in many of the regions through which they passed, when hunting is the only source of a man's subsistence the supply often proves precarious, as all will find who try. Following

the mountains along the eastern bank of the Bëa, they reached a part of the country thinly inhabited by Kalmucks, living under Russian sway. At length they arrived at a Kalmuck aoul, and got into difficulties with the people, but whether the Kalmucks attempted to stop them, or threatened to call in the aid of the Cossacks to take them prisoners, it is impossible to say. The dispute, unfortunately, ended in a battle, when several Kalmucks were killed and their aoul burned. Those who escaped conveyed the terrible news to other tribes, and all became alarmed. Some retreated into the forests with their families and cattle, while others carried the alarm to the Cossack fort at Sandyp. The officer in command was drunk when the news arrived; hence those exaggerated despatches which followed each other in quick succession.

The Circassians committed a fatal error by entering into conflict with the people, as the alarm rapidly spread in every direction, and left no chance for their escape. Continuing their course to the northward, they passed beyond the rapids, and succeeded in swimming their horses over the Bëa. From this point they turned to the south, which led them into the mountains between the Bëa and Katounia. This river in the mountains is one succession of rapids, so that there are few places where it can be crossed even in canoes; it is impossible to swim the torrent.

The higher mountains to the south being deep in snow, placed the fugitives in a trap. When their real number was discovered, the illusion respecting their force was destroyed; and the Kalmucks prepared with a savage determination to avenge the blood that had been shed. A body of men were soon collected; they were stanch as blood-hounds, and had been seldom foiled in running down their prey.

Scouts sent forward to follow the trail, were followed



by Siberian hunters who knew every mountain pass and torrent. Mounted on good fresh horses they rapidly closed upon the fugitives; and on the evening of the third day of their pursuit encamped within three miles of them.

[The flight of the Circassians led them deeper into mountain-passes, leading up towards the snowy summits. Their pursuers now closed in on them.]

At length the hungry and wayworn warriors were driven into a mountain-pass, and rifle-balls began to drop fast around them. Having reached a narrow part of the gorge, where it was strewn with fallen rocks, they made a stand and returned the fire with effect,—for several saddles became vacant. In a few minutes they received a heavy volley, when some of the exiles were wounded, notwithstanding their shelter, and several horses were killed. They now stood at bay, determined never to yield. Their pursuers outnumbered them five to one, and knew every crag and turning in the ravines, which enabled them to take shelter where no bullet could touch them, whence they could pick off their opponents, and force the survivors to retire from every position they sought. Each new post was held with undaunted courage, till diminished numbers compelled the Circassians again to retreat; every call to surrender being answered with a shout of defiance.

While the work of slaughter was going on night shrouded the combatants, and under cover of the darkness fifteen of these brave men escaped on foot, ascending farther into the mountains, and leaving their horses to their merciless enemies. Though their position had become desperate, they scrambled on, hoping to find shelter from the cutting blast. At length they reached some deep recesses in the rocks, where they decided to pass the night; they, however, dared not light a fire, as that would guide the Kal-

mucks to their retreat. The night passed without their being disturbed.

With the first gray dawn of morn they commenced their weary march and scaled the rocky heights before them, whence they had a view of the vast snow-clad peaks above, which stopped all further progress in that direction. After carefully scanning the country in search of their pursuers, not one of whom was visible, they turned to the west, skirting along the base of one of the giants of the chain towards a forest of cedars which covered a low rocky ridge.

The hunters had not been idle; long before daylight appeared two parties had been sent forward to form ambushes where it was expected the Circassians would be obliged to pass, while the main body remained behind to clear the ravine. Being convinced that the forest would afford them the only means for their escape, the fugitives pushed on in that direction. They had reached within about two hundred yards of the wood when a puff of white smoke appeared in a thicket which proved fatal to one of their comrades. They now made an attempt to reach the shelter of some rocks, but before they had proceeded twenty paces five others had fallen. A savage shout to surrender greeted their ears from a large party in their rear that were fast closing in upon them. Their last few shots were spent on the advancing body, and not without effect; then they made a rush to reach the forest; but only four were destined to gain its cover, and some of these were wounded. The thick underwood screened the poor fellows from the volley which whistled after them, and stopped the firing, as they were soon lost in the dense and tangled branches.

The clouds, which had become blacker, began pouring down rain and sleet, accompanied by a fierce gale, which brought their enemies to a stand, and caused them to pro-

pare an encampment under the cedars. Two small parties were sent on in pursuit, but these were shortly compelled to return without having discovered the retreat of the remnant of the gallant band. The storm had now become a hurricane, driving the snow into the balagans and whirling it into eddies, which made it difficult to see objects at a few yards' distance. This continued for three days without intermission, and then the mountains were covered deep in snow, which deterred the hunters from making any further attempt to find the fugitives. The winter had also set in with a piercing frost, and this no doubt soon accomplished that which the rifles of the Kalmucks had spared. The four Circassians were never seen again, nor any trace of them found.

---

## THE TRAGEDY OF THE LENA DELTA.

GEORGE W. MELVILLE.

[Travel has had its tragedies, many of them, and we cannot complete our work without reference to some of those untoward events in which death has laid its heavy hand on the adventurer. It has been particularly in Arctic adventure that peril, privation, and death have been the lot of the daring traveller, and of all the tales of Arctic exploration that of the ill-fated "Jeannette," and its captain and crew is the most pathetic. Engineer Melville, one of the party who escaped, and to whose unflinching energy we owe the discovery of the fate of the lost members, has told the story well in his work "In the Lena Delta." We have space to extract from it only the closing incidents of the search, those of the discovery of the bodies of Commander De Long and his companions, who had perished of cold and starvation on the bleak Arctic shores of Siberia. For months, after escaping himself, Melville sought his companions. He rescued two of the sailors, Nindemann and Noros, who had been sent in advance, but the discovery of the others, on the snow-clad shores of the Lena Delta,

proved a very difficult task. The party of search advanced along the Lena, finding some stray traces of those whom they sought. We take up their story of search on March 20, 1882.]

WE made an early start; Bartlett steering for Mat Vay with instructions to follow the main river or one of its main branches north of Stolboi. He has a team of sixteen dogs, a tent, six days' provisions, and Geordi Nicolai as yamshick. Nindemann and myself similarly equipped, with La Kentie Shamoola and young Kerick to drive us, set forth on a straight course for Bulchoi Mesja. Arrived there, Nindemann confirmed his previous recognition of the locality, but was totally bewildered and uncertain as to the direction pursued by the party south from that point. So we ran off southeast until we thought we were making too much easting, when we veered to the southwest to a point he vaguely remembered. Then south by east, then east and west, following a large stream to the southward, until the dogs began to weaken, when we halted and erected our tent under the lee of a hill.

There was very little drift-wood in the vicinity, but we were too tired and cold to care much whether our supper was hot or not. Still the warm tea and raw frozen fish found great favor in our eyes. The tent was too small to allow of our building a fire in it, so, notwithstanding the high wind, the natives dug a hole outside in the snow, wherein they soon had our scant drift-wood ablaze and our tea-kettle boiling.

The Yakut mode of building camp-fires is as follows: The pot or kettle is hung on a tree branch of sufficient length and strength to project from the snow bank in which it is thrust, over a hole excavated in the snow beneath the kettle, and such a distance from the bank that the heat will not melt the snow from the butt of the limb. To start the fire, a dry piece of wood is procured from the

high river-banks, many sticks being cut with the axe, and rejected, until one entirely free from moisture and fit for kindling is found; which is then carefully split and kept dry. The best of the drift-wood is next selected, and also split and chopped up into proper lengths. Thus far, so good; but the natives are ignorant of matches, and with only their flint and steel it would seem a difficult matter to start a fire, since they have no rags, either cotton or flax, or any highly inflammable material like sulphur sticks. But here is where the Yakut and Tunguse ingenuity asserts itself.

The buds of the Arctic willow are forever trying to peep from beneath their blanket of snow, and within these buds is a light flossy substance in the nature of thistle-down. Whenever he can, the native gathers a handful of these, and robs them of their down, which he then moistens slightly and mixes with ground charcoal, prepared by cooling a lighted piece of birch wood in the ashes of his hearth. The dampened floss thoroughly rolled through the charcoal is next covered up and dried before the fire on the same board whereon it was compounded and the charcoal powdered. It is now an excellent tinder, igniting quickly into a hot and durable point of fire.

But in addition to it, some light match stuff is necessary, and to supply this need a bundle of fine soft sticks, about thirty inches long, is always kept drying over the fire-place. Before the native sets out on a journey, or, indeed, as often as the material is required, the old women of the house take down several of these sticks, and carefully shape them into sword blades. They then rest their knives in bevelled notches cut in the flat sides of small pieces of wood, about three-eighths of an inch broad, and one inch and a half long, and the operation proper begins. Along the wooden sword, which is held against the shoulder like

a violin, the knife in its gauge is drawn continuously and rapidly, and at each draught a thin coiling shaving drops to the floor or in the lap of the operator. A bag-full of these fine curls—which, when matted together, very much resemble the American manufactured material known to upholsterers as “excelsior”—is always ready for the travelling native, preserved dry in the huts beneath the sleeping skins, and carried in a fish-skin bag on the journey.

So now, with the materials at hand, we will start a fire. The native takes from his skin pouch a bunch of the “excelsior” about the size of a robin’s nest, rolls it into a ball, punches a hole in it, and then lays it carefully on the snow. Next, taking a pinch of tinder from the bag which always hangs at his hip, he places it on his flint, and with a quick sharp stroke ignites and places it in the centre of his nest of shavings, which he then lifts up, holding it lightly with his fingers spread apart for the passage of air, and whirls rapidly around his head at arm’s length. At first a faint, pleasant odor of burning birch steals upon the air, then a light streak of smoke follows the revolving arm, and when the heat within his hand notifies the native that a proper degree of ignition has been attained, he suddenly ceases his gyrations, tears open the smoking nest, and with a quick puff blows it into flame. Then depositing the blazing ball on the snow he soon piles his fagots over and around it, and in a very few seconds his fire is in full blast. . . .

We had barely composed ourselves to the sleep we sorely needed, when the wind began to pipe and the clouds to drift swiftly across the sky. The natives said, “*Pagoda, bar, bar,*” and before midnight the snow had sifted through the tent and into our sleeping bags, where it melted, and then our wet clothing froze fast to our bodies, and we could not move. So we endured our misery until six

o'clock this morning (the 21st), when I drove the yamshicks out to make some tea.

They succeeded in starting a fire, but the snow soon smothered and extinguished it. The natives then sliced some raw fish, which they and Nindemann ate, for the weather had stolen my appetite, but at seven o'clock I caught sight of the sun through a rift in the clouds, and determined to get under way. It was my wish to reach Mat Vay on this line of search; but as neither the dogs nor the natives could face the fierce wind, I stood to the northward of west and ran for Qu Vina, where we arrived about eleven o'clock. . . .

At early morning [of March 23] the weather was still squally, but as day advanced it cleared. I will now make another attempt from the southward, and if I can only find the high promontory from which Nindemann sighted Mat Vay, there is no doubt of my ability to follow the trail as far as Kriksen's hut.

The sun came out in course of time, and although the snow still drifted before the wind, I could yet discern the points of land making out into the bay. Our eyes are still weak from the effects of smoke, and the sunlight tortures them. The problem that now puzzled me was,—which of the round dozen of points before us is the one that Nindemann turned when he reached the bay or *gooba*? Cold, hungry, without compass, and with orders "to keep the west bank aboard," he only knew that he had journeyed south and a long way from the eastward,—but how far? So with nothing to guide me, I decided to start at the northwest and follow along from point to point until I found *the point*. Nindemann was anxious to go east, skipping many of the headlands, but this I would not do for fear of missing the particular one I wanted. Then again, as De Long had said he would follow in the track of Nin-



demann and Noros, on which point was it that he had camped and died?

So I visited from cape to cape, taking a good survey of each river, until finally we came to a large rough stream, the Kagoastock, where the land ran far out into the bay. Nindemann was still uncertain, and sat on his sled gazing dumbly at the Stolboi which had been a landmark for himself and Noros on their march to the southward, and which now showed nearly to the south of us. Meanwhile, I had ascended to the high ground of the point, and stumbled upon a fire-bed, perhaps six feet in diameter, with many footprints frozen in around it, for the winds had fortunately kept the promontory clear of snow.

"Here they are!" I shouted, and Nindemann, closely followed by the natives, was soon at my side. It looked like a signal-fire, the logs were so large, and when I asked our drivers if the Yakuts had built it, they confidently replied,—

"*Soak ; Yakut agoime malinki, malinki.*" (No ; Yakut fire little, little.)

I had not yet found the bodies, but had certainly fixed the trail ; for I now reasoned that the party had rounded this point and I would discover them somewhere to the westward. Still, I was desirous of securing the record and other relics at Ericksen's hut, and so set out at once to explore the banks of the river. Nindemann had told me that one of the prominent landmarks along this stream was an old flat-boat which lay stranded on the shore of the river, and in which he and Noros had camped a couple of days after they parted from De Long ; and now in his anxiety to find it he started off ahead of me, with the dogs of both teams in full cry.

I always kept a sharp lookout for strange objects, having directed the others to do likewise, and presently, as Nin-

demann sighting the flat-boat drove at full speed towards it, I espied a black thing sticking out of the snow, about three hundred yards to the southward of the boat, and at once rolled off my sled, whereupon the yamshick, having seen me perform this feat before, drew up his team and joined me.

I hastened to the black object which attracted my attention, and found it to be the points of four sticks held together at the top by a small piece of lashing stuff, and across the forks of the sticks was hung by its straps a Remington rifle, the muzzle of which peeped about eight inches above the snow. In my eagerness to reach it I fell forward on the sticks, severely cutting and bruising my face. Pulling the rifle from the snow, I cleared the barrel and instantly identified it as Alexia's. There was no record in the barrel, as I hoped there would be; so I sent my driver, La Kentie, for Nindemann, surmising that De Long, unable to carry his books and papers farther, had cached them here and erected this *myack* as a landmark. The fire-bed, too, that I had just found on the promonotory confirmed me in this opinion; so as soon as Nindemann came up I set the two natives at work digging out the snow. It was a tedious operation, and in a few minutes Nindemann said he would take a look to the northward. I then climbed to the top of the bank, intending to obtain a round of compass bearings for Stolboi, Mat Vay, and other points in order to locate the place, as I hoped to make Mat Vay for the night. La Kentie accompanied me, carrying the compass, and as we walked along I noticed some old clothing, mittens, etc., lying on the high ground above the river. Nearing the spot where the fire had been built, I observed something dark in the snow, and on going towards it was rewarded by the discovery of the party's teakettle, a cylindrical copper vessel blackened by many fires.

"*Kack, chinick!*" (What, the kettle!) exclaimed I to La Kentie, and so saying advanced to pick it up, when suddenly I caught sight of three objects at my very feet; and one of these, the one I was about to step over—*was the hand and arm* of a body raised out of the snow. La Kentie gave one look, and dropping the compass, started back in terror, crossing himself.

I identified De Long at a glance by his coat. He lay on his right side, with his right hand under his cheek, his head pointing north, and his face turned to the west. His feet were drawn slightly up as though he were sleeping; his left arm was raised with the elbow bent, and his hand, thus horizontally lifted, was bare. About four feet back of him, or towards the east, I found his small note-book or ice-journal, where he had tossed it with his left hand, which looked as though it had never recovered from the act, but had frozen as I found it, upraised.

Turning, then, to the last entry in the journal, I read,—

"*Oct. 30, Sunday.*—Boyd and Görtz died during night. Mr. Collins dying."

The other objects in the snow proved to be the bodies of Dr. Ambler and Ah Sam, the Chinese cook. A few small articles lay scattered around, and these I gathered together and put in the kettle. Besides the journal I also found a medicine-case, and a tin cylinder, three inches in diameter and almost four feet long, which contained the drawings and charts of the cruise. Despatching La Kentie in search of Nindemann, I occupied myself until he arrived in perusing the sad record, beginning at the final date and reading backward. I learned from it that, after Ericksen, the next man to die was Alexia, and that he had been buried from the flat-boat in the ice of the river. I therefore supposed that the whole party must be lying

within an area, north and south, of not more than five hundred yards.

After leaving the flat-boat they had advanced about three hundred yards, but the southerly gales were too fierce for them to face; so they had camped where the *myack* was, and there all but three had died. The journal relates how the remaining members of the starving band were so weak that they could not carry Lee and Kaack—the first two who succumbed after Alexia—out of the bed of the river, so they “carried them around the corner out of sight,” and “then,” says De Long, “my eye closed up.” (Nindemann tells me that during the march the captain suffered severely with his eyes, and when he left him he was almost blind, which explains this passage in the journal.)

One after another died until only three were left, and then De Long perceived that unless the books and papers and the bodies of his comrades were removed from the low bed of the river, the spring floods would sweep them all out to sea. So the surviving three had tried to carry the records to the high ground for safety, together with a cake of river ice for water, the kettle, a hatchet, and a piece of their tent-cloth; but their little remaining strength was not even equal to the task of lifting the cases of records up the steep bank, so they sank down from the effort, after securing the chart-case and other small articles, leaving the records to their fate.

At the root of a large drift tree that had lodged on the bank some twenty-five or thirty feet above the river they built a fire and brewed some willow tea; and the kettle when I found it was one-quarter full of ice and willow-shoots. The tent-cloth they set up to the southward of them to protect their fire, but the winter winds had blown it down, and it now partly covered Ah Sam, who lay flat on his back, with his feet towards the fire and his hands

crossed upon his breast; a position in which the last two survivors had evidently placed him. De Long had crawled off to the northward and about ten feet from Ah Sam, while Dr. Ambler was stretched out between,—his feet nearly touching the latter, and his head resting on a line with De Long's knees. He lay almost prone on his face, with his right arm extended under him, and his left hand raised to his mouth. In the agony of death he had bitten deeply into the flesh between his thumb and forefinger, and around his head the snow was stained with blood. None of the three had boots or mittens on, their legs and feet being covered with strips of woollen blanket and pieces of the tent-cloth, bound around to the knees with bits of rope and the waist-belts of their comrades. Ah Sam had on a pair of red knit San Francisco socks, the heels and toes of which were entirely worn away. . . .

The three bodies were all frozen fast to the snow, so fast that it was necessary to pry them loose with a stick of timber. In turning over Dr. Ambler, I was surprised to find De Long's pistol in his right hand, and then, observing the blood-stained mouth, beard, and snow, I at first thought that he had put a violent end to his misery. A careful examination, however, of the mouth and head, revealed no wound, and, releasing the pistol from its tenacious death-grasp, I saw that only three of its chambers contained cartridges, which were all *loaded*, and then knew, of course, that he could not have harmed himself, else one or more of the capsules would be empty. . . .

When the bodies were searched, I rolled them, with the aid of the natives, in a piece of tent-cloth, and then covered them with snow, for I could not as yet haul them to Mat Vay. The faces of the dead were remarkably well-preserved; they had all the appearance of marble, with the blush frozen in their cheeks. Their faces were full, for

the process of freezing had slightly puffed them; yet this was not true of their limbs, which were pitifully emaciated, or of their stomachs, which had shrunk into great cavities. Dr. Ambler, ostensibly to ease the gnawing pangs of hunger, had wrapped his little pocket diary in his long woollen muffler, and then thrust this great wad under the waist-band of his trousers.

From the reading of the journal I now expected to find the balance of the party near the *myack*, or where I had sighted the tent-poles. I therefore started the natives to digging, telling them that the *bumagas* and *kinneagas* (papers and books) were there. Exerting themselves to their utmost, they soon came upon the wood and ashes of the fireplace, when, digging around the base of the cone-shaped pit, they presently exhumed, much to their delight, a tin drinking-pot, some old scraps of clothing, a woollen mitten, and two tin cases of books and papers.

Suddenly the two men scrambled out of the pit as though the arch-fiend himself was at their heels, gasping, as soon as they could,—

“*Pomree, pomree, dwee pomree!*” (The dead, the dead, two deads!)

Dropping into the hole, I saw the head of one corpse partly exposed, and the feet of another; and then ordered the natives to continue their labors. They obeyed, and finally disclosed the back and shoulders of a third. It was now dark and the snow was drifting wildly, so I concluded to return to Mat Vay for the night, and send instant word to Cass Carta for the rest of my party to join me here and assist in excavating the bodies.

[The remaining two bodies were afterwards found, a coffin made from the remains of the flat-boat, a grave dug several feet deep into the hill on which they had died, and all the victims buried, with a lofty cross above their grave. And so we end this sad record.]

# INDEX.

---

	A.	PAGE
Across the Steppes to Khiva . . . .	FREDERICK BURNABY . . . . .	464
ALCOCK, SIR RUTHERFORD . . . . .	Scenery of Japan . . . . .	412
Among Strange Scenes and Customs . . . .	AIMÉ HUMBERT . . . . .	397
Arabian Desert, Crossing the . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	27
ARNOLD, ARTHUR . . . . .	The Palace and Jewels of the Shah . . . .	139
“ “ . . . . .	The Tombs and Palaces of Classic Persia . . . . .	148
ATKINSON, THOMAS W. . . . .	Scenes from Pastoral Life among the Kirghis Nomads . . . . .	452
“ “ . . . . .	A Siberian Tragedy . . . . .	486

## B.

Baalbec, the City of the Sun . . . .	WILLIAM C. PRIME . . . . .	95
Bashan, The Giant Cities of . . . .	J. L. PORTER . . . . .	117
Boar-Hunting in India . . . . .	W. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	179
BOWRING, SIR JOHN . . . . .	The Venice of the East . . . . .	217
“ “ “ . . . . .	The Elephant in Siam . . . . .	248
Buddha, The Footstep of . . . . .	BISHOP PALLEGRIX . . . . .	230
BURCKHARDT, JOHN LEWIS . . . . .	Petra and Mecca . . . . .	7
BURNABY, FREDERICK . . . . .	Across the Steppes to Khiva . . . .	464
BURTON, RICHARD F. . . . .	A Pilgrimage to Mecca and Medina . . . . .	57

## C.

Canton, Reception of General Grant at . . . .	JOHN M. KEATING . . . . .	354
Capital of Nedjed, In the . . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	44
Captive in Japan, A . . . . .	WASSILI GOLOWNIN . . . . .	384
Cashmere, The Vale of . . . . .	G. T. VIGNE . . . . .	257
Caves of Ellora and City of Nashik . . . .	ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS . . . .	188
Central Asia in the Thirteenth Century . . . .	MARCO POLO . . . . .	272
Ceylon, An Elephant Kraal in . . . .	JOSEPH MOORE . . . . .	209
Chantaboun, A Visit to . . . . .	HENRY MOUHOT . . . . .	235
China, The Tea Districts of . . . .	ROBERT FORTUNE . . . . .	345



City of the Sun, Baalbec, the . . . .	WILLIAM C. PRIME . . . . .	95
Classic Persia, The Tombs and Palaces of . . . . .	ARTHUR ARNOLD . . . . .	148
COCHRANE, JOHN DUNDAS . . . . .	A Pedestrian in Siberia . . . . .	475
Counterfeit Dervish in Khiva, A . . .	ARMINIUS VÁMBÉRY . . . . .	286
Crossing the Arabian Dessert . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	27
Crossing the Karakorum Pass . . . .	ROBERT SHAW . . . . .	330

## D.

Damascus, the Pearl of the Orient . .	BAYARD TAYLOR . . . . .	106
Dervish in Khiva, A Counterfeit . . .	ARMINIUS VÁMBÉRY . . . . .	286

## E.

Elephant in Siam, The . . . . .	SIR JOHN BOWRING . . . . .	248
Elephant Kraal in Ceylon, An . . . .	JOSEPH MOORE . . . . .	209
Ellora and City of Nashik, Caves of .	ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS . .	188

## F.

Feast of Flowers, The Lama . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	378
Footstep of Buddha, The . . . . .	BISHOP PALLEGOIX . . . . .	230
FORTUNE, ROBERT . . . . .	The Tea Districts of China . . .	345

## G.

General Grant at Canton, Reception of	JOHN M. KEATING . . . . .	354
Giant Cities of Bashan, The . . . . .	J. L. PORTER . . . . .	117
GOLOWNIN, WASSILI . . . . .	A Captive in Japan . . . . .	384
GORDON CUMMING, C. F. . . . .	Peking, as seen from its Walls . .	367
GORDON CUMMING, W. . . . .	Boar-Hunting in India . . . . .	179
" " " . . . . .	The Lair of the Tiger . . . . .	198

## H.

Hindoo Actors, Nautch Dancers and .	ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS . .	158
Holy City, Jerusalem, The . . . . .	ELIOT WARBURTON . . . . .	83
HUC, EVARISTE R. . . . .	Through Tibet to Lhassa . . . .	320
" " " . . . . .	The Lama Feast of Flowers . . .	378
" " " . . . . .	Life and Scenery in Mongolia . .	440
HUMBERT, AIMÉ . . . . .	Among Strange Scenes and Cus- toms . . . . .	397
" " . . . . .	Walks in Yedo . . . . .	424

## I.

India, Boar-Hunting in . . . . .	W. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	179
----------------------------------	-----------------------------	-----

J.		PAGE
Japan, A Captive in . . . . .	WASSILI GOLOWNIN . . . . .	384
Japan, Scenery of . . . . .	SIR RUTHERFORD ALCOCK . . . . .	412
Jerusalem, The Holy City . . . . .	ELIOT WARBURTON . . . . .	83
Jewels of the Shah, The Palace and . . . . .	ARTHUR ARNOLD . . . . .	139
Journey through Yârkand, A . . . . .	ROBERT SHAW . . . . .	298

## K.

Karakorum Pass, Crossing the . . . . .	ROBERT SHAW . . . . .	330
KEATING, JOHN M. . . . .	Reception of General Grant at Canton . . . . .	354
Khiva, A Counterfeit Dervish in . . . . .	ARMINIUS VÁMBÉRY . . . . .	286
Khiva, Across the Steppes to . . . . .	FREDERICK BURNABY . . . . .	464
Kirghis Nomads, Scenes from Pastoral Life among the . . . . .	THOMAS W. ATKINSON . . . . .	452

## L.

Lair of the Tiger, The . . . . .	W. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	198
Lama Feast of Flowers, The . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	378
LAYARD, AUSTEN HENRY . . . . .	The Wonders of Nineveh . . . . .	130
Lena Delta, The Tragedy of the . . . . .	GEORGE W. MELVILLE . . . . .	496
LEONOWENS, ANNA HARRIETTE . . . . .	Nautch Dancers and Hindoo Actors . . . . .	158
“ “ “ . . . . .	Caves of Ellora and City of Nashik . . . . .	188
Lhassa, Through Tibet to . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	320
Life and Scenery in Mongolia . . . . .	“ “ “ . . . . .	440
Little Tibet . . . . .	G. T. VIGNE . . . . .	310

## M.

Marvels of Mogul Architecture, The . . . . .	JOSEPH MOORE . . . . .	167
Meecca and Medina, A Pilgrimage to . . . . .	RICHARD F. BURTON . . . . .	57
Meecca, Petra and . . . . .	JOHN LEWIS BURCKHARDT . . . . .	7
MELVILLE, GEORGE W. . . . .	The Tragedy of the Lena Delta . . . . .	496
Mocha Coffee District, the . . . . .	CARSTENS NIEBUHR . . . . .	37
Mogul Architecture, The Marvels of . . . . .	JOSEPH MOORE . . . . .	167
Mongolia, Life and Scenery in . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	440
MOORE, JOSEPH . . . . .	The Marvels of Mogul Archi- tecture . . . . .	167
“ “ . . . . .	An Elephant Kraal in Ceylon . . . . .	209
MOUNOT, HENRY . . . . .	A Visit to Chantaboun . . . . .	235

N.		PAGE
Nashik, Caves of Ellora and City of . . . . .	ANNA HARRIETTE LEONOWENS . . . . .	188
Nautch Dancers and Hindoo Actors . . . . .	“ “ “ . . . . .	158
Nedjed, In the Capital of . . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	44
NIEBUHR, CARSTENS . . . . .	The Mocha Coffee District . . . . .	37
Nineveh, The Wonders of . . . . .	AUSTEN HENRY LAYARD . . . . .	130

## O.

Oman and Hadramaut, Travels in . . . . .	J. R. WELLSTED . . . . .	17
Oman, A Shipwreck on the Coast of . . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	69
Oxus, The Source of the . . . . .	JOHN WOOD . . . . .	335

## P.

Palace and Jewels of the Shah, The . . . . .	ARTHUR ARNOLD . . . . .	139
Palaces of Classic Persia, The Tombs and . . . . .	“ “ . . . . .	148
PALGRAVE, WILLIAM G. . . . .	Crossing the Arabian Desert . . . . .	27
“ “ “ . . . . .	In the Capital of Nedjed . . . . .	44
“ “ “ . . . . .	A Shipwreck on the Coast of Oman . . . . .	69
PALLEGRIX, BISHOP . . . . .	The Footstep of Buddha . . . . .	230
Pastoral Life among the Kirghis No- mads, Scenes from . . . . .	THOMAS W. ATKINSON . . . . .	452
Pearl of the Orient, Damascus, the . . . . .	BAYARD TAYLOR . . . . .	106
Pedestrian in Siberia, A . . . . .	JOHN DUNDAS COCHRANE . . . . .	475
Peking, as seen from its Walls . . . . .	C. F. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	367
Petra and Mecca . . . . .	JOHN LEWIS BURCKHARDT . . . . .	7
Pilgrimage to Mecca and Medina, A . . . . .	RICHARD F. BURTON . . . . .	57
POLO, MARCO . . . . .	Central Asia in the Thirteenth Century . . . . .	272
PORTER, J. L. . . . .	The Giant Cities of Bashan . . . . .	117
PRIME, WILLIAM C. . . . .	Baalbec, the City of the Sun . . . . .	95

## R.

Reception of General Grant at Canton . . . . .	JOHN M. KEATING . . . . .	354
--	---------------------------	-----

## S.

Scenery of Japan . . . . .	SIR RUTHERFORD ALCOCK . . . . .	412
Scenes from Pastoral Life among the Kirghis Nomads . . . . .	THOMAS W. ATKINSON . . . . .	452
SHAW, ROBERT . . . . .	A Journey through Yârkand . . . . .	293
“ “ . . . . .	Crossing the Karakorum Pass . . . . .	330
Shipwreck on the Coast of Oman, A . . . . .	WILLIAM G. PALGRAVE . . . . .	69

	PAGE
Siam, The Elephant in . . . . .	SIR JOHN BOWRING . . . . . 248
Siberia, A Pedestrian in . . . . .	JOHN DUNDAS COCHRANE . . . . . 475
Siberian Tragedy, A . . . . .	THOMAS W. ATKINSON . . . . . 486
Source of the Oxus, The . . . . .	JOHN WOOD . . . . . 335
Steppes to Khiva, Across the . . . .	FREDERICK BURNABY . . . . . 464
Strange Scenes and Customs, Among	AIMÉ HUMBERT . . . . . 397

T.

TAYLOR, BAYARD . . . . .	Damascus, the Pearl of the Orient	106
Tea Districts of China, The . . . .	ROBERT FORTUNE . . . . .	345
Thirteenth Century, Central Asia in the . . . . .	MARCO POLO . . . . .	272
Tibet, Little . . . . .	G. T. VIGNE . . . . .	310
Tibet to Lhasa, Through . . . . .	EVARISTE R. HUC . . . . .	320
Tiger, The Lair of the . . . . .	W. GORDON CUMMING . . . . .	198
Tombs and Palaces of Classic Persia, The . . . . .	ARTHUR ARNOLD . . . . .	148
Tragedy of the Lena Delta, The . . .	GEORGE W. MELVILLE . . . . .	496
Travels in Oman and Hadramant . .	J. R. WELLSTED . . . . .	17

V.

Vale of Cashmere, The . . . . .	G. T. VIGNE . . . . .	257
VÁMBÉRY, ARMINIUS . . . . .	A Counterfeit Dervish in Khiva .	286
Venice of the East, The . . . . .	SIR JOHN BOWRING . . . . .	217
VIGNE, G. T. . . . .	The Vale of Cashmere . . . . .	257
“ “ . . . . .	Little Tibet . . . . .	310
Visit to Chantaboun, A . . . . .	HENRY MOUHOT . . . . .	235

W.

Walks in Yedo . . . . .	AIMÉ HUMBERT . . . . .	424
WARBURTON, ELIOT . . . . .	Jerusalem, the Holy City . . . .	83
WELLSTED J. R. . . . .	Travels in Oman and Hadramaut	17
Wonders of Nineveh, The . . . . .	AUSTEN HENRY LAYARD . . . . .	130
WOOD, JOHN . . . . .	The Source of the Oxus . . . . .	335

Y.

Yārkand, A Journey through . . . .	ROBERT SHAW . . . . .	298
Yedo, Walks in . . . . .	AIMÉ HUMBERT . . . . .	424











UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY  
Los Angeles

This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

DEC 21 1951

Form L9—15m-10,'48(B1039)444

UNIVERSITY of CALIFORNIA  
AT  
LOS ANGELES

M83h Half-hours of  
v.3 travel at home  
and abroad

DEC 21 1951

G170  
M83h  
v.3

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



**AA** 000 160 399 2

